

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

OU_210078

UNIVERSAL
LIBRARY

WORKS OF THOMAS NASHE

VOLUME II

THE WORKS of THOMAS NASHE
EDITED FROM THE ORIGINAL TEXTS
BY RONALD B. MCKERROW TEXT: Vol, II **VOL. II**

SIDGWICK. & JACKSON, LTD., 3 ADAM STREET
ADELPHI, LONDON. (M'CMX)

This volume was originally issued by A. H. Bullen in 1904

OXFORD: HORACE HART
PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

CONTENTS

	PAGE
CHRISTS TEARES OVER IERUSALEM.	i
Title-page of the first edition from Bodleian, 4° K. 35. Th.	
BS : Text	7
Title-page of the second edition from Bodleian, i. b. 1930:	
Epistle to the Reader from that edition	177
THE VNFORTVNATE TRAVELLER.	187
Title-page of the first edition from British Museum, 96. b.	
17. (2) : Dedication to the Earl of Southampton appearing in that edition alone	199
Title-page of the second edition from Bodleian, Wood, 31.	
C (3) : Text	205
THE TRAGEDIE OF DIDO.	329
Title-page from Bodleian, Malone, 133 (see p. 329 for note on the condition of the original): Text	339

CHRISTS TEARES OVER IERVSALEM

Entry in, the Stationers Register:

8^o die Septembris./ [1593]

Alice Charlewood Entred for her Copye vnder th[e] h]andes of the Bishop of Canterbury his grace / and Master Woodcock Warden a booke intituled Christes teares over Jerusalem. . . . vj^d.

(*S. R.*, ed. Arber, II. 635.)

Editions: (i) Early:

1593. *CHRISTS* | TEARES OVER | *Ierufalem.* \ Wherunto is annexed, | a comparatiue admonition | to *London.* \ A IOVE MVSA. | By *Tho. Nafhe.* \ [ornament] | AT LONDON, | Printed by Iames Roberts, | and are to be *foldeby Andrewes Wife,* at his fliop in Paules Church-|yard, at the figne of the Angel. | *Anno.* 1593. [In ornamental border.]

No colophon. Quarto. Leaves numbered from A I to end (1-92).

Collation : *⁴, A-Z⁴ (*i) Title, v. blank. *² TO THE MOST HONORED, AND VERTVOVS BEAVTIFIED LADIE ../ *Ital. and Rom.* R-T. THE EPISTLE | DEDICATORIE.

(*³) ' *To the Reader?* *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *To the Reader.*

(*⁴) blank. A I *Christes Teares ouer Jerusalem?* *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *CHRISTS TEARES OVER IERVSALEM.* (Z 4) blank.

Signatures from A I are in Roman. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words: *². Long *²^v. downe, (*³)^v. forth, A I. Farre C I. brought E i. all G I. top. I i. and L I. the N I. are P i. beating.) R i. argu-(ments) T i. If X i. vndone Z I. None

Copy used; That in the British Museum (698. e. 18).

1594. CHRISTS | TEARES OVER IERVSALEM. | WHEREVNTO IS AN-|nexed, a comparatiue admonition | to *London*. \ A IOVE MVSA. | By *Tho. Nafhe*. \ [device] | LONDON. | Printed for Andrew Wife, and are to be fold at | his fhop in Pauls Church-yard, at the figne | of the Angell. 1594.

No colophon. Quarto. Leaves numbered from A I to end (1-92).

Collation: **, **⁴, A-Z⁴. (*i) blank, v. blank. (*2) Title, u. blank. *3 ' TO THE MOST HONORED . . .' *Ital. and Rom.* R-T. THE EPISTLE | DEDICATORIE. (*4)^v 'TO THE READER/ *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. To the Reader. (2*4) (*signed X 3*) *Cancel leaf for X 3.* A I ' Christs Teares ouer *Jerusalem.*' *From A I onwards this edition is identical with that of 1393.* (From the copy in the Bodleian Library (i. b. 190).)

The signatures of sheets * and 2* run : (*i), (*2), *3, (*4), **, * ij, *3, X 3. There is a trace of a second asterisk on *ij.

Catch-words : *y-. you (*4)^v. (cour-)ses 2*i^v. (con-)sidering 2*2^v. (com-)pounds X3^v (2*4^v). into *Rest as in 93.* (There are no catchwords on the recto pages of sheets * and 2*.)

Copy used: That in the Bodleian Library (i. b. 190) for the preliminary matter, and that in the British Museum (96. b. 17. (i.)) for the text.

1613. CHRISTS | TEARES OVER | IERVSALEM. | Whereunto is annexed a | comparatiue admonition | to *LONDON*. \ A IOVE MVSA. |—| By *Tko. Najh*. \—| [device: crowned fleur de lis in rule border 31 x 19 mm.] | LONDON, | Printed for *Thomas Thorp*. \ 1613. [In architectural border.]

No colophon. Quarto. Paged from A i^v to Aa 3^v (2-190).

Collation : C⁴, A-Z*, Aa⁴. (C i) Title, v. blank. C 2 * TO THE MOST HONORED . . .' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *THE EPISTLE | DEDICATORIE.* (C 4^v 'To the Reader.' *Ital. and Rom.* A 'CHRISTS TEARES OVER IERVSALEM.' *Rom. and Ital.* R-T. *CHRISTS TEARES. OVER IERVSALEM.* Aa4 wanting, probably blank.

Signatures are in Roman. Aa 2 is signed A 2. Pages 60, 61, 64, and 66 are misnumbered 62, 63, 66, and 69, page 97 is misnumbered 197, and page 104, 140. Throughout sheets F-K the R-T. is smaller than elsewhere, and the stop after 'TEARES, generally present in other sheets, is omitted. The prayer 'O Lord our Refuge . . .' on Aa 2^v begins a fresh page and is printed in larger type than the rest.

Catchwords: C 3. Wit C 3. wor-(thies) A I. Farre C I. They
E i. her G I. my li. Giue L I. of N I. your P I. (min-)ded,
R I. whom T i. way, X i. to Z I. Him Aa I. (mut-)ter

Copy used: That in the British Museum (874. k. 43). The top margins of this copy being wormed, the errors of numbering noted above are from the copy in the Bodleian (Malone, 566); this copy has also been referred to for a few side-notes partly cut off in the British Museum copy.

(2) *Modern Editions*:

1815. *Archaica*. Containing a Reprint of Scarce Old English Prose Tracts. With Prefaces, . . . By Sir E. Brydges, . . . London: . . . 1815. VoL i, (Part the Seventh) pp. xi. and 168.

In modern spelling, from the edition of 1613.

1883-4 (Gro.). *The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe* . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. iv.

From the copy of the edition of 1593 in the Huth Library, supplemented for certain defective portions by the copy of 1594 in the same library. From this latter he also printed the new Epistle to the Reader.

1904. (The present edition.)

From the copy of -93 in the British Museum, compared throughout with the copy of -94 in the same library. It has been thought less confusing to treat these, for the purpose of collation, as separate editions even in the case of the text itself, which, with the exception of the cancel leaf, was printed from the same setting-up of type in the two.

The preliminary matter of -94 is from the copy in the Bodleian Library, that in the British Museum being here defective.

In accordance with the principle followed throughout this edition of printing the contents of the copy chosen as the basis of the text as they stand in the original, without addition or omission, the preliminary matter of -94 is placed, with the title-page of that edition, at the conclusion of the work.

On account of the comparative unimportance of the edition of 1613, the collations given from this edition are not so full as usual, only actual differences in wording being noticed, not such minor variations as 'comest' for 'comst' 'hither' for 'hether,' &c.; nor are obvious errors generally recorded when they make no possible sense.

The letter *Q* in the collation notes indicates as usual the agreement of all the early editions collated (here those of 1593, 1594, and 1613).

Note on the Editions:

The edition of 1594 differs from that of 1593 in **the** preliminary matter alone, the sheets of the text itself (A-Z) being identical (*i. e.* from the same setting-up of type) in the two.

The preliminary matter of -94 differs in the following respects from that of —93 :

(i) The original Epistle to the Reader with its apology to Gabriel Harvey was cancelled and a new one containing a violent attack upon him substituted. This was in consequence of Harvey's rejection, in *A New Letter of Notable Contents* (dated Sept. 16, 1592 : entered 5. R. Oct. i), of the reconciliation offered to him.

(3) The list of errata which followed the Epistle is omitted.

(3) The last leaf of the preliminary matter is a cancel leaf¹ for X 3, in which a passage considerably milder in tone is substituted for an attack upon London, which seems, as was only natural, to have given offence to the civic authorities².

(4) The imprint on the title-page is changed, but the wording of the title itself remains the same.

The dedication to Lady Elizabeth Carey is unaltered in wording, though, as the whole of the preliminary matter was reset, there are a number of differences in spelling.

The text itself consists, as has already been stated, of the sheets of the edition of -93. There are however, as usual,

¹ This cancel is usually found bound up in its proper place, instead of the original X 3, but in a copy at the Bodleian Library (i. b. 190) it is as issued, the copy having thus two leaves signed X 3. As this copy may at some time be rebound, and as it may then be impossible to tell where this leaf belonged, I take the opportunity of saying that there is no doubt whatever that it actually forms part of sheet 2*, and is not merely a separate leaf placed there.

Apart from the variation in reading, the cancel differs from the original leaf in the running-title being in smaller type, in the omission of some of the marginal references, and of the leaf-number, and in having no catch-word on the recto. The whole leaf was set up again, and hence the spelling differs even in those paragraphs which in wording remained the same.

² Compare the passage in Nashe's letter to William Cotton (c. 1596), where it is stated that *the players, as if they had writt another Christs tears, are piteouly persecuted by the L. Maior and the aldermen.'

occasional variations in different copies, due no doubt to accident or correction during the printing off. One such occurs at the foot of O 3. This is, so far as I am aware, only to be found in the British Museum copy of -94 (698. e. 18), and does not occur in the copy of the same edition at the Bodleian, showing, if proof were needed, that it does not specially belong to the second edition. Other variants of less importance occur on the remaining pages of the outer forme of this sheet, namely, Oi,O)2^v and O4*: to these the same remark applies. In some cases they seem preferable to the readings of other copies and have therefore been adopted in the text.

The edition of 1613 was printed from that of 1593¹, but about half of the Epistle to the Reader, including all that refers to Gabriel Harvey, was omitted. It has the original passages on X 3 (here Y i^v), not those substituted in -94.

In general it follows the first edition closely, even in punctuation and the use of capitals and italics, but, with one exception, corrects the errors noted in the corrigenda of -93².

There are, as will be seen from the collation notes, a certain number of small variations, but these are for the most part either errors, or corrections of obvious misprints, and except in the Epistle to the Reader and possibly in a very few cases such as those noted at p. 18, l. 26, p. 163, l. 12, p. 172, l. 22, and p. 173, l. 6, I see no evidence whatever of any attempt at revision.

In some cases also the use of italics is more regular in -13; a few examples will be found in the collations, though I have not attempted to give all. See p. 57, l. 28, and p. 108, l. 15. Changes of this sort might easily be due to a careful printer.

¹ In general it follows -93 line for line, though not page for page, having only 3² lines to the page as against the 33 of the earlier edition. It may be noted that the copy printed from had not those variants which have been mentioned above as occurring in the British Museum copy of -94.

² The error 'skmnes' for 'sins' on P i (-93) remains uncorrected. See also P- 39, l. 25, and p. 44, l. 7.

CHRISTS
TEARES OVER
Icrufalem.

Whernntois annexed,
a comparatiue admonition
to *London.*

A LOVE MVSA.

By *Tho. Nashe.*



At LONDON,
Printed by Iames Roberts,
and dace robe folde by *Andrew*
Ivifo at his fhop in Panles Church-
yard, as the figne of the Angel.

Anno. 1593.

**TO THE MOST HONO-
RED, AND VERTVOVS BEAV-
TIFIED LADIE, THE LADIE
ELIZABETH CAREY:**

5 Wife to the thrice magnanimous, and noble dis-
cended Knight, Sir *George Carey*, Knight
Marshall, &c.

10 **E**xcellent accomplisht *Court-glorifying Lady*, giue
mee leaue, with the sportiue *Sea Porposes*, prelu-
diatelic a little to play before the storme of my
Teares: to make my prayer ere I proceede to my sacrifice.
Loe, for an oblation to the ritche burnisht shrine of your
vertue, a handfull of Ierusalemms mummianizd earth, (in
a few sheetes of wast paper enwrapped) I heere (humiliate)
15 offer up at your feete. More embellished should my present
bee were my abilitie more abundant. Your illustrate ladi-
ship ere this (I am perswaded) hath beheld a badde fiorish
with a *Text-penne*: all my performance heerein is no better.
I doubt you will condemne it for worse. Wit hath his dregs
20 as wel as wine, Diuinitie his drosse. Expect some Tares
in this *Treatise of Teares*. Farre vnable are my dimme
Ospray eyes to looke cleerely against the sunne of Gods
truth. An easie matter is it for ante man to cutte me
(like a *Diamond*) with mine owne dust.
25 A young imperfect practitioner am I in *Christs schoole*.
Christ accepteth the will for the deede. Weake are my
deedes) great is my will. O that our deedes onely should
be seene and our wil die inuisible! \ Long hath my intended
will (renowned *Madam*) beene addressed to adore you. But

5-7 Wife . . . Marshall, &c.] om¹³. Marshall. &c, 93, 94. 10 to
play a little 13. 12 burnisht 93. 21 this/ the 13.

words, to that my resolued will, were negligent seruaunts. My Ivoe-infirmed witte conspired against me with my fortune. My impotent care-crazed stile cast of his light wings and betooke him to wodden stilts. All agility it forgot, and graueld it scfē in grosse-braind formallitie. Nowe 5 a little is it reuiued, but not so retriued that it hath utterly shooke of his danke vpper mourning garment. Were it effectually recured, in my soule-infused lines I would shew that I perfectly lined, and in them your praises should Hue: whereas nowe, onely amongst the deade I Hue in them, and 10 they dead all those that looke vpon them. That which my Teare-stubbed penne in this Theological subiect hath attempted, is no more but the course-spun webbe of discontent: a quintessence of holy complaint, extracted out of my true cause of condolement. 15

Peruse it, iudiciall Madam, and some-thing in it shall you finde that may peirce. The world hath renowned you for Religion, pietie, bountihood, modestie, and sobrietie, (rare induments in these retchlesse dates of securitie.) Diuers wel-deseruing Poets haue consecrated their endeouours to 20 your praise. Fames eldest fauorite, Maister Spencer, in all his writings hie prizeth you. To the eternizing of the heroycall familie of the Careys, my choisest studies haue I tasked. Then you that high allied house hath not a more deere adopted ornament. To the supportiue perpetuating of 25 your canonized reputation, who lie this booke haue I destined. Vouchsafe it benigne hospitalitie in your Closet, with slight enteruiew at idle houres; and more polished labours of mine ere long shall salute you. Some complete historie I will shortly goe through with, wherein your perfections shall be 30 the chiefe argument. To none of all those maiesticall witfore-stalling worthies of your sexe my selfe doe I apply but you dlone. The cunning courtship of faire words can neuer ouer-worke mee to cast away honor on ante. I hate those female braggarts that contend to kaue all the Muses beg at 35

10 amongstyt 11 dead, al⁹⁴ 17 renowned] crowned 13 31 wit
forestalling Q. .

*their doores, and, with Doues, delight euermore to looke
themselues in the glasse of vaine-glorie; yet by their sides
weare continually Barbarie purses, which neuer ope to any
but pedantic all Parasites.*

5 *Diuine Ladie, you I must and will memorize more
especially, for you recompence learning extraordinarie.
Pardon my presumption, lend patience to my prolixitie, and
if any thing in all please, thinke it was compiled to please
you. This I auouche, no line of it was layde downe without
10 awfull looking backe to your frowne. To write in Diuinitie
I would not haue aduentured, if ought els might haue
consorted with the regenerate grauitie of your iudgement.
Your thoughts are all holy, holy is your life; in your hart
Hues no delight but of Heauen. Far re be it I should proffer
15 to unhallow them with any prophane papers of mine. The
care I haue to worke your holy content, I hope God hath
ordained, to call me home sooner vnto him.*

*Varro saith, the Philosophers held two hundred and eyght
opinions of felicitie: two hundred and eyght felicities to
20 me shall it bee, if I have framed any one line to your
lyking. Most resplendent Ladie, encourage mee, fauour
mee, countenance mee in this, and some-thing ere long I will
aspire to, beyond the common mediocritie.*

Your admired Ladiships

25

most

deuoted.

Tho. Nashe.


To the Reader.

N*NIL nisi flere libet*, Gentles, heere is no ioyfull subiect
 towards : if you will weepe, so it is. I haue nothing
 to spend on you but passion. A hundred vnfortunate
 farewels to fantasticall Satirisme. In those vaines heere- 5
 to-fore haue I mispent my spirite, and prodigally conspir'd
 against good houres. Nothing is there nowe so much in
 my vowes, as to be at peace with all men, and make
 submissiue amends where I haue most displeas'd. Not
 basely feare-blasted or constraintiue ouer-ruled, but 10
 purely pacifycatorie suppliant, for reconciliation and pardon
 doe I sue to the principallest of them, gainst whom I
 profest vtter enmity. Euen of Maister Doctor *Haruey*, I
 hartily desire the like, whose fame and reputation (though
 through some precedent iniurious prouocations, and feruent 15
 incitements of young heads) I rashly assailed : yet now
 better aduised, and of his perfections more cofirmedly
 perswaded, vnfainedly I entreate of the whole worlde, from
 my penne his worths may receiue no impeachment. All
 acknowledgements of abundant Scholarship, courteous 20
 well gouerned behaiour, and ripe experienst iudgement,
 doe I attribute vnto him. Onely with his milde gentle
 moderation, heervnto hath he wonne me.

Take my inuectiue against him in that abiect nature
 that you would doe the rayling of a Sophister in the 25
 schooles, or a scolding Lawyer at the barre, which none
 but fooles wil wrest to defame. As the Tytle of this
 Booke is *Christs Teares*, so be this Epistle the Teares of
 *4 my penne. Many things haue I vainly sette | forth whereof
 now it repenteth me. *S. Augustine* writ a whole booke 30

i This epistle is omitted in 94, being replaced by the one here printed at
 pp. 179-86. 9-27 Not basely .. . defame.] om. /3. 29 forth, c.w.

Fol. 37, page 2. line 12. for *explement*, reade *expletement*.
Fol. 51. page 2. line 13. for *Esau*, reade *Caine*. Fol. 57.
page i. line 4. for *skinnes*, read *sinnes*. Fol. 62. page 2.
line 2. for *Patris*, reade *Patres*. Fol. 70. page 2. line 13. for
her, reade theyr. Fol. 79. page I. line 10, for *primipalship*,
reade *principalship*. Fol. 89. page I. line 4. for *negligetur*,
reade *negligitur*.

 Christs Teares ouer *leru-*
salem.

A 1

Since these be the dayes of dolor and heauinesse,
wherein (as holy *Dauid* saith) *The Lord is knowne* by Psal.9.i6.
5 *executing iudgment*, and the axe of his anger is put to Math. 3.
the roote of the Tree, and his Fan is in his hande to purge
his Floore; I suppose it shal not be amisse to write some-
thing of mourning, for *London* to harken counsaile of her
great Grand-mother, *lerusalem.*
10 Omnipotent Sauour, it is thy Teares I intende to write
of, those affectionate Teares, which in the 23. and 24. of
Mathew thou wepst ouer *lerusalem* and her Temple; Be
present with me (I beseech thee) personating the passion of
thy loue. O dew thy Spyrit plentifully into my incke, and
15 let some part of thy diuine dreariment Hue againe in myne
eyes. Teach mee how to weepe as thou wepst, & rent my
hart in twaine with the extremity of ruth. I hate in thy
name to speake coldly to a quick-witted generation. Rather
let my braines melt all to incke, and the floods of affliction
30 driue out mine eyes before them, then I should be dull and
leaden in describing the dollour of thy loue. | Farrebefrom A i
me any ambitious hope of the vaine merite of Arte; may
that liuing vehemence I vse in lament onely proceed from
a heauen-bred hatred of vnclennesse and corruption.
35 Mine owne wit I cleane disinherite: thy fiery Clouen-
tongued inspiration be my Muse. Lende my wordes the
forcible wings of the Lightnings, that they may peirce
vnawares into the marrow and reynes of my Readers,
Newe mynt my minde to the likenes of thy lowlines: file
30 away the superfluous affectation of my prophane puft vp
14 plentiful ^{13 21} Farre ..] *Newpar* ^{13. 25} thy] the ¹³

- phrase, that I may be thy pure simple Orator. I am a
 lerem. i. child (as thy holy *leremy* sayd), & know not how to speake,
 Phillip. 4. yet, *Omnia possum in eo qui me confortat*, I can doe all
 things through the helpe of him that strengtheneth me.
 Wisd. 10. The tongues of Infants it is thou that makest eloquent, and 5
 teachest the hart vnderstanding. Graunt me (that am a
 Babe and an Infant in the misteries of Diuinitie) the gracious
 fauour to suck at the breasts of thy sacred Reuelation, to
 vtter some-thing that may mooue secure *England* to true
 sorrow and contrition. All the pours of my Soule (as-10
 sembled in their perfectest arraie) shall stand wayting on
 thy incomprehensible Wisedome for Arguments; as poore
 young Birds stand attending on their Dams bill for suste-
 nance. Now helpe, now direct; for now I trans-forme my
 selfe from my selfe, to be thy vnworthy Speaker to the 15
 World.

IT is not vnknown, by how many & sundry waies GOD
 spake by Visions, Dreames, Prophecies, and Wonders,
 to his chosen *Jerusalem*, onely to moue his chosen *Jerusalem*
 wholie to cleaue vnto him. Visions, Dreames, Prophecies, 20
 and Wonders, were in vaine: This gorgeous strumpet *leru-*
 A a *salem*, too-to much | presuming of the promises of old,
 went a whoring after her own inuentions; She thought the
 Lord vnseparately tyde to his Temple, & that he could
 neuer be diuorced from the Arke of his Couenant; that, 35
 hauing bound himselfe with an oth to *Abraham*, he could
 not (though he would) remoue the Lawe out of *Iuda*, or
 his Iudgement-seate from Mount *Silo*. They erred most
 temptingly & contemptuously; for God euen of stones (as
 Christ told them afterward) was able to raise vp Children 30
 to *Abraham*. But what course tooke the high Father of
 Heauen & Earth, after he had vnfruitfully practised all these
 meanes, of Visions, Dreames, Wonders, & Prophecies?
 There is a Parable in the 31. of *Mathew*, of a certaine
 Housholder that planted a Vineyard, hedged it round about, 35

made a Wine-presse therein, and built a Tower, and let it out to Hus-band-men, and went into a strange Country. When the time of fruite drew neere, he sent his seruants to the Hus-band-men to receiue the increase thereof. The
 5 Hus-band-men made no more a-doe, but (his Seruants comming) beate one, killed another, and stoned the third. Againe hee sent other Seruants, more then the first, and they did the like vnto them. Last of all, he sent his owne Sonne, saying, *They will reference my Sonne*; but they
 10 handled him far worse then the former.

The Housholder that planted the Vineyarde and hedg'd it round about, was Israels mercifull *lehoua*, who in Israel planted his Church, or his Winepresse: made it a people of no people, and a Nation beyond expectation.
 15 Long did he blesse them, and multiplie their seed on the face of the earth, as the sand of the Sea or the starres of Heauen: from all their enemies he deliuered them, & brought their name to be a by-worde of terror to the King-
 domes rounde about them: Their Riuers ouer-jflowed with A^{2v}
 20 Milke & Honie, their Garners were filled to the brim: euery man had wel-springs of Oyle & Wine in his house, and finally, there was no complaint hearde in their streets.

The time of fruite drew neere, wherein much was to be required of them to whom much was giuen: he sent his
 35 seruants the Prophets to demaund his rent, or tribute of thanks-giuing, at their handes. Some of them they beat, others they killed, others they stoned, and this was all the thanks-giuing they returned. And then he sent other Prophets or Seruants moe then the first, & they did the like
 30 vnto them: yet could not all this cause him proceed rashly vnto reuenge. *The Lorde is a God of long patience and suffering*; nor wil hee draw out his sword vnaduisedly in his indignation. Stil did he loue them, because once hee had
 35 grace abounded: hee neglected the death of his seruants in comparison of the saluation of them he accounted his

Sons. He excused them himselfe vnto himselfe, and sayde: Peraduenture, they tooke not these my Seruants I sent, for my Seruants, but for seducers and deceiuers, and ther-vpon entreated them so vncrteously: I wil send mirie only natural Sonne to them, whom they (being my adopted Sonnes) 5 can-not chuse but reuerence & lysten to. This his naturall Sonne was *Christ Iesus*, whom hee sent from Heauen to perswade with these Hus-band-men: Hefe sent him not with a strong power of Angels, to punish their pride and ingratitude, as he might: He sent him not roially trained & accompanied, like an Ambassador of his greatnes, nor gaue he him any Commission to expostulate proudly of iniuries, but to deale humbly and meekelie with them, & not to constraîne but intreate them. Hee sent his owne
 A 3 onely | Sonne alone, like a Sheep to the slaughter, or as a 15 Lambe should be made a Legate to the Wolues. When hee came on earth, what was his behauior? Did he first shew himselfe to the chiefe of these Hus-bandmen, the Scribes and Pharisies? Did he take vp any stately lodging according to his degree? Was hee sumptuous in his attire, 20 prodigal in his fare, or haughty in his lookes, as Embassadors wont to be? None of these: in steade of the Scribes and Pharisies, he first disclosed himselfe to poore Fishermen: for his stately Lodging, he tooke vp a Cribbe or a Manger, and after-warde the house of a Carpenter: His attire was 25 as base as might be, his fare ordinary, his lookes lowly. He kept company with Publicans and sinners, the very out-cast of the people; yet in theyr company was he not idle, but made al he spake or did preparatiues to his Embassie.

If any Noble-man (though neuer so high discended) should 3° come alone to a King or Queene in Embassage, without pompe, without followers or the apparraile of his state, who woulde receiue him? who woulde credite him? who would not scorne him? It was necessary that Christ (comming thus alone from the High-commaunder of all Soueraignties, the 35 Controler of all Principalities and Powers) should haue

4 mine] my 13. 14 but to entreat 13. 26 base] mean 13 30 highly 13.

some apparent testimonie of his excellencie. According to the vanity of man, hee thought it not meete to place his magnificence in earthlie boast, as in the pryde of shame, which is apparraile, or in the multitude of men
 5 after hym, for so mette wicked *Esau* his Brother *Jacob*: but in working miracles about the imagination of man, and in preaching the Gospell with power and authoritie; Whereby, after hee had throughlie confirmed himselfe to be the owner of the Vineyards true Sonne, and that these
 10 ill Hus-band-men, | the lewes, should haue no credible or A 3^v trueth-like exception left them, (that they tooke him for a counterfeit or colourable practiser,) he went into their chiefe Assemblies and there (to the High-priests & Heads of their Sinagogues) freely deliuered his message, declared
 15 from whence he came, gentlie expostulated their ill dealing, desired them to haue care of themselues, told them the danger of their obstinacie, and wooed them (with many fayre promises) to repent and be conuerted. All this preuailed not; they sette him at nought, as they reiected his Fathers
 20 other Seruants, the Prophets : Wherefore his last refuge was to deale plainly with them, and explaine to the full what plagues and warres were entring in at their gates for their disloyaitie and doggednesse. In the II. of
Mathew, he pronounceth greuous woes to *Corazin* and
 25 *Bethsaida*: in diuerse other places he intermixeth curses with blessings, tempers Oyle with Vineger, teares with threatates; denounceth sighing, and in his sighes wel-neere swoundeth ; euen as a Father constrained to giue sentence on hys owne Sonne. In the 13. of *Luke*> he
 30 telleth how often he had beene an Intercessour for the repriue of theyr punishment. The Hus-band-man, which is my Father, (saith hee) hath come many yeeres together to a Figge-tree in hys Vineyarde, to demaund fruite of it, and found none. What hath hindered him from cutting
 35 it downe but I, who haue tooke vpon me to be the Dresser of the Vineyard ; and desired him to spare it this yeere, and that yeere, and I woulde prune it, dung it, and digge

round about it, and then if it brought not forth fruite, let him deale with it as he pleased? Almost this 30. yeere haue I prund it, dung'd it, digd rounde about it: that is, 'reproved, preached, exhorted with al the wooing words
 A 4 I could, endeuouring | to mollify, melt, & peirce your harts; 5
 yet all wil not serue; my prayers and my paynes, in steade of bringing foorth repentance in you, bring forth repentance in my selfe.

As I said before, no remedy, or signe of any breath of hope, was left in their Common-wealths sinne-surfetted body, 10 but the maladie of their incredulity ouer-maistred heauenly phisick. To desperate diseases must desperate Medicines be applyde. When neither the White-flag or the Red which *Tamburlaine* aduanced at the siege of any Citty, would be accepted of, the Blacke-flag was sette vp, which 15 signified there was no mercy to be looked for; and that the miserie marching towards them was so great, that their enemy himselfe (which was to execute it) mournd for it. Christ, hauing offered the lewes the White-flagge of forgiuenesse and remission, and the Red-flag of shedding his ao Blood for them, when these two might not take effect nor work any yeelding remorse in them, the Black-flagge of confusion and desolation was to succede for the obiect of their obduration.

This Black-flagge is waued or displaid in the 23. of 25 *Mathew*, where, directing his speech to his Disciples and the multitude, .against the Scribes & Pharisies that were the Princes of the people, hee first vrgeth the infamous disagreement of their lyues and their doctrines: which that it should breede no scandalous back-slyding in the 30 harts of his Hearers, he inserteth this caution, *Do as they August. say, not as they doe.* And to like effect saith S, *Augustine; thomi*^o. *Sermo Deiproferat eumpeccator, proferat eum iustus, sermo Dei est, inculpdibilis est:* The Word of God, be it preacht by Hipocrite or Saint, is the Worde of God, and not to be 35 dispised or disanuld. Next this, hee pronounceth eyght
 A 4 terrible woes against them, for their eyght-folde | hypo-

crisie & blindnesse ; besides other fearefull comminations, wherein hee threatens that all the righteous blood which was shedde from the time of *Abel* the righteous, vnto the blood of *Zaccharias* the Sonne of *Barrachias*, that was
 5 slaine betwixt the Temple and the Altar, shold come vpon them, should call and exclaime on theyr soules for vengeance, staine the Skye with cloddred exhalations, interrupt the Sunne in his course, and make it sticke fast in the congealed mudde of gorie Clowdes, yea, dimme &
 10 ouer-cast GOD sitting in his Throne, till he had tooke some astonishing satis-faction for it.

Then on the suddaine starting backe, as ouer-examining the words he had sayd, and condemning himselfe (in his thought) for being so bitter, he presentlie weepeth, and
 15 excuseth it in these termes, that it was not his fault, but theirs : *O Ierusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the Prophets, and stonest them that are sent vnto thee:* That is, which art guilty of all the accusations my Father til this time wold not in pittie lay against thee ; yea, feared to be cruell in
 20 once suspecting thee of, though nowe they are proued: *How often would I have gathered thy Chyldren together', as the Henne gathereth her Chickins together under her wings, andye would not!* How often would I haue reuokt, reduced, & brought you into the right way. *But you would*
 25 *not ? Therefore your habitation shall be left desolate.* So that in these words most evidently you see, he cleereth himselfe, and leaueth them vnexcusable.

The more to penetrate and inforce, let vs suppose Christ in a continued Oration thus pleading with them. |

30 T *Ierusalem*, the Daughter of my people, I am sore vexed B i
 and compassionate for thee, *Terusalem*, the midst of the earth, the mother of vs all, in the midst of whom I haue wrought my saluation ; *Jerusalem*, that for all the good seede I haue sowne in thee, affordest nothing but
 35 stones to throw at my Prophets, thou that slayest whom
 20 thee of] of thee 13.

I send to saue thee, & imprisonest any man that wisheth thy peace; thy sinnes are so great, that when I looke on thee, myne eyes can scarce perswade me that thou standest but that thou art sunck downe like *Sodom*, and entombed in Ashes like *Gomorra*. O let me pittie thee, for I loue⁵ thee impatiently. A thousand shapes of thy confusion muster before mine eyes, & the paines on the Crosse I am to sustaine cannot be so great paines vnto mee, as to think on the ruine and massacre that is already trauailing towards thee. Famine, the Sworde, and the Pestilence, haue all¹⁰ three sworne and conspired against thee: Thou (one poore citty) by these three vnrelenting enemies shalt be ouer come. *Eheu quantus equis, quantus viris adest sudor* Alas, what huge sweat and toyle is at hande for Horse and Man!

Heere do I weepe in vaine, for no man regardeth me¹⁵ no man wayleth with me. Heere doe I prophecie that my weeping in vayne shall bee the cause of a hundred thousand Fathers & Mothers weeping in vaine. **O that** I did weepe in vaine, that your defilements & pollutions²⁰ gaue me no true cause of deploement! Often wisht I that I might haue saide to myne Eyes and Eares they lyde, when they haue told me what they haue seene and hearde of thy treasons. I wisht that I might be as wretched as the damned, so my sences therin were de-25 ceiued. I am not deceiued; tis thou that deceiuest thy Sauour, and deceiuest thy selfe to cleaue vnto sathan. |

B i Sathan, refrayne thine odious embraces, the bosome of *Jerusalem* is mine: touch not the body contracted to me *Improbe tolle manus, quam tangis nostra futura est: she*³⁰ will touch him, he stretcheth not out his hande to her, but she breaketh violently from mee, to runne raiishtlie into his rugged armes. Alas, the one halfe of my soule, why wilt thou back-slyde thus? I loue and can haue no loue againe I loue thee for thy good; thou lou'st hym that flatters three³⁵ for thy hurt. What lesse thing then to belieue and to be

saued? How canst thou believe & wilt not heare? Thy prayers are friuolous vnto God, if thou deniest to heare God: He must first heare God, that will be hearde of GOD. I haue hearde quietly all thy vpbraydings, reproofes, and
 5 derisions : as when thou saydst I was a drunkard, and possessed with a diuel, that I cast out diuels by the power of *Beelzebub*, the Prince of the diuels; that I blasphemed, was mad, & knew not what I spake : Nor was I any more of-
 10 the son of a Carpenter. If I gyue eare to all your bitter- nesse, will not you vouchsafe me a little audience when I blesse you ?

O Ierusalem, Ierusalem, that stonest, and astoniest thy Prophets with thy peruersnesse, that lendest stonie eares to
 15 thy Teachers, and with thyne yron breast drawest vnto thee nothing but the Adamant of GODS anger: what shall I doc to mollifie thee ? The rayne mollifieth harde stones ; 6 that the stormie tempest of my Teares might soften thy stony hart! Were it not harder then stone, sure ere this I had
 20 broken and brused it, with the often beating of my exhortations vpon it.

Moyes strooke the Rocke and water gusht out of it; I (that am greater then *Moyes*) haue strooken you with threates, and you haue not mourned. O ye heauens, be
 25 amazed at this, be afraide and vtterly confounded: my B² people haue drunke out of a Rocke in the Wildernesse, & euer-since had rockie harts. Yet wil the Rocks tremble when my Thunder fals vpon them. The Mason with his Axe hewes and carues them at his pleasure. All the thunder of
 30 Judgements which I spend on this stony *Ierusalem*, cannot make her to tremble, or refraine from *stoning my Prophets*. Should I raine stones vpon her, with them shee woulde arme her-selfe against my holy ones. Little doth she consider that all my Prophets are Embassadors, and the
 35 wronging of an Embassador amongst mortall men is the breaking of the law of Nations; which breach or wrong, no King or Monarch but (at his coronation) is sworne to

reunge. If earthlie Kings reunge any little wrong done to theyr Embassadors, how much more shall the King of all Kings reunge the death and slaughterdome of his Embassadors? The Angels in heauen, as they are the Lordes Embassadors, (in regard of theyr own safety) would prosecute it, though he should ouer-slip it. The diuell that vseth daily to sollicite the Murtherers owne conscience for vengeance against himselfe, will hee spare to put the Lord in minde of his auncient decree, *A murtherer shall not lyue?* God said vnto *Caine*, *The voyce of thy Brother Abels blood 10 cryeth to me out of the earth:* that is, not onely *Abels* owne blood, but the bloode of all the sonnes that were to issue from his loynes, cry vnto me out of the earth. It is sayd in the 6. of *Genesis*, *Whosoetr shall shedde humaine blood, his blood shall be shed likewise. Eye for eye, and tooth for tooth,* 15 much more life for life, shal be repayd; and this equity or amends, the veriest Bagger or contemptiblest creature on the earth (cutte off before his time) shall be sure to haue.

B 2^V If I doe them right that in theyr owne |enmities lauish theyr lyues, shall I let their blood be troden to durte vnder foote, 20 and be blowne backe by the windes into the crannies of the earth (when it offers to sprinkle vp to heauen), who in my seruice spende theyr lyues? At my head *Jerusalem* threw stones when she stoned my Heralds. Who stabbeth or defaceth the picture of a King, but would doe the like to the 25 King himselfe, if he might doe it as conueniently? Euerie Prophet or messenger from the Lord representeth the person of the Lord, as a Herald representeth his Kings person and is the right picture of his royaltie.

O *Jerusalem, Jerusalem*, what thou hast doone to the least 30 of my Prophets, thou hast done vnto mee likewise: *My Prophets thou hast stoned;* me likewise thou hast *stoned*, and with-stood. The very *stones* in the streete shall ryse vp in iudgement against thee.

By the old Law, he that had blasphemed, reuiled his 35 Parents, or committed adulterie, was *stoned* to death by the Prophets and Elders: Thou hast blasphemed, reuiled thy

(spirituall) Parents, committed adultery with thine owne
 abominations; and loe, contrariwise, thine Elders and
 Prophets thou *stonest* to death. Can I see this and not rise
 vp in wrath against thee? For this shalt thou grinde the
 5 *stones* in the Myll with *Sampson*, and whet thy teeth vpon
 the *stones* for hunger; and if thou askest anie man Bread
 he shall gyue thee *stones* to eate. The dogges shall licke
 thy blood on the *stones* lyke *lezabels*, & not a *stone* be found
 to couer thee when thou art deade. One *stone* of thy Temple
 10 shall not be left vpon another that shall not be throwne
 downe. The *stone* which thy foolish Builders refused shall
 be made the head *stone* of the corner. Your harts (which
 are Temples of *stone*) I will for-sweare for euer to dwell in.
 There shall be no *Dauid* any more amongst you, that with B 3
 15 a *stone* sent out of a sling, shall strike the chiefe Champion of
 the *Philistines* in the for-head: And finally, you shall wor-
 ship stockes and *stones*, for I will be no longer your God.
O Jerusalem Jerusalem, all this shall be-tide thee, because thou
stonest the Prophets, and killest them that are sent vnto thee.
 20 *The Fathers haue eaten sower-Grapes, and the Chyldrens*
teeth are sette on edge; your Fathers tooke hard courses
against the Prophets, killed those I sent vnto them: And if
 you had no other crime, but that you are the sonnes of
 them that killed the Prophets, it were too sufficient for
 35 your subuersion; but you your selues *haue stoned the*
Prophets, and killed those I sent vnto you: not onely you
 your selues but your sonnes (for this) shall be put to the
 edge of the Sword.

The blood-thirstie & deceitfull man shall not lyue out
 30 *halfe his dayes. Who strikes with the sword shall perrish*
with the sWord. He that but hateth his brother is a homi-
cide. What is he then that slayeth his Brother? Nay
 more, what is he that slayeth Gods Brother? Not one that
 beleeueth in me, and doth my wil, but is my Brother and
 35 Sister. In slaying them that are sent to declare the will of
 God, you resist the will of God, and are guilty of all their
 damnations which are yet vnconuerted, whom, lyuing, they

preaching might haue reduced. The violating of any of the Commaundements is death: *Thou shall not kill*, is one of the principal! Commaundements: your faulte at the first sight deserueth Hell-fire. What doe you but proclaime open warre against Heauen, when you destroy or ouer-
 5 throwe any of the Temples of the holy Ghost (which are mens bodies)? They are the Tabernacles which the Lord hath chosen (by his Spirit) to dwell in. But the bodies of
 B 3^V my Saints and Prophets (which you | slay and stone) are no triuiall ordinary Tabernacles, such as *Peter*, my Disciple, 10 would haue had me to make in the Wildernesse, for *Moyeses*, *Elias*, and my selfe, but Tabernacles like the Tabernacle at *Ierusalem*, where I haue ordained my Name to be worshipped. Their words, as my words, I will haue worshipped; Their heades are the Mounts from whence I 15 speake to you in a holy flame, as to your Fore-fathers wandering in the Desert.

I haue told you heere-to-fore they are *the Salte of the Earth*, with whose Prayers and Supplications, if thys masse of sinne were not seasoned, it would sauour so detestably as in Gods nostrils, hee were neuer able to endure it. They are *the eye-s and the light of the world*: if the eye lose his light, all the whole body is blind; And hence it came that they were surnamed *Seers*, for they onely foresaw, prayed, & prouided for the people. I tell you plainly, if it were 35 possible for you to plucke the Sunne out of Heauen, and you should do it, and so consequently leaue all the world in darknes, you shoulde not be lyable to so much blame as you now are, *in killing them I sende vnto you*. They are your Seers, your Prophets, your chiefe Eyes, which you 30 haue slayne, destroyed, and put out.

Was *Caine* a vagabond on the face of the earth for killing but one *Abell* tenne thousand iust *Abels* haue you slaine, that were more neere, and ought to haue beene more deere to you then Brothers; and shall I not destitute your habi- 35 tation for it, and scatter you as vagabonds through-out the

Empires of the worlde? As you haue made no conscience to *stone my Prophets, and slay them I sent vnto you*, so shall the strange Lordes that leade you captiue, and they amongst whom many hundred yeeres you shal soirne, 5 make no conscience to cut your throats for your treasure, and giue a hundred of you together | to theyr Fencers B 4 and Executioners, to try theyr weapons on for a wager, and winne maisteries with deepe wounding you. O *Jerusalem, Jerusalem*, deepe woes & calamities hast thou incurd, in 10 *stoning my Prophets and slaying them I sent vnto thee. Hoiv often woulde I haue gathered thy children together* when they went astray? How often woulde I haue brought them home into the true sheepe-fold when I met them straying? I came into the World to no other ende but to *gather* 15 *together* the lost Sheepe of Israeli. You are the flock and Sheepe of my pasture: when I would haue *gathered* you together, you would not heare my voyce, but hardned your harts. You *gather* your selues in counsaile against mee, every time I seeke to call you or to *gather* you. Denie if 20 you can, that I sent not my Prophets (in all ages) to *gather* you: that with my Rodde and my staffe of correction I haue not sought (from time to time) to *gather* you: that by benefites and many-fold good turnes, I haue not tryde (all I might) to tye you or *gather* you vnto me: Lastlie, 25 that in mine owne person, I haue not practisd a thousand waies, to *gather* you to repentance and amendment of lyfe. If you should denie it, & I not contradict it, the diuell (my vtrest enemy) would confirme it.

Let me speake truely and not vauntingly (although it be 30 lawful to boast in goodnes), such hath alwaies been my care to *gather* you, that I thought it not enough to *gather* my selfe, but I haue prayed to my Father to ioyne more Labourers and *Gatherers* with me, to reape and *gather* in his Haruest. Howe often haue I *gathered* the multitude 35 together, and spoke vnto them? When the people were flocked or *gathered* vnto mee out of all Citties, and had

nothing to eate, I fed them miraculously with fiue Barlie-
 B 4^v loues & two Fishes. I would not haue shewd | the wonders
 of my God-head, but to *gather* you together. The first
gathering that I made was of poore Seafaring-men, whom
 I haue preferd to be myne Apostles. 5

Would you haue beene *gathered* together when I would
 haue had you, you had *gatherd* to your selues the King-
 dome of Heauen and all the riches thereof. Now what
 haue you *gathered* to your selues but ten thousand testi-
 monies in the Sonne of Gods testimony, that he desired 10
 and besought you to suffer your selues to be *gathered* by
 him, *and yoU would not ?* Souldiours that fight scatteringlie,
 and doe *not gather* themselues in ranke or battaile array,
 shal neuer winne the day, If you knew how strong and
 full of stratagemes the diuel were, with howe many Legions 15
 of lustfull desires he commeth embattailed against you,
 what secrete ambushes of temptations he hath layde to
 intrappe you; then woulde you *gather* your selues into
 one bodie to resist him ; then wold you *gather* your selues
 together in prayer to with-stand him; then would you 20
gather for the poore, which is, to *gather* for Souldiers to
 fight against him. *Eleemosyna a morte liber at, et non*
 Tob. 4.10. *patitur hominem ire in tenebras* ; Almes deedes deliuer a
 man from death, and keepeth his soule from seeing con-
 fusion. *As water quencheth fire* (saith the Wise-man), *so* 25
almes giuing resisteth sinne. And if it resisteth sinne, it
 resisteth the diuel, which is the Father of sinne.

All my Fathers Angels stand *gathered* together about
 his Throne: No Bread is made, but of graines of Come
gathered together: no building is raysed, but of a number 30
 of stones glued and *gathered* together. There is no perfect
 societie or Citty, but of a number of men *gathered* together.
 Geese (which are the simplest of al foules) *gather* them-
 C i selues together, goe together, flie together. | Bees in one
 Hiue holde their consistory *together*. The starres in 35

13 batbaile 93; 94.
 hominem] *Read ammam.*

16-7 you: what 93, 94 : you: that 13. 23
 34 Bees ...] *New par.* 13

Heauen doe shine *together*. What is a man, if the parts of his body be disparted, and not incorporated and essentiate *together*? What is the Sea, but an assembly or *gathering together* of waters, and so the Earth, a congestion or heaping
 5 vp of grosse matter *together*? A Wood or Forrest, but an hoste of Trees encampt *together*! A generall counsaile or Parliament, but a congregation or *gathering together* of special wise-men, to consult about Religion or Lawes? *O what a good thing is it* (saith *Dauid*) *for Brether en to Hue*
 10 *or be gathered together in unity* /

If there were no other thing to ratifie the excellence of it, but the euill of his diameter opposite, which is diuision or distraction, it were infinitely ample to establish the tyle of his dignity. Nor *Dauid*, nor all the euills of diuision,
 15 nor al the instances of Angels, Bread, buildings, societies, Geese, Bees, starres, Men, Seas, counsails, Parliaments, may conforme these vngratious degenerates. They will not onely not *gather* themselues into order (which I their Captaine might exact at their hands), but scorne to be
 20 directed, mustered, and *gatherd* by me, when with the myldest discipline I offer to marshal them. Sorrie I am, *Jerusalem*, that my kindnes and conuersing with thee hath left thee without any cloke or clowde of defence.

It shall not be layde to thy charge, that thou wert
 25 ignorant, and foolish, and knewst not howe to *gather* thy selfe into my family or houshold, the Church; but that when thou might'st haue beene *gathered* or called, thou refusedst, and contemned: Neither shall it be imputed that thou went'st a-stray; but that, going astray, thou reuiledst
 30 and strook'st at him that would have *gathered* or | brought C i^v thee into the right way. Ah, woe is mee, that euer I opened my mouth to call thee, or *gather* thee, for now (by opening my mouth, and thou stopping thyne eares when I open'd it) I haue open'd & enwidened Hell mouth, to
 35 swallow thee and deuoure thee. I tooke flesh vpon me to the end that Hell (not *Jerusalem*) might perish vnder my hande. The vanquishment of that vglie nest of Harpies

hath beene reserued as a worke for mee, before all beginnings ; Now know I not which I may first confound, Hell or *Jerusalem*, since both know me and haue armed theyr fore-heads against me.

Blessed is thy land, O *Jerusalem*, for I was borne in it. 5
 Cursed is thy Lande, O *Jerusalem*, for I was borne in it.
 Borne I am to doe all Countries good but thee. Thee I came principally to doe good to, but thou resisteth the good I Would doe thee; Thou interdicts and prohibits me with reproches and threates, from *gathering* thee & doing 10 thee good. Of my byrth thou reap'st no benefite but this, that I shall come at the last day to beare witnes against thee. Blinde and inconsiderate, what wilt thou doe to thine Enemie, that thus entrest thy Friende, that thus reiectest thy Redeemer? O were thy siflne (though not to 15 be defended) yet any way excusable, it were some-what Why did I euer behold thee to make thee miserable, and mine eyes thus miserable in beholding?

I might haue beheld the innocent Saints and Angels, that would neuer haue angerd me, but reioyc'd me: the 20 Cherubins and Seraphins would vncessantly haue prayed me ; I shoulde not haue prayde them to execute my will (for they would haue done it with a beck), much lesse haue solicited them as I doe thee, to consent to sane thy selfe.

C 2 I should haue but sayd the word to the sence-lesse Planets, 25 and it had beene done: to thy Chyldren (more sencelesse then the Planets) can I not say that word, which not onely they will refuse to doe, but deride. For this shall thine Enemies *gather* themselues about thy Citty, and smyte thee ; the Angels shall *gather* thee to the Lake of fire and Brimstone: 30 thou shalt then *gather* thy browes together in howling and lercm. 9. lamentation ; And (as *leremy* sayde) *The carkasses of thy dwellers shall lye as the dung in the Fielde, or the handfull after the Mower, and none shall there be to gather them vp.*

All this hadst thou preuented, if thou would'st haue per- 35 mitted me to *gather* thee. I sawe into thy frailtie and in-

firmitie, that thou wert not able to *gather* thy selfe ; I tooke compassion on thee, because thou wert like sheep which had no Sheep-heard. I for-sooke all my immortall pleasures and mind-rauishing melody, to descende & make thee mine, 5 to come and *gather* thee to the glorie prepared for thee.

The greatest worke was this purpose of thy *gathering*, that euer was vnder-taken in Heauen or Earth. Thus did I argument with my selfe, to salue thy imperfections of the not *gathering* thy selfe. The Horse tameth not him-selfe: 10 the Cammel tameth not him-selfe: the Oxe tameth not him-selfe: the Beare, the Lyon, the Elephant, tame not themselues. Then why should I require that Man should tame, recall, bridle, bring vnder, or *gather* himselfe ? But as the Horse, the Oxe, the Cammel, the Beare, the Lyon, 15 the Elephant, require Man to tame them ; so it is requisite that GOD should tame Man, that God alone should *gather* him vnto him. Content I was to take vpon me that vnthankfull office of taming or *gathering*, but thou wert not content to be so tamed or *gathered*. \

20 It did not irke me so much that thou wert vntamed, or c 2 *vngathered*, as that (knowing thy selfe in that case) thou wert vnwilling to be tamed and *gathered*. Thou could'st not despaye of myne ability to tame thee & *gather* thee ; for if man tameth the beastes he neuer made, shall not I 25 *gather* thee, alter thee, & tame thee, that made thee ? *Easie is my yoke and my burden is light* .: I would not haue tamed thee, or tempted thee about thy strength; onely I would haue curbed or reaned thee a little to the right hand, kept thee from swallowing in sin with greedinesse. Suppose 30 (as the tamer of all Wild-beastes) I had some-time vsed my whyp or my goade, had it beene so much ? Your Horses, which you tame and spurre, and cut their mouthes with raining, and finally kil with making carry heauy burdens many yeeres together, you wil not gyue so much reward to 35 (when they are deade) as buriall, but cast them to the Foules of the ayre, to be deformedly torne in peeces :

I (hairing tamed thee, and *gathered* thee home vnto me) enfeofe thee with indefinite blessednes, (being deade a space) restore to thee, not onely thy flesh (in more puritie), but the iust number of thy hayres, in-stall thee in eternity with mine Angels, where thou shalt neuer-more need to be 5 *gathered*, or tamed, where there shall be no aduersity or tribulation that shall exercise or try thee, but eternall felicity to feed thee ; and that without any care, fore-cast, or plotting on thy part (such as in the maintenaunce of earthly weale is wont). I shall bee to thee all in all, thy 10 riches, thy strength, thine honour, thy Patron, thy prouider. Yet all thys hope cannot moue thee to consent to be tamed or *gathered* vnto me.

My voyce which cryeth, *Returne, Returne; Whether wanderest thou, long strayer ?* is trouble-some and hatefull 15
 C 3 vnto thee, thou canst by no meanes digest it: it is thy Aduersarie in the way, which since I haue warned thee to agree with, and thou hast refused, it shall draw & hale thee vnto iudgement, the ludge deliuer thee to Death, his Sariant, the Sariant to the diuel (conuicted soules laylor): thence 20 shalt thou not escape till thou hast payd the vtmost farthing. O *Jerusalem, Jerusalem*, why sholdest thou *gather* and intangle thy selfe in so many vneuitable snares, when (by *gatliring* thy selfe vnder my wing) thou mayst auoyde them ? What haue I required of thee, but to *gather* thy 25 selfe, & agree with my voice, thy Aduersary ? Nothing but that thou wouldest haue a care of thy health and well-doing, a thing which thou (in reason), not I, ought to exact and require of thy selfe; yet I (as I were thy Gardian or Ouer-seer, & thy Father *Abraham* dying had bequeathed 30 thee wholly to my trust) follow thee, haunt thee by my Spyrite, daily and hourly importune thee to remember and *gather* thy selfe. How often haue I (to thys effect) chydingle communed with thy soule and conscience ?

Sinful *Jerusalem*, why deferst thou to *gather* thy selfe, & 35

agree with my voyce in the way ? Yet thou maist agree,
 yet thy way is not finished, yet thy Aduersary walkes by
 thee. Why doost thou proroge till thy wretched life be at
 his wayes end? Is there any other life, any other way
 5 (when thys way of woe is endecty wherein thou maist agree
 with thine Aduersarie ? The ludge, the Sariant, the prison,
 thou must then awaite, and despayre of opportunitie euer
 after, to agree or be *gathered* to grace ; but looke to be
gathered like grasse on the house top, and throwne into the
 10 fire. Promise not vnto thy selfe too many yeeres trauailing
 in the way : Thinke not thou shalt euer Hue: thy waie may
 be cutte off ere thou be a-|ware: a thousande casualties may C 3
 cutte thee off in the way. But how long or how short so
 ere thy way be, my voyce (thine Aduersarie) like thy shadow
 15 still haunteth thee, still treadeth on thy heeles, still calls
 and cryes out vpon thee to *gather* vppe thy accounts and
 agree with it. ShanVst thou not (vild image of carelesnes)
 so long to be cald on for so light a matter ? so long to Hue
 at variance with so mightie an Aduersary ? It is all one as
 20 if thou shouldest owe an earthly ludge money (who hath
 the Law in his hand), and braue him, and deny to come to
 composition, saying: If I owe it you, gather it or recouer
 it as you can. How thinkest thou, is there any earthly
 ludge wold spare thee or for-bearre thee as I haue done ?
 25 My voyce, as it is my voyce, is thy friende, but as thou
 abusest it (turnes thine eares from it, and wilt not agree
 with it), it is thine Aduersary ; It wisheth thee well, and
 thou wishest thy selfe ill ; It bids thee crouch and stoope
 to the Prophets I sende, and thou stonest them ; It bids
 30 thee pittie the Widdow and the fatherlesse, & thou oppressest
 them ; It bids thee repent thee of the euill thou hast com-
 mitted, and thou doublest it; It bids *thee gather* and gyrd
 vp thy loynes close, and take the staffe of Stedfastnes in thy
 hand, that if the flesh and the deuil assault thee in the way,
 35 thou maist encounter them coragiously. In stead of girding
 and *gathering* vp thy loynes, thou vnloosest them to all

11 not that thou 13.

licentiousnes; For the staffe of stedfastnes, thou afmest thy selfe with the broken Reed of inconstancie, And for incoun-
tering and contending with the flesh and the diuill, most
slauishly thou kissest and embracest them.

So thou thy selfe (I altogether lothe) makest my voice thy 5
enemy. No friende so firme but by oft ill vsage may be made
4 a foe. No meruaile thou makest mee thy foe, | that art a
foe to thy selfe. *Hee that loueth iniquity hateth his owne
soule:* hee that hateth his owne soule can neuer loue his
neighbour; insomuch as there is no man lining that can 10
loue another better then himselfe. If then hys best loue to
himselfe be to hate himselfe, his loue to his neighbour must
be a degree lower; there is no remedie. The Law com-
maundeth, *Loue thy neighboiir as thy selfe:* And he fulfilleth
the Lawe by hating his neighbour as himselfe. / say unto 15
you, *Hee that hateth his neighbour is guilty of the breach of
all the cvntmaundements:* whence it necessarilie ariseth
that hee which loues not his owne soule is guilty of the
breach of all the commandements.

Soule-hating, Apostata *Jerusalem*, that wouldest neuer 20
"be gathered into any compasse of good life, I heere accuse
thee as a Homicide of thine owne life, as a transgressor of
all the commaundements, in hating thy selfe. The most
vnfortunatest is my fortune of any that euer lou'd, to loue
those that not onely hate mee, but hate them-selues. 25

O *Jerusalem*, not the Infidell-Romaines, which shall
inuade thee, and make thy City (now cleped a City of
peace) a shambles of dead bodies, teare down thy Temple,
and sette vp a brothel-house in thy Sanctuarie, not they
(I say) shall haue one droppe of thy blood layde to theyr 30
charge; not one stone of thy Temple or Sanctuarie
testificatory against them: Thy blood shal be vppon
thine owne head, whose transgressions violently thrust
swords into theyr hands. Thy Temple and thy Sanctuarie
shall both cry out against thy security for sacriledge. 35
The Arke wherein the Tables of couenaunt are layde
shall haue the Tables taken away, and in stead of them,

a blacke Register of thy misdemeanures laid in it : yea,
 my Father (if all witnesses should faile) would stand vp
 and | article against thee himselfe, how thou hast dryuen C 4^v
 him (with thy detestable whoredomes) out of his con-
 5 secrated dwelling place. O that thou knewest the time
 of thy visitation ! O that thou wouldest haue *beene gathered*
 together! O that thou wouldest haue had care of thy
 selfe, had care of me ! I must be slaughtered for thee, &
 yet worke no saluation for thee. One crosse alone (cruel
 10 *lerusalem*) is not able to sustaine the weight of thine
 iniquities: tenne times I must be crucified ere thou be
 censed.

For sinne I came to suffer; thy sinne exceedeth my
 suffering ; It is too monstrous a matter for my mercie
 15 or merites to worke on. It wound-eth me more with
 meditating on it, then all the Speares or Nayles can
 wounde me, that are to passe through me. I wold quite
 renounce and for-sweare mine owne safety, so I might but
 extort from thee one thought of thine own safety. Careful
 20 am I for thee carelesse. Againe, this renueth my vnrest,
 that I, which am the Lord and Authour of lyfe, must bee
 the Authour and Euidencer against thee of death. If thou
 hadst neuer scene the light, thy walking in darknes wold
 haue brought thee no waylement. *Ignorantia, sinon excusat*
 25 *a toto, saltern excusat a tanto*: Ignoraunce excuseth the
 halfe, if not the whole. Thou hast not halfe an excuse
 (hence is my tears), not a quarter, not the hundreth part
 of a quarter, not a worde, not a sigh, not a sillable, Neuer
 did I looke on such a manifest vnmasked leprous face,
 30 on a prysoner conuicted so mute. Sore am I impassioned
 for the storme thy tranquillity is in child with. Good
leremy,, nowe I desire with thee, that I had a Cottage
 of way-faring men in the Wildernes, where I might leaue
 my people and lyue, for they be all Adulterers and a band
 35 of Rebels. |

A Tormentor (that abiureth commiseration when he D i

7 had a care of 13.

D 2

first enters into the infancie of his occupation) would collachrimate my case, and rather chuse to haue beene tortured himselfe then torment me with ingratitude as thou doost. More and more thou addest to my vnease, and acquaint 5 mine eyes with the infirmities of anguish ; Hauing no sinne before, thou hast almost made me commit sin, in sorrowing for thy sinnes. Yet, though I haue sounded the vtmost depth of dolour, and wasted myne eye-bals well-neere to pinnes-heads with weeping (as a Barber wasteth his Ball in the water), a further depth of dolour 10 would I sound, mine eyes more would I wast, so I might waste and wash away thy wickednesse. So long haue I wasted, so long haue I washed and embained thy filth in the cleare streames of my braine, that nowe I haue not a cleane Teare left more, to wash or embalme any sinner 15 that comes to me.

The fount of my teares (troubled and mudded with the Toade-like stirring and long-breathed vexation of thy venomous enormities) is no longer a pure siluer Spring, but a mirie puddle for Swine to wallow in. Black and 20 cindry (like Smithes-water) are those excrements that source downe my cheekes. and farre more sluttish then the vglie oous of the channell. Tis thou alone (*vlycerous Ierusalem*) that hast so fouled and soyled them. In seeking to *gather* fruite of thee, I gather nothing but stayning 25 Berries, which embrued my hands and almost poysoned my hart. Neuer wold I mention this, or mone me, if thou hadst not embrued or brawned thine owne hands (not in Berries) but in blood, and more then (almost) poysoned thine owne hart. 30

What talke I of poyson, when it is become as familier to thee as meate & drinke ? Thou hast vsed it so long |
 D i^v for meate and drinke, that true nourishing meate and drinke thou now takest for poyson. *Consuetude est altera natura:* Custome hath so engrafted it in thy nature, 35 that now, not onely poyson not hurts thee, but fostereth
 i)] *after commiseration Q.* 3 then] them 13. 15 *Qy. read embaine ?*

and cherisheth thee. What-soeuer thou art is poyson, and none thou breathest on but thou poysonest. With *Athenagoras* of *Argos*, thou neuer feelest any payne when thou art stung with a Scorpion; Thou hast no sting or
 5 remorse of conscience. Thy soule is cast in a dead-sleep, and may not be awaked though Heauen & Earth should tumble together.

For discharge of my dutie, and augmentation of thine euerlasting malediction, since Teares, threatens, promises,
 10 nor any thing will peirce thee, heere I make a solemne protestation, what my zeale and feruent inclination hath beene (euer since thy first propagation) to win & weane thee from sathan, and notwithstanding thou' *stonedst my Prophets, and slewest them I sent vnto thee*, I still
 15 assayed to reuoke thee, & bring thee back againe to thy first image; not once, or twise, or thrise, but I cannot tell how often, I woulde have *gathered thee, euen as a Henne gathereth her Chickins wider her wings, but thou wouldst not*. Blame me not though I giue thee ouer, that hast
 20 gyuen mee ouer: long patience hath dulled my humour of pittie. No sword but wil loose his edge in long striking against stones.

My leane withered hands (consisting of nought but bones) are all to shiuerd and splinterd in their wide cases of
 25 skinne, with often beating on the Anuile of my bared breast. So penetrating and eleuatedly haue I prayd for you, that mine eyes woulde fayne haue broke from theyr anchors to haue flowne vp to Heauen, and myne armes stretcht more then the length of my body to reach | at the Starres. D 2
 30 My heart ranne full-butt against my breast to haue broken it open, and my soule flutterd and beate with her ayrie-winges on euery side for passage. My knees crackt and the ground fledde back. Then (6 *Ierusalem*) would I haue rent my body in the midst (lyke a graue) so I might
 35 haue buried thy sinnes in my bowels. And had I been in Heauen as I was on Earth, the Sunne shoulde haue exhaled
 3 *Argus Q.* 134 notwithstanding, thou . . . *thee*: I *Q.* 36 exhalted 13

from thee all thy trespasses as meteors, which the cloudes, his Cofferers, recefuig, might fourth-with haue conduited downe into the Sea, and drowned for euer.

Fooles be they that imagine it is the Windes that so tosse and turmoyle them in the deepe: they are no winds but 5 insurrectiue sins which so possesse the waues with the spyrite of raging. I drowned all the sinnes of the first World in water: all the sinnes of the first World now welter, soue, & beate vnquietly in the Sea, whither the World of waters was with-drawne when the Deluge was 10 ended; And as a guilty conscience can no where take rest, so no more can they in the Sea, but, embolning the billowes vppe to the ayre, with roring and howling darte themselues on euery Rocke, desiring it to ouerwhelme them : and because they know they can neuer be recouerd, 15 with the same enuie which is in the diuels, they seeke to drowne and ramuerse euery ship that they meete. If happily there be a calme, it is when they are weary of excruciating themselues. I that was borne to suppress & treade down sinne vnder foote, in the night time (when 20 that sinne-inhabited element is wont to be most lunaticke) walke on the crests of the surges as on the dry land.

Another cause why the Sea so swelleth & barketh of late more then ordinary, is, for when I sent the diuils |
 D 2^v into the Herde of Swine, they carried them head-long into 25 the Sea, where they drowned and perrisht them ; and then, loth to come to land to be controlled and dyspossessed againe by mee, they entred and inhabited the Sea-monsters, such as the Whale, the Grampoys, the Wasser-man, whom they haue suborned and inspyred to lye in wayte for Ships- 30 wrack. Sinne takes no rest but on earth, and on earth no rest in the night, but the day. The night is blacke like the diuell; then hee may boldlie walke abroad like the Owle, and his eyes nere be dazeled. *Solus cum solo* hee may conferre with his subiects, tempt, terrifie, insinuate what 35 he will. Hee knowes that God hath therefore hydde all other obiects from mans sight in the night, that then he

should haue no occasion to gaze elsewhere, but full leysure to looke into himselfe. In which regard, least he shold looke into himselfe, and so repent, hee will not let him see with his owne eyes, but lendeth hym other eyes of despayre
 5 or security to see withall. If of securitie, then eyther hee perswades hym there is no God, and that Religion is but subtile Lawgyuers policie (to keepe sillie fooles in awe with scare-crowes), or that if there be a God, he is a wise God, and, like a wise Counsaier, troubles not himselfe with
 10 euery vaine twittle twattle, of thys man, or that man, but considers whereof we are made, and beareswith vs thereafter.

Yea, (which is horrible) hee sootheth him vp, that if God would not haue had him sinne, hee woulde neuer haue giuen him the partes or the meanes to sinne with. If he be
 15 a whore-maister, he remembreth him howe *Abraham* went in to his mayde *Hagar*: How *Lot* committed incest with his Daughters: How *Dauid* lay with *Berseba*, and slew *Vrias*: And how I (my selfe) woulde not | let the woman D 3
 that had committed adultery bee stoned to death, but
 20 bidde her goe home to her house in peace & sinne no more. If he be a drunkard, *Noah* was drunk, the fore-named *Lot* was drunke, and *Dauid* (mencioned before likewise) made *Vrias* drunke ; Yet all these were men that God delighted in.

35 If he be a periurd person, why, *Peter* for-swore himselfe thrise; *Joseph* swore by the life of *Pharao*, *Dauid* swore, *God doe so and so to mee, if I leaue to Naballyet ere night one topisse against the walls*. Yet when *Naballs* wife *A bigall* (vnwitting to her husband) brought him a lyttle refreshing,
 30 his humour was pacified, his oth was dispenst with. A great many more allegations hath hee to thys end, which heere to recite were to weapon presumption, and saue the diuell a labour in seducing. Murther, theft, (what not ?) hath his texts to authorise him. Nothing doth profite but
 35 peruerted may hurt: Scripture as it may be literally ex-

ii whereof] wherefore 13. 25-6 If. . . thrise] *In italics, and marginal note added* This was long after Christs teares ouer Ierusalem. 13.

pounded and sophisticallie scande, may play the Harbinger as well for Hell as Heauen, and sooner feedes Despayre then Fayth. Hath not the diuell hys Chappell close adioyning to Gods Church? Is hee not the ambitious Ape of GODS Maiestie? And as hee hath his Tabernacle (6 5 *Ierusalem*) in thy Temple, so hath not hee his Oracle or *Tripod* in his Temple at *Delphos*, with as great (if not greater) sacrifices, oblations, & offerings, then are in Gods Temple? Will hee not take vpon him to worke myracles, cure diseases, & be an Angell of light, that is, preach the Gospell as I 10 doe? Speake I in thunder or visions, he speaketh in thunder and visions. Eclipse I the Sunne and Moone, hee will Eclipse Sunne, Moone, and starres. Send I one good-Angel out, he will send out two ill. In conclusion, in any thing hee wyll imitate me, but humility: and by humility 15
D 3 only, my | Chyldren are knowne from the diuels. Pryde is that by which the diuell holdes his kingdome: he had nere been a diuell, if he had not beene too proude to be an Angell. Enuy breedes pride, and pryde breedes enuy: There is none can vp-hold enuy, but he must vp-hold pryde, nor 20 can true pryde Hue, if it hath nothing to enuy at; If it haue nothing so great as it selfe to ayme at, there is no man vnder it hath any pryde or prosperity but it enuies and aymes at.

The Sunne, though it can endure no more Sunnes but it 25 selfe, yet it can take in good part to haue more Planetes besides it selfe, but pryde can endure no Superiours, no equals, no ascendants, no sprigs, no grafts, no likely beginnings. Any thing but vertue it can tolerate to thriue, and that it is too-to afraid of. Marke a Tyrant when you will, 30 and hee first extirpates the adherents to vertue. Vertue is thrise more inuocating for honor then ambition. What was the diuels first practise in Paradice but to destroy vertue in *Adam*, and so by steps to destroy him, by destroying vertue in him? Whom slew *Caine* but his iust or 35 vertuous brother *Adel*? He was afraid the comparison of his iustnes or vertue woulde make hym incomparably vgly

in Gods presence. Whom hated *Esau* and layd waite for, but his vpriht brother *Iacob*, because by his vertue hee had ouer-reacht him in the blessing of hys byrth-right? Did not *Saul* persecute *Dauid*, onely because GOD lou'd him?
 5 So through-out the whole course of the Scriptures, Vertue purchaseth Enuie, and her possessors neuer escape briery scratches.

But as before, so once more I wil assertionate, Vertue hath no enimie but pryde. I my selfe haue no enemy but
 10 Pryde, which is the *Summumgenus* of sinne, & may wel be a conuertible name with the diuell, for the diuell is | nought D 4 but pryde, and pryde is an absolute diuell. But for pryde, *Jerusalem* ere thys had gathered it selfe vnder my wing: Forsooth she disdained to be taught & instructed by such
 15 a meane-titled man as I. But for pryde of despising the preaching of *Noah*, the first Worlde had not beene deluged. But for pride, there had beene no translation of Monarchies. If *Pharao* had not been so proud that he would not let your fore-fathers goe, (but kept them in despite of me,) I had
 20 neuer plagu'd hym as I did.

The reson I deceiu'd you, *Hierosolemites* & lewes, (in not comming in pryde vnto you, in not taking the maiestie and triumph of myne eternity,) was, because I wold not partake with the diuell in the pompe and glory of thys World, which
 25 is proper to him. Did not hee (presently after the first brute of my Gospell) hoise mee vp vnto an exceeding hie Mountaine, and shewed mee all the Kingdomes of the Worlde, & the glories of them, and sayd, *All these will I give thee, if thou wiltfall downe and worship me?* When
 30 I came to *Abraham* in his Tent, and to *Lot* in *Sodom*, accompanied with another Angel, I tooke vpon me no pompous shape. It is debasement and a punishment to me, to inuest and enrobe my selfe in the dregs and drosse of mortality. I woulde resemble the similitude of the
 35 meanest, to gather the meanest vnto me.

I came to call sinners to repentance, poore sinners, begerly sinners, blinde sinners, impotent sinners, aswel as

rich sinners, noble sinners, potentate sinners, to repentance. With me there is no respect of persons ; the Kings blood, attainted of conspiracie against mee, is more base then the caytiues or pesants. What was *Abraham* (but that he D 4^V honoured mee), I shoulde out of his loynes mul-tiPLY a 5 Monarchy? There is no cripple or lazer by the high-way side but wold haue honoured me more then the progenie of *Abraham*, if I had but bestowed the thousand part of the propitiousnes I haue bestowed on the progeny of *Abraham*. Shall a man call any crypple or Beads-man vnto him, to 10 gyue almes to, and hee will not come at him, but contemptuously cast hys kinde profer behind hym? I haue called you (that often haue beene Beggars and Beads-men vnto me) for blessings, & humbly supplicationd you to accept of my largesse I lauisht, but you cryde, Auaunt, 15 hypocrite, thy proferd ware is odious, we'le haue nothing to doe with an Innouater.

What hath immortalitie to doe with mucke? Had my Father no employment for mee, but to sende mee to scrape on a dung-hill for Pearle, where nothing will thriue but 20 Toade-stooles? Was thought-exceeding glorification such a cloyance and cumber vnto me, that I must leaue it; as *Archesilaus*, ouer-melodied and too-much melowed & sugred with sweet tunes, turned them aside, and caused his eares to be new relished with harsh, sower, and vnsauory sounds? 25 O no, when I left Heauen to lyueon earth, I left perpetuall-springing Summer, to sleepe on Beddes of Ise, in the Frozen-zone, the throne of Winter. My super-abundant loue to men on earth was all the solace I proposed to my selfe on earth. *Vbi cuiusque animiis est, ibi animat*: where a mans 3^o minde is, there his myrth is.

Myrth was to me no mirth, whyles thou wert *notgathered* vnto mee. No more then I haue *gather'd* thee, can I *gather* thee: As a *Henne gathereth her Chickins*, so woulde I haue *gathered thy chyl dren*. The Henne clocketh her Chickins ; 35

5 (paul-)tiplie c.w. 14 me, for blessings,) & Q.
~~cuiusque~~ *cuiusque animus, est ibi animat* 93, 94, Corr. in Errata.

30 *Vbique*

I would haue clocked and called them by my preaching:
 The Henne shieldeth them, and fighteth for | them against E i
 the Puttocke; I would haue shielded them, and secured
 them against that slie Puttocke sathan. I would haue
 5 fought for them, with hell, the diuel, and all infernalitie.
 The Henne, after she hath clocked & called her chickins,
 keepeth them warme vnder her soft doune, walleth them in
 with her wings, and watcheth for them whiles they sleepe.
 After I had called you (my children or chyckins) vnder my
 10 wings, which is, into my Church, I would haue beene a
 stronger wall vnto you then the wall of the Tower of *Babell*,
 which (as Writers affirme) was the eight part of a myle Herodot.
 thick: I would haue sette an Angell (with a fiery-sword) in
 your gate, to keepe out your enemies; Still would I (with
 15 the heate & warmth of my Spirite) haue cherrisht and
 increast the strength & growth of your fayth, and kept it
 from being dead and cold; My vigilance shoulde haue
 sentineld for all your sleepes ; neyther the terror by night,
 nor the Arrowe of temptation that flyeth by day, should
 20 haue frightened you. Sathan (whom you now holde for such
 a subtile vnderminer) should haue beene your Foole and
 your iesting-stocke, and a scare-bugge to your Babes only.
 All things should haue prosperd and gone well, that you
 had taken in hand. *Happy is the man that sitteth in the*
 25 *shaddow of the wings of the almighty: vnhappy are you,*
that haue rather sought to dwell in the shadow of Death,
then vnder the shadow of the wings of the Almighty.

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that killest my Prophets, & stonest
them I sent vnto thee: How often woulde I haue gathered
 30 *thy Chyldren together, as a Henne gathereth her Chickins*
vnder her winges, but you woulde not! What is more tender
then a Henne ouer her Chickins ? So tender and more (6
Jerusalem) haue I beene ouer thy chyldren, yet would they
neuer tender themselues, but tend and bend | all theyr E
 35 *courses to ruine. Neuer could I gette them to flocke vnder*
my wing) or come vnder my rooffe. Who takes charge of

him that in a time of warre will not come into the Towne, but lye wilfully without the walls? No charge doe I take of any that will not come within my walls, be *gathered vnder my wing*, but lyue out of the Church. Knew you what a feareful thing it were, to lyue (as Out-lawes) from the wings 5 of my Church, to let riches, promotion, or any worldly respects, hinder you from being *gathered* into the vnity of my body and communion of Saints, you would vndoubtedly forsake all, and follow me.

All those that repayed not in time into Noahs-Arke, the 10 waters ouer-tooke and drowned. Those that *gathered* not Manna in the morning, it did them no good. Those that made excuses, and came not to the wedding when they were bidden, the King sent foorth his Warriours and destroyed them, and burnt vp theyr Citties. Sencelesse stones are 15 more obedient vnto Gods voyce then you, for the stony-walls of *lericho* (after God had summoned them by his Priestes sounding theyr Trumpets seauen times) at the 7. sounde they prostrated themselues flat. Not the third, or the fourth, or the fift sound haue you with-stoode, but fiue a hundred solemne summons and sounds; No iudgement that (in your eares) I or any can sound can make you fall prostrate, or humble your selues. Still you wil lyue as runnagates and banished men from Gods iurisdiction; you had rather the diuell should gather you vp then he. 25

I haue pyped) and you haue not daunced, I haue lamented, and you haue not mourned: The dayes will come, when I shall be taken away from you, and then you shal wish (in vayne) that you had daunst after my pype, and borne a |
E a principall part in my Consort of mourning. Let all sue- 30
cessions and Citties be warned by you, howe they neglect Gods calling: let euery priuate man be admonished by you, how he neglecteth Gods calling. By benefites, by sicknes, by outward crosses, signes and wonders hee calleth

i time] *Gro.*: Towne *Q.*
thrice 93, 94. Cf. *Errata.*
[or the seuenth] sound *Gro.*

7 respect 13.

7.] thirde *Q.* *Corr. in Errata Of 93.*

18 seauen times] 13, *Gro.*:
20 fift
30 principal c.w. 31 they] yon 13.

men : *To day if you will he are my voyce, harden not your harts:* That is, at this present when I call you, harken to me. Who dooth not harken at the first, let hym looke to be hardned. *Pharao*, for hee woulde not at the 5 first voyce or message let the chyldren of Israeli goe, his hart was hardned.

God when his voyce will not be hearde, permitteth the deuil to goe and try if his voyce wil be heard: if they heare the diuels and not his, then hath he wher-withall to conuince 10 them. *Jerusalem* hath hearde the voyce of God, crying out loude in her streetes and hie places vnto her, to *gather* herselfe: Her streetes and al her hie places are filled with the *ecchoes* of Gods voyce. The stones of her Turrets haue beene so mou'd with it, that they haue opened theyr eares 15 & receiued his *eccho* into them, and that the Cryer myght knowe they attended the wordes which he spake, they (*ecchoing*) repeated them againe. The very *eccho* of the walls and the stones shall *eccho* vnto God for sharpe punishment against you ; And let any but reade or rehearse 20 thys sentence, *O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, how often would I haue gathered thy chyl dren together, as the Henne gathereth her Chickins !* the *eccho* shall replye, *But they would not.* They woidd not. Thou wouldest not indeede. And no damnation hast thou *but thou wouldst not.* I offered thee peace, 25 *but thou wouldst not:* I offred thee to repent & be baptized, *but thou wouldst not:* I offred thee (if thou labourdst and wert loden) to ease thee, *but thou wouldst not:* I offerd thee to aske & thou shouldst haue, | *but thou wouldst not:* E 2^v. To knocke and it should be opend, *but thou woldst not.* 30 Great euils shalt thou endure, *for thou wouldst not.* Great euils did I say? alas, little euils, compared to the euils I must endure onely for these 4. words, *But thou wouldst not.* *Heu melior quanto sors tua sorte mea est.* My body shall finde a Sepulcher, but my sorrowe neuer any, *for* 35 *thou wouldst not.* For euer I must mourne what thou for euer must suffer, *for thou wouldst not.* This will be
i men] them Gro. you]yee 13.

thyne vtter impeachment, that the very *Samaritans* (whom thou accountest Infidels) receiued and acknowledged me, *but thou wouldst not*; That the vncleane spyrits departing out of men, cryde and confest mee to be the Sonne of God, *but thou wouldst not*; And lastly, that 5 the Spirite of God himselve (discending on my head like a Doue) gaue testimony of me, *yet thou wouldst not*.

Gene. 19. *Clamor Sodomorum multiplicatus est*: The cry of thee, *Jerusalem* (the second *Sodom*), that *thou wouldst not*, in Gods eares is doubled. To what Nation shall I nowe 10 preach or appeale, since my elected people (that shoulde harken to me) haue aunswered me *they would not*? *Niniue* repented at the preaching of *fonas*, but *lerusalem* at the preaching of her *Iesus*, *she would not*. I offerd to wash her feete with the waters of my tribulation, and heale euery 15 disease and maladie she had with them, as I healed the leprosie of *Naaman* with the waters of *Jordan*, but ouer the waters of my Teares and tribulation, shee passeth as drie-foote as once they past ouer *lor dan*. The riuer of God is

Psalm 65. full of water: *lerusalem*, were thyne eyes the riuers of 20 God, they woulde bee full of water. The Snow on thy Mountaines by the Sunne is resolued to water: the Sonne of GOD hath sought to resolue thy snow-colde hart into

E 3 water, but hee could not, for *thou wouldst not*. Ouer thy principall gates and the doores of thy Temple, let therefore 25 this for an Emprese be engrauen: A kinde compassionate man, who, grieuing to see a serpentine Salamander fry in the fire (so pittiouslie as it seem'd), cast water on the raging flames to quench them, and was by him stung to death for his labour. The mott or word thereto, AT NOLVISTI, 30 *but thou woldst not*. As who should say, thank thy selfe though thou stil burnest: I wold haue ridde thee out of the fire, *but thou wouldst not*. By stinging mee (mortally) thou disturbest me.

On thee, Salamander-like *lerusalem*, haue I cast the 35 coole water of my Teares, to keepe Hell-fire (if it might be)

3not. Thatg. 5not. Andg. 18 as|jon 13 33 thee ;, Gro.thou93,94.

from feeding on thee and inwrapping thee: but thou (delighting like that chillie Worme to Hue in the midst of the fornace, or, as the foolish Candle-flie, to blow the fire with the beating of thy wings neere vnto it that must burne thee)
 5 hast spit thy poyson at me when I sought to preserue thee. More agreeing is it to thy nature, to fry in the flames of thy fleshly desires, (which is but a short blaz'd straw-fire, to tinde or inkindle Hell-fire,) then to Hue temperately quallified, midst *Insultfortunate*, the fortunate Hands of
 10 Gods fauour. For thys shalt thou be consumed with fire, *Thy house shal be left desolate vnto thee.*

Hetherto, with *leshaciabus*, thou hast had nought but a playster of dry-figges layd to thy byle, thou hast beene chastised but with wanton whips, but loe, shortlie (the time
 15 comes) thou must be scourged with Scorpions : a hooke shall be cast into thy iawes, and a chayne come through thy nostrils. I nowe but fore-tell a storme in a calme, but when the Leuiathan shall approche, (that with his neesings chaseth Clowdes,) and you shall see | lightning and thunder E 3^v
 20 in the mouthes of all the foure Windes ; When Heauen (in stead of starres) shall bee made an Artillerie-house of Haylestones, and no Plannet reuolue any thing but prostitution and vastitie, then shall you know what it is, by saying *you would not, to make your house vnto you be left desolate.*
 35 With the foolish builder) you haue founded your Pallaces on the sands of your owne shalow conceits: had you rested them on the true Rocke, they had beene ruine-proofe ; but now the raine wil rough-enter through the crannies of theyr wauering, the Windes will blow and batter ope wide
 30 passages for the pashing shoures; With roring and buffeting lullabies, in stead of singing and dandling by-os, they will rocke them cleane ouer and ouer. The onely commodity they shal tith to their owners will be (by their ouer-turning) to affoord them Tombes vnaskt. Great shall bee the fall of
 35 thy foolish building (6 *Ierusalem*) : like a Tower ouer-topt, it shal fal flatte, and be layd low and *desolate.*

In the Hauen of *loppa* shall arriue as many shyppes as would make a Marine-cittie, in bignesse no lesse then thy selfe. The *Helle-spont* by *Xerxes* was neuer so surcharg'd as it shall be. All *Galile* (from the Lande of *Nepthali* vpwards) shall bee but a quarter for theyr Pioners and a 5 couche for theyr baggage. From *Ierusalem* to the plaine of *Gibcon* (which is fiftie myles distance) the infinite enemy will depopulate and pitch his Pauillions. Man, woman, chylde, he shall vnmortalize & mangle; Oxen, Sheepe, Cammels, idely engore, and leaue to putrifie in the open 10 Fieldes, onely to rayse vp seede to Snakes, Adders, and Serpents. The Mount *Tabor* (whose heigth is thirty furlongs, and on whose toppes is a playne twentie-three furlongs 4 longes broade) shall haue all the starre-gazing Townes (on it scituate) iustled head-long downe from the heigth of his 15 fore-head, and breaking theyr backes with theyr stumbling rebutment, tumble in the ayre, like *Lucifer* falling out of Heauen into Hell. Yea, theyr Firmament-propping foundation shal be adequated with the Valley of *lehosaphat*: whose sublimity (whiles it is in beheading), the Skye shall 20 resigne all his Clowdes to the Earth, and light-wing'd dust dignifie it selfe by the name of a meteor. From that blind-dispersed nyght of dust shall many lesser Mountaines receiue theyr loftie mounting: and part of it (being wind-wafted into the Sea) insert floating Hands midst the Ocean. 25

None shall there bee left to fight the battailes of the Lorde but those that fight the battailes of theyr owne ambition. By none shall the Sanctuary be defended but those that wold haue none destitute it or defloure it but themselues. The feast of Tabernacles, the feast of 30 sweet Bread, and the feast of Weekes, shall quite be discaledred. Your Sabaothes and New-moones shall want a Remembrancer; Your Peace-offerings and continuall Sacrifice, (a thousand, two hundred, and ninetie days, as Dan. ia. *Daniel* prophecied,) shall be put to silence. The abhominati- 35 on of desolation shall aduaunce it selfe in your *Sanctum*

sanctorum. Vpon your Altars (in stead of oblations) your Priestes shall be slaughtered. Not so much as the High-priest (the vnder-god of your Cittie) but shall be hanged vp (as a signe) at the doore of your Temple.

5 The particularity of your general fore-spoken woes would worke in me a Timpany of Teares, if I shoulde portrayture it. I haue pronounst it, and your House (vnretrieuable) *vnto you shal be left desolate.* The resplendent eye-outbrauing buildings of your Temple (like a | Drum) shall be E 4^V
 10 vngirt & vnbraced: the soule of it, which is the (fore-named) *Sanctum sanctorum*, cleane shall be strypt and vncliothed. God shall haue nere a Tabernacle or retyring place in your Citty, which hee shall not be vndermined and desolated out of. The Sun & Moone (perplexed with the spectacle) shall
 15 flye farther vpward into Heauen, and be afraide least (when the besiegers haue ended be-lowe) they next sack them out of their seiges or circuits, since they haue had God (their common Creator) so long in chase.

Ierusalem, euer after thy bloody hecatombe or buriall,
 20 the Sunne (rising & setting) shal enrobe himselfe in scarlette, and the mayden-Moone (in the ascension of her perfection) shal haue her crimson cheekes (as they wold burst) round balled out with bloode. Those ruddy inuesturings and scarlet habilements, from the clowde-climing slaughter-
 as stack of thy dead carkases, shall they exhalingly quintessence, to the end thou maist not onelie bee culpable of gorging the Earth, but of goring the Heauens with blood: and in witnes against thee, weare them they shall to the worlds end, as the lyeries of thy wayning.

30 Not *Abrahams* sonnes are you, but the sonnes of blood, for in nothing you imitate *Abraham* but that hee (hauing no more saue one onely sonne) would haue sacrificed him; so GOD hauing no more but one onely Sonne, you lye in wake to crucifie and sacrifice him. For thine owne distruc-
 35 tion (disgraded Daughter of *Syori*) thou lyeest in wayte, in

17 or] and 13. 18 common-Creator *Q.* 24-5 slaughter-sacke 93, 94.
 Corr. in *Errata.* 25 quintessence 93, 94.

laying waite for me: that which I hunger & thirst after is thy saluation in my destruction. I am enamoured of my Crosse, because it is all ages blessing. Not a nayle in it but is a necessary Agent in the Worlds redemption. (

F i Holie Crosse, *Adams* of-spring, onely holines, I grieue 5 that vpon thee I can spend none of my God-head as wel as my humanity, to glorifie the more this great exploit. For the desolating and disinheriting of Hell haue I that reserued, none but the God of heauen may leade captiuitie captiue & returne Conquerer from that dungeonly Kingdome. 10 Strange is it (6 *Jerusalem*) that I shoulde be able to conquer and forrage Hell, and yet cannot conquer or bring vnder thee to mine obedience. To speake troth, (as in my lyps is no guile,) thou art not worthy to be conquered, or haue the host of thine affections subdued by mee, that hast admitted 15 of a baser Conquerour, which is the diuell, after whom I can succede with no honour.

The Romaines (not I) shall conquer thee, and *leauē thy house desolate vnto thee*: who being Heathens and not knowing God, are a degree of indignity inferiour to the diuell, for 20 hee knowes God, and with feare & trembling acknowledgeth him. Wouldst thou with fear & trembling haue fledde to me for refuge against the diuel and the Romaines, when I would haue, -gathered thee, both the diuell and the Romaines (at one instant) had beene subdued to thine hand. But vnder 25 my standard *thou woldest not*, thou scornedst *to gather thee, therefore shal thy house be left desolate vnto thee*: therefore shal Gods house *bee left desolate vnto thee*. Maiesticall Temple, on whose Pinnacle once I was tempted, thou and I (one after another) must perrish, for no fault of our owne, 30 but for the sinnes of this people.

No profite, but disprofite, shall the scattered ashes of thy obsequies bring vnto them, nor shall they, like the ashes of me the true Phoenix, Hue againe: neuer shall thy body (like 35 F i mine) be raised againe. Raced and defaced | shalt thou be, as thou hadst neuer beene. Haplie Caues for wild-beastes

(many yeeres together) thou mayst affoord, but the Lorde of Hostes shall abandon thee, the King of Israeli shall abiure thee. By *Herod* (a man of blood) thou wert last builded, and in bloode shalt thou be buried. O let mee embrace thee while thou yet standest, and I am not translated : heereafter (perhaps) nere may I haue the opportunity to embrace thee. This present houre that is graunted, I will put out to vsury. On thy Alablaster out-side, with scalding sighes & dimming kisses, a greater dew I will rayse then 10 lyes vpon sweatie Marble a little before rayne.

Methinkes these stones looke shyning and smyling vpon mee: *Ierusalem* frownes like a Shee-beare seeking her whelpes. These stones start not out of theyr assigned places, but still retaine theyr imposed first proportion : from mee 15 (her foundation) long agoe hath *Ierusalem* started, out of those limits and bounds I assignd her hath she started, her order she hath broken, my building shee hath subuerted ; no forme or face of my workmanshype is visible in her. But yet, were nothing but her face and out-side deformed, it 20 were some-what; her in-side is worst of all: her Hart, her Lunges, her Liuer, & her Gal, all are carioniz'd and contaminated with surfets of selfe-will Her owne hart she eateth and disgesteth into the draught with riotte and excesse.

Poore Temple, long might'st thou stand, & not haue a 25 stone of thee disquieted til the Judgement-day, if those to whom thou belongest were not ten-times branded in the fore-head for Reprobates, not with the marke of the Lambe, but the Lyon, who (roring) seeketh whom he may deuoure. Distresse-fully am I diuided from thee; my soule (when it 30 shall be diuided from mee) will not | endrench mee in so much F 2
doulour as thou doost. The zeale of thee distraughteth me, and some essentiall parte of my life seemeth to forsake me and droppe from mee, when I thinke of thy diuastation. Nothing so much dooth macerate and madde mee, as that all 35 the sky-perfuming prayers & profuse sacrificatory expences of ful-hand oblationers should not haue force to vphold

9 I will] will I 13

thee. Desolation, for no debt of sinne shalt thou extende on this Temple ; that thou hast to extend against it, extende against me, for it is my Fathers habitation. It will but augment his indignation against this Citty and doe thee no good, to dryue hym out of house and home, and reserue 5 him no sanctified mansion vppon earth. Let there be one peculiar Treasury of supplications & vovves vndestroyed and vnpillaged.

O Father, be this House more high-pryzed to thee then Paradice; More worshyp and adoration hast thou had in 10 it then in Paradice. There thou setst a fiery-armed Gardant to repulse insolent inuaders ; sette some garisonment before the gate of thy Tabernacle, to oppugne the dispossessors of thy Dietie. Thou canst not heare me ; I pray for them whose sinnes sue against mee. Thou hast decreed (in thy ¹⁵ secrete Judgement), *There house shall bee left desolate vnto them:* Thou hast decreed I shall be left desolate on the Crosse, and cry, *Eloi, Eloi, lamma-sabackthani*, vnayded or vnregarded. Willing am I to execute thy will; onely let me not in vaine gyue vp the ghost, but some soules of this Pan-²⁰ ther-spotted *lerusalem* may bee extraught to ioy with me.

O that myne armes were wide enough to engraspe the walls of *lerusalem* about, that in myne amorous enfoldment (vnawares) I might whyrle her to Heauen with me ! Why ^{F^{2v}} should I not dryue all Israeli before me | to the greate felicity, 25 as a Sheeheard before him driueth his flocke to the fatte Pastures? I shall neuer dryue you before me; you wil driue me before you (with murder & violence) to immortality, and your selues not one foote follow after. *Pol me occidistis amici*, you whom I thought to binde to me as 30 friends, haue foe-like betraied me. Because I am humble I may not please you. Because I am Christ the iust, therefore you will designe me to the Crosse vniustly. *Est mihi supplicij causa fuisse pium*. Wold God there were no other exclamatory crime then this to be obiected against thee. 35 Yet haue I suffered of thee nothing but feare. More then feare am I (within these fewe dayes) to entertaine at thy hands.

Slay me thou shalt, because I haue vouchsafed to Hue
 with thee, and doome me an vnwoorthy ende in leiu of my
 deere loue. *Tu mihi criminis author*, no imputation of
 scandale shall I haue but the heauie burthen of thy abuses.
 5 Thou shalt be my vninocence and whole summe of delin-
 quishment: thy right hand of my death shall be arraigned.
Hoc prohibete nefas, scelerique resistite vestro. Not the
 prophane Idolatry of the Gentiles in my sides shall delue
 so deepe, as thy stiffe-necked transgressions. Lesse doe I
 10 deplore my death then thy lyfe; and a thousande times
 haue I wisht and desired, that thou hadst onely occasion to
 repent my death and not thine own other misdeeds. Repent
 yet, & I will repent me of the pronouncement against thee.
 Should I not so haue pronounst and denunciated against
 15 thee, thy blood would haue beene required at my hands. Ezech. 3.
Therefore is my people ledde captiue (sayth the Lord by *Esay*) *Esay. 5.*
because they know mee not. Your pretence of vnknowledge
 or ignorance is already counterpleaded: you shal not say,
 Woe be to me that I neuer tasted the mylke of vnderstand-
 20 ing, but (with *lob*) banne | the time that euer you sucked the F 3
 breastes. At my breastes, *Jerusalem*, hast thou not sucked,
 but bitte off my breasts, *when thou stonedst my Prophets.*
O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, that stonest my Prophets, and killest
them I sent vnto thee: How often would I haue gathered thy
 25 *chyl dren together', as a Henne gather eth her Chickins vnder*
her wings, but thou woldest not/ Therefore shall thy House
bee left desolate vnto thee.

Heere ebbe the spring-tide of my Teares; Eyes, from
 this present, prepare your selues to be recluses. I came
 30 not to shedde Teares, but Blood, for *Jerusalem*, blood for
Jerusalem will I shedde, to attone for her shedding of
 innocent blood; So that let her yet turne vnto me, her
 attonement is made. I will corroborate my Crosse Giant-
 like, to vnder-bear the *Atlas* burthen of her insolences.
 35 With my Nazarite-tresses, to my Crosse will I bind her
 crossing frowardnesse and contaminations. Not a nayle
 22 when thou stonedst the Prophets 13.

that takes hold of me, but I wil (expresly) enioyne it to take hold of her deflectings and errors. Death, (as euer thou hopest at my hands to haue thy Commission enlarged,) when thou killest me, kill her iniquities also: let thy deepe-entring Darte obliuionize their memories. 5

Of man (as of mee) thou killest but the body onelie: kill the body & the soule both of her vnbounded sinne-gluttonie. I will pay thee largely for thy paines. Whereas before thou neuer tookst any but the subiects prysoners, now thou shalt haue the King himselve surrendred to thy 10 cruelty. Thou shalt enrich thy style with this title, /, *Emperour Death, the Lord of all flesh, the killer of the King of all Kings, &c.* Deale well by *Ierusalem*, how euer thou dealest with me. Let not her Soule *be left desolate*, though her Citty *be left desolate vnto her.* 15

F 3v Euen the High-priestes that shall binde myne handes and adiudge my body to bee scourged, deale mercifullie with, cutte them not off suddainly, but giue them a space of repentance. Let them bee crowned with eternitie, though they crowne me with thornes. Their crowning mee 20 with thornes I take for no trespasse, for they cannot pricke mee so ill with those bryers as they haue prouokt mee with theyr sinnes. Nor shall the Gall and Vineger they gyue me to drinke bee so bitter vnto mee as theyr blasphemies. Forgyue them, Lord, they forget what they doe. «5

Further I may not proceede, except I should detract from my Passion to adde to my Teares. Hee that can weepe with more soule-martirdome then I, let him take vppon him to wash (in my stead) the earths Ethiopian face. Euery vaine of mee let it burst, to feede the Lake 30 of *Gehenna*, before *Gehenna* gather springs from the hart of *Ierusalem*. Not the least hayre of my body, but may it be as a pegge in a vessell, to broche bloode with plucking out, so in the droppings of that bloode *Ierusalem* will bathe herselfe. *O Ierusalem, Ierusalem, that stonest my 35 Prophets, and killest them I sent vnto thee,* ten -thousand

25 Forgyue . . . doe] *Italic in 13,*

times adiew. I would neuer haue bidde thee adiew, or beene diuorced from thee, but that thou thy selfe hast diuorced thy selfe. Heauen no heauen hast thou made vnto mee, by endlesse performing thy obits. If my crimson Teares on
5 the Crosse may more preuaile with thee, so it is, or els in vaine I discended, or els to thy paine I discended.

Discende into the closet of thyne owne conscience, and enquire how oft I haue come thither and cald vppon thee to *gather* thee. Examine thy hart & thy reynes if I haue
10 not secretely communed with thee by night, to | conuert F 4 & be turned vnto me. Thou neuer withdrewst thy selfe and wert solitarie, but my Spyrite was reproouing and disputing with thee. At length shall I obtaine of thee to remember and *gather* thy selfe? Though thou wilt
15 not in respect of me (whom thou shouldest respect), yet in respect of thyne own benefite, remember and *gather* thy selfe, enter into meditation of thy lamentable estate. But heare thy Physition, though thou intendest not to be ruled by him. Vnderstande the nature of thy disease,
20 which is the first steppe to recouery. Relieue my languor, by being lesse retchles of thy inuinsible aspiring infirmity. Glance but halfe a kind looke at mee, though thou canst not resolute to loue me; by halfe a looke my loue may steale into thine eyes, vnlookt for. Thy sight is no way
25 mispent or impayred by casting away one askance-regard on any.

The Sunne shyneth aswell on the good as the badde: God from on hie beholdeth all the workers of iniquity, aswell as the vp-right of hart. It behoueth thee to try
30 al spyrites, let my Spyrite bee one of those (all) which thou bringest to the Touch-stone. I doe not wil thee, without tryall, on my bare report to bee directed by it, but when thou hast tryde it, & sifted it to the vttermost, then as it approues it selfe, to entertaine it. Vppon vncertaine
35 experiments, (hauing the least pretence of gaine in the,) men will hazard and venture many thousands: try once

an experiment to gayne Heauen with; Venture or hazard, but a few indifferent good thoughts of mee. I say I am thy *Messias*, and am come to *gather* thee: condemne me not rashly, but awaite and see the end of my *gathering*, wherto it sorts. Search the Scriptures and the Prophets, whether I be a Iyer and impostor or no. I woulde gyue thee leaue
 F 4, to hate me, so thy hate woulde make thee in-|dustrious & sedulous to harken out & enquire whence I am. Were I notorious guilty, and, vnexamined & vnheard, you should sentence me, you should gyue to me amongst men an 10 opinion of innocence: beeing not guilty, you make your Judgements guilty of knowing I am not guilty, in proceeding against mee without circumstaunce or prooffe. I speake all this while to the winde, or as a disconsolate prysoner that complayneth himselfe to the stone-walls. 15

God is mooued and mollified (though hee be neuer so incensed) with often and vnslacked intercessions; Golde (which is the soueraigne of Mettals) bends soonest, onely Iron (the pesant of all) is most inflexible. *Jerusalem* with nothing is mooued, therefore must her Tabernacle be 20 remooued, therefore must *her House be left desolate vnto her*. Often, importunately, violently, eagerly haue I intercessioned vnto her, to *gather* herselfe vnto me: I haue kneel'd, wept bitterly, lift vp myne handes, hunge vpon her, and vowed neuer to let her goe, til shee consented 25 to retire herselfe into my tuition, & aunswerd pleasingly to my petition. Neuer did the Widdow in my Parrable so follow and tyre the wicked ludge wyth fury-haunting instancie, as I haue doone her. No where could she rest but I haue alarumd in her eares her pryde, murder, and 30 hypocrisie, and with dismall crying and vociferatiue inculcating vnto her, drawne my throat so hie into the rooffe of my mouth, that it hath quite swallowd vp & ensheathed my tongue, and threatend to turne my mouth out of his office. 35

I haue crackt mine eye-strings with excessiue staring and stedfast heauen-gazing, when with fast-fortified prayer

and eare-agonizing inuocation I haue distressed my Fathers
 soule for her; so that (enrag'd) hee hath bid | me out of his G i
 sight, chyd me, rebukt me, and impatiently said, as he sayd
 vnto *Moses*, Let mee alone, that I may wreake myne anger
 5 on her and consume her. None of these may ouer-come
 her: the bloode of my Prophets, and the hundred-voyc't
 clamor of her multiplied mutinies gainst Heauen, are farre
 louder before my Father then I, they out-throate me, and
 put mee downe I cannot be heard, euen as one that howles
 10 puts downe him that sings. Mee would not *Jerusalem*
 heare, when with sweet songs I haue allur'd, cluckt, &
 wooed her to come vnder my wings: therefore will not
 my Father heare any man that once names her. When
 I pray for her, her sinnes fall a howling that I should not
 15 be heard.

My wings her gray-headed sturdy disobedience hath now
 cleane vnpinioned and broken, so that (though I would)
 I cannot *gather* her. Besides, she hath steeled my soft
 impressiue hart, and mirmidoniz'd myne eyes, that they
 20 shall neuer giue griefe a Teare more almes. Poore Hennes,
 there is nothing so tender as you are ouer your Chickins,
 but had you, as I haue, none but Kites and Kistrels to
 your Chickins, such as flie against the winde as soone as
 they are borne, and *gather* themselues in Armes against
 25 you when you offer to *gather* them, you woulde learne of
 mee, to leaue off to be so tender.

To *desolation* (*Jerusalem*) must I leaue thee, *desolation*
 that taketh his watch-woorde from *thou iouldst not: Desolation*,
 the greatest name of vengeance that is; *Desolation*,
 30 which hath as many branches of misery as Hell belonging
 to it; *Desolation*, the vtmost Arrow of Gods indignation.
 I cannot in tearmes expresse the one quarter this word
Desolation containeth. *Dauid*, in the depth of hys despayre
 of Gods mercy, sayd, Hee was left as *Desolate* as the
 35 *Pellican* in the wildernesse, or the Owle on the house |
 top. This is the *Desolation* of the Pellican in the Wilder- G i^v

7 against /, 28 from *thou* 13. 31 it. *Desolation* 93, 94.

nesse, that when she hath her bowels vnnaturally torne out by her young ones (into the world tirannously entring), and they leaue her in the extremity of her torment, and will not deigne her (for all her deere trauell) one comforting aspect of compassion, to herselfe (twixt lyuing and dying) 5 herselfe she complayneth. Blood and teares equally she spendeth, and as her wombe is rent out with vngrateful fruitfulnessse, so now her hart shee rents out with selfe-gnawing discontentment, and dyeth, not decayed by age, but destroyed by her of-spring. 10

The mellancholy Owle (Deaths ordinary messenger) that nere weildeth his lazie leaden winges but by night, and in his huge lumpish head seemeth to haue the house of sleepe built, then is most solitarie and *desolate*, when (restrained from tuning his owne priuate disconsolations 15 to the darke gloomy ayre) he is sent to sing on a desolate house-toppe a dolefull dreary ditty of destiny, *Alijsque dolens jit causa dolendi. Ierusalem*, euen as the Pellican in the Wildernesse, so (by thine owne progenie) shalt thou haue thy bowels torne out: by ciuill warres shalt thou be 20 more wasted then outwarde annoyance. Those whom thou most expectest loue of shall be most vnnaturall to thee. Not onely teares shal they constraîne thee to weepe, but blood, and vrge thee rent out thine owne hart in ruing their irreligiousnesse. As the Owle on the house-toppe 25 euer-more howlingly calls for some Corse, and is the first Mourner that comes to any funeral, so (*Ierusalem*) shalt thou, howling, sitte like the Owle on thy hie places and house-tops, and tune nothing but layes of ill lucke and *desolation*, and funerall Elegies of thy forlorne ouer- 30 throw. Thus shalt thou sing, *Sodome is suncke, and I must succede.* \

G 2 " God promised hee woulde nere-more drowne the
 " World in water, but mee hee hath drowned in blood.
 " All the Eagles of the field feede theyr young ones with 35
 " my young-mens carkasses. Myne olde Sages & Gouer-

nours strowe the streetes with theyr white hayres like
 strawes : their withered dead-bodies serue to mende High-
 waies with, and turne standing Quagmyres to firme"
 ground (ramd full of their corses). My Virgins and"
 5 Matrons, in stead of paynting theyr faces ruddie, colour "
 them with theyr Kins-folkes gore. Happie is that Wife "
 which may entombe her slaughtred Husband in her Well"
 or Cesterne. Happy is that Sister that (for strewing-"
 hearbes) may scatter her discheueld Mayden-hayre on"
 10 her dead Brothers trunck. "

Euen as there be many Foules that eate vp their own "
 Egges, so the Children are fayne to feede the Mother;"
 The Infant which she trauels with nine monthes in her"
 bellie, once againe hunger thrusteth into her empty-famisht"
 15 body. The Babes in conception (beeing halfe entred"
 out of the wombe, and but with one eye beholding the"
 miseries of their Country) return crying back againe"
 whence they came, and chuse rather to tumble forth stil-"
 borne, then viewe the Worlde in such hurly-burlie. "

20 So exceeding are mine aduersities that after successions "
 which shall heare of them will euen be *desolate* and exiled "
 from myrth with the hearing. *Adams* fall neuer so woe-"
 enwrapped the earth, as the relation of them shall. Christ, "
 the Sonne of GOD, (all mens Sauour but mine,) fore-"
 25 prophecied / *should thus bee left desolate*', but I believed "
 it not: therefore is my *desolation* vnlookt for come vpon"
 mee ; therefore am I made a scorne to the Gentiles of"
 confusion. | "

O *Ierusalem, Jerusalem*, all this might'st thou haue G 2^v
 30 auoyded : I neuer sought the death of a sinner ; my death
 thou hast sought, for I laboured to sane thee. Saue thy
 selfe as well as thou mayst, for I haue forsaken thee; to
desolation haue I resigned thee. If in this worlde thou
 endurest thy punishment patiently (and canst purge thy
 35 Soule by repentance), in my world of ioy I shall be readie
 to receiue thee ; otherwise, I haue nought to doe with
 thee, *thy Soule, as thy House, be left desolate vnto thee.*

HEere doe I confine our Sauours collachrimate Oration, and putting off his borrowed person, restore him to the tryumphancie of his Passion. Now priuately (as mortall men) let vs consider howe his threats were after verified in *Iertisalems* ouer-turne. 5

Should I write it to the prooffe, weeping would leaue me no eyes : like tragick *Seneca*, I shoulde tragedize my selfe, by bleeding to death in the depth of passion. Admirable Italian teare-eternizers, *Ariosto*, *Tasso*, and the rest, nere had you such a subiect to roialize your Muses with. 10
Of a late destruction of *Jerusalem*, *Tasso*, thou wrot'st, wherein thy *Godfry of Bulloyne*, the destroyer, beareth the chiefe part of honour. A counterfeit *Melpomene* (in comparison of this) was thy Muses Midwife, when that child of Fame was brought forth. Let no man think to enter into 15
this History as hee should, but a consumption of sorrow wil cutte him of ere he come to the end. God forbid I shold be so Luciferous passionatiue-ambitious, to take vpon me the full blast of this *desa/atiue-Trumpet* of *Jerusalem* ; a weake breath or two I will writhe into it, and 20
G 3 with a hoarse sound (such as fitteth farre-spent lan-|guorment), manifest, as it were in a dead-marche, her vntimely interment.

Forty yeeres were expired after our Lordes lifting vp into Heauen, when the Temple-boasting lewes (elate in 25
theyr owne strength) began to pretend a wearines of the Romaine regiment, and coueted to raigne intire Lords, ouer the Lords that raignd ouer them. *Eleazer*, the Sonne of *Anani* the High-priest, was the first that seminarizd thys hope of signiorizing and freedome amongst them. 30
Proudly he controlled *Agrippa* and all the other Leiftenaunts, droue them from theyr dignities to Rome to seeke succour and rescue, and swayed ouer the multitude as the King and Father of theyr Hues. In the meane-while the Element was ouer-hung with prodigies. GOD thought it 35
not enough to haue threatend them by his Sonne, but he

emblazond the ayre with the tokens of his terror. No Starre that appeared but seemd to sparkle fire. The Sunne did shyne all day as it is wont at his Euening going downe. The Moone had her pale-siluer face iron spotted
5 with freckle-imitating blood-sprincklings; and for her dimme frostie circle, a blacke inckie hood embayling her bright head.

Ouer the Temple (at the solemne feast of the Passeouer) was seene a Commet most coruscant, streamed & tayled forth with glistering naked swords, which in his mouth (as
10 a man in his hand) all at once he made semblance as if hee shaked and vambrasht. Seauen dayes it continued; all which time the Temple was as cleare & light in the night as it had beene noone day. In the *Sanctum sanctorum* was hearde clashing and hewing of Armour. Whole flockes
15 of Rauens (with a fearefull croking cry) beate, fluttred, and clasht against the windowes. A hideous dismal Owle (exceeding all her kind | in deformity and quantity) in G 3^v the Temple-porche built her nest. From vnder the Altar there issued penetrating plangorous-howlings and gastlie
20 dead-mens grones. A goodly young Heyfer, hald thither for a burnt offering, beeing knockt downe & ready to be drest, miraculously calued a Lambe.

The sacrificing knyues that diu'd into her entrayles wold afterwards by no meanes be clenched, but from her blood
25 (as from mans bloode) tooke vnto them an vnremouable rust. In the feast of Weekes, in the inner receipt of the Temple, was hearde one stately stalking vp and downe, and exclayming with a terrible base hollow voyce, *Migremus hinc) Migremus hinc, e Templo emigremus*: Let vs goe
30 hence, Let vs goe hence, out of thys Temple let vs hie vs. What should I ouer-blacke mine Incke, perplexe pale Paper, rumatize my Readers eyes, with the sadde tedious recitall of all the prognosticating signes of theyr ruine? Stories haue lost and tyred themselues in thys story. Should
35 I but make an Index to anie one Wryter of them, it woulde aske a Booke alone. Some fewe abreuiated alledgments

I will content my selfe with, and so passe onwarde to more necessary matter.

Above and besides the propheticall apparitions, in, ouer, and about the Temple, in the Cittie there happened no lesse note-worthy predictions. The East-gate therof, which was 5 all yron, and neuer wont to be opend vnder twenty men together, (the dry rusty creeking of whose hookes and gymmes as it was in the opening, might be heard a myle of,) now of the owne accorde burst wide ope, and beeing ope, was twice more harde then before to be shut. A base 10 mechanicall fellow there was, sprung out of the mudde of G 4 the Communalty, who for foure | yeeres together before the warres begunne, went crying vp and downe, *Woe to Jerusalem and the Sanctuarie thereof, woe to euery lining thing that breatheth therin.* The warres once entred, he gotte 15 him on the walls, and often reiterating hys stale-worne note, added thereunto, *Woe, and thrise woe to my selfe,* and with that, start a stone out of an Engine in the Campe and stopt his throate. Manie monstrous byrthes at thys instant were brought foorth: in diuers places of the Cittie sprung 20 vp founts of bloode. The Element euery night was embattailed with Armed men, skyrmishing and conflicting amongst themselues; and the imperiall Eagles of Rome were plainly there displayed to all mens sight. A burning sword also was sette foorth, visibly bent against the Cittie. 35 The strangest and horriblest tempests of thunder and lightning had they that euer was heard of.

The Earth left to be so fruitfull as it wont. No season but it exceeded hys stinted temprature. Euery thing rebelled against kind, as thinking scorne to accommodate 30 themselues to theyr vses, that had so rebelled against the Lord. For all thys, there was no man that would *gather* hymselfe, no man that would depart from the ill worke he had in hand. *Ambulabant vtcseci quia Domino peccauerunt.* Theyr eyes were ouer-filmed or blinded, because they 35 obeyed not theyr Maker.

NOW is the tyme that all Riuers must runne into the Sea, that whatsoever I haue in witte or eloquence must bee drayned to the delineament of wretchednesse.

The Romaines, like a droue of Wild-Bores, roote vp and 5 forrage fruitful *Palestine*. That which was called the *Holy Land* is now vnhalloved with theyr Heathen j swords. G 4^v
Wherefore you Pilgrims, that spende the one halfe of your dayes in visiting the *Land of Promise*, and weare the plants of your feete to the Hkenesse of withered rootes, by bare- 10 legd processioning (from a farre) to the Sepulcher, vngainefully you consume good houres, for no longer was *hide a* a Lande of Promise, then her Temple stode. *Vespasians* inuasion hath prophaned it: a Mount of deade-bodies ouer that Sepulcher is raysed which you perigrinate to adore; 15 That Sepulcher you see, is but a thing built vp by Saracens to get mony with, and beguile votiuie Christians. They delude your superstition, and make it theyr tributary slaue.

No Hogstie is now so pollutionate as the earth of *Palestine* and *Ierusalem*. Our Sauours steppes are quite vnsanctified 20 in them, and troden out of sente, by the irruptiuie ouertrampling of the Romans. A newe storie of flesh-manured earth haue they cast vpon it, and made it no more the walke of Saints and Prophets, but a poysonous nurcery of Beastes of pray and Serpents.

25 O GOD, enlarge myne inuention and my memorie, sincerely and feelingly to rehearse the disornamenting of thys mother of Citties.

Vnderstand that before the arriuall of *Vespasian*, there were in *Ierusalem* three factions. *Eleazers*, which was the 30 fundamentiue and first, *lehochanans* next, and *Schimeons* the last. *Eleazer* and *lehochanan*, the vngodliest that euer God made, *Schimeon* except (and hee might well haue bene Schoole-maister to *Cayne* or *Iudas*, hee was such a grand *Keysar* of cut-throates). From the noblest of the lewes 35 discended, but hys nobilitie, ere he came to it, by hys degenerate conditions he forfeyled. A man hee was that
23 nncery 93, 94. 34 cutthroates 93, 94.)] after 'Iudas, in I. 33. Q.

made a mockery of all Lawes and Religion, and any thii
 H i which Authority forbad most greedily would | embrao
 thinking, as the best Pastures are hedgd in, the be
 Orchards wald about, the best Mettals hutcht vppe, so the
 was nothing excellent but was forbidden, and whatsoever
 was forbidden was excellent. For malice or hatred]
 would not stabbe or murder men so much, as against]
 had iust occasion to stab or murder, to keep his hand
 vre. He held it as lawful for hym (since al labouring
 a mans vocation is but getting) to gette wealth as wel wi
 his sword by the High-way side, as the Laborer with /
 Spade or Mattocke, when all are but yron ; besides, as the
 is none hath any wealth which he getteth not from another
 so deem'd he it as free for him as another, to gette fro
 other men ; concluding, as there is no better tytle to
 Kingdome then conquest, so there is no better clayme vn
 wealth then by the conquest of a strong hand to compas
 it. Adultery, fornication, drunkennesse, no sinne but h
 would defende and offende in.

For the multitude of these and other his abhominatioi
 banisht he was, and longer in *Ierusalem* might hee n
 roust: wherefore no possibility hld hee to preuent beggei
 or redeeme hys estate, but by proclaiming (in all plac
 where he came) the trade he profest. The tenure of \
 Proclamation was thys. That if there were any that h;
 dudgen-olde coughing miserly Fathers they could n
 endure: If there were any that had repining victua
 scanting Maisters, tyrannizing neuerthelesse for their wor'
 If there were any that were Creditor-crazd, and deade ai
 buried in debt, and knewe not which way to rise out of
 let them repayre to him, and tyll Doomes-day they shou
 haue a protection. Yea, if there were euer a good fellec
 that lou'd a Harlot as hys lyfe, woulde haue Letters-paten
 H i to take purses, had a | desire to kyl and not be hang
 would sweare and forswear for single-mony, and had not
 much as a crum of conscience to put in his pottage, let hi

or them what ere resort vnder his standard, and theyr humors should be maintained.

Twenty thousand of these dreggy lees of Libertines hiu'd vnto him in a moment, whom hee cleped the *Flower of Chiualry*; for they feard no man, and cared neither for God nor the diuel. With them hee burnt the greene Corne in the fieldes, pluckt downe Barnes and Store-houses, stubd vp Orchards and Vineyardes, and made desolate hauock where euer he came.

10 To *Jerusalem* (after much slaughter and spoyle) with thys his Outlaw-Army hee reacht, and there enter-leagued himselfe with *Eleazar* and *lehochanan*. The first thing after theyr ioyning they did, was the displacing of the *Sanhadrin*, which were the Judges & threescore and tenne
15 Elders, and sharing the gouernment equally amongst them. Then the Sacrifice they silenced, put the High-Priest to death, and conuerted the Temple to an Armory. Long could they not agree, but as empery admitteth no mateshyppes, so dyd they enuie one another, made heads against
20 one another, mutually skyrmisht with one another. Their enemies were without, but within lurkt the plague that went thorow-stitch.

Twenty thousand in one day the internal ciuil sword eate vp. The Edomites, let in by *lehochanan*, of the wel-
25 thiest Cittizens slew eyght thousand and fiue hundred in one night. Heere begins the *desolation* Christ prophecied, within and without vengeance bestirreth her; within it raged most, for within sinne rained most. Let me suddenly waxe olde, and woe-wrinkle my cheekes before theyr
30 tyme, by describing the deplored effectes | of theyr sinnes H 2 within. First, for the *desolation* of theyr ceremoniall Religion, some-thing I haue sayd alreadie, but the summe of all was this, that if any Priest approcht nere the Altar, the bloode of him and his offring was blended together. The
35 reuerent Ephods were made the slaughter-mens Aprons: many venerable Leuites they bound to the Altar by the

36 Leuites] *Saintes Gro.*

hayre of theyr beardes. The Vessels of the House of the Lorde they put to vile vses. Not any consecrated thing but they arrested and made booty of. Young chyldren whom they Mothers ledde in theyr hands along with them to the Temple to offer, (inhumaine to be tolde) they tooke 5 and mercillesse cast into the sacrificatory flame, and on the same Altar (after they were consumed) most sacriligiously rauisht theyr Mothers. Some men (whom they could not otherwise draw into theyr daunger) they would inuite to treaty in the Temple, saying: There is the Tabernacle of 10 the Lord, there is the Arke of his presence, there if we shold drawe our blades, it were abhomination vnremissible. Why distrust you vs? suppose you vs to bee without GOD? carry wee not the couenaunt of our Father *Abraham* in our loynes as well as you? By him that oweth thys Temple 15 we sweare, and all the mysticall riches thereof, you shall depart thence vnmolested. Who so on theyr othes or theyr words affianst them, were sure to washe the pauement with the best iuyce of their breastes.

Not onely those that came to offer, but those that but 20 offred to kneele in the Temple, they ran through. The Marble flore of it they made so slippery with theyr vnre-spited, and not so much as Saboth-ceased blood-shed, and bowel-clinging fatte of them that were slaine, that a man H 2^v might better swimme then walke on it. The place | without 35 the City where they carryed theyr dung, and buried the entrailles of Beastes, halfe so pestilently stunck not, as that stuncke with dunghils of dead-bodies. The entry of the Court of the Lorde was changed to a standing Lake of blood. The siluer gates of the Temple no more were gates 30 for deuoute worshippers to enter at, but slimie flood-gates for thicke iellied gore to sluce out by. Who hath scene a Vaulte vnder a Church full of dust-died sculs and rustic dead mens bones, might (after that grosse streame of gore a little was turnd aside, & the bloode dried vp) rightly 35 allude the Temple there-vnto; for nowe it was no more a
16 the] om. 13. 31 enter in at 13.

prayer-prospering House, but a pudlie Vault of dead-mens bones and cast-out bodies kneaded to durte. Her Alabaster walls were all furred & fome-painted with the bespraying of mens braines donge out against them. Her hie rooffe
 5 was mingle-colourd with mounting drops of blood, that seemd, by soking into it, to seek for passage to heauen.

The siedge growing hote, the seditious harts somewhat quailed, and then they made shew as they would correct themselues, as they would renounce theyr tumultuous
 10 tyrannies, And wheras, lately before, they had depriued the High-priest both of life and office, nowe (dissemblingly remorse) they would needs, in all haste, in hys roome sette vp another, and by lots he shoulde be chosen. The lotte fell vpon a Plow-man or Carter, one *Pani* the sonne of
 15 *Peniel*, and hee (notwithstanding hys ignorant basenes and base rudenes), as in a mockery, was instald in that dignity.

It is not my intent to runne a right out race through all the accidents of theyr reprobation: onely that which I lay downe is to shewe howe vnfallibly Christs wordes
 ao were fulfilled, as touching theyr tenne-times merited | desolation. Judge all those that haue sence of misery, ere H 3 they haue occasion to vse it in discerning their own miseries, whether thys were not desolation or no. The Lord at one time visited their Citty with these foure capitall plagues,
 35 Fyre, Famine, Pestilence, and the Sword. First for fire, thus he visited it : There were a thousand & foure-hundred Store-houses, filled vp to the toppe with victuall, Corne, Wine, and Oyle, sufficient to maintaine two hundred thousand men for twenty yeeres, al which by the Seditious was
 30 sette on fire, and consumed in one day. Diuers gorgeous buildings they enflamed, to smoke out theyr rich owners, & many goodly streets endlongs to the very earth they encindred, for nothing but to haue more roome to bicker in.

Euery corner of *Jerusalem* had a voyce hearde in it as
 35 in *Ramah*, of weeping, mourning, & great lamentation. Scarce could one friende in commoning heere another, for

a cast out *Q*. 34 these] those 13. 36 communing *Gro*.

the howling, wringing of hands, sobbing, & yelling of men women, & chyldren. Heere lay they halfe dead, bayting and bathing in theyr wounds, and roaring and eare-renting exclayming for some melting-harted man to come and rydde them out of theyr lingring-lyuing death, and slay them out-right The sons, daughters, and seruaunts of the Elders thus vniustly massacred, went crying vp and downe the Citty like madde men, with eyes and hands to heauen extended, *lustice, Lorde, lustice, Lorde, iustice against the*¹⁰ *vniust depriuers of our friendes and maintainers.*

This was the Seditious order, that if there were anie man noted to be of more wealth then other, hym they pickt a quarrell against, and accused of treason to theyr Sanctuarie and sending Letters to the Romaines. False witnesses they H 3^V had in pay a Campe royal. *Sc/iimeon* wold | not see them vnprouided in that case. Not onely he that mourned, but hee that did not seeme to reioyce at the martyrdom of those iust men, was dismiss the same way. Not a few (in theyr mindes benumbed with the massacrous monstrous nesse of thys quick Marshall-law) made themselues graues and went into them aliuie. The channell of *lordan* was so ouer-burdened and charged wyth dead carkasses, that the waters contended to wash theyr hands of them, and lightly leapt ouer theyr banckes, as shunning to mixe themselues with so many millions of murders: but after many dayes²⁵ abstinence from theyr proper entercourse, (obseruing they must liueforeuer banisht from theyr bounds, exceptt they made some riddance of them,) they recollected theyr liquid forces and, putting all theyr wayy shoulders together, bare the whole shole of them before them, as farre as the Sea of *Sodom*³⁰

Had there beene at that time a Red-sea newe to bee created, the blood (that, lyke a Ryuer from a Mountaine foote, flowed forth of *lerusalem*) woulde haue made it rich in surges, and sufficient to wracke many Shyppes. Euen as *Jordan*, so the Brooke *Cedron*, and the waters of *Schiloim*³⁵ in lyke sorte were choked. As dead Cattes and dogges into Buts of Sack and Muscadine are throwne (for theyr

firie strength to feede on), so into Wells and Cesterns were dead corses (innumerable) throwne, for theyr blacke waters to feed on.

From the furie of the Sword let me discend to Famine
5 and the Pestilence, the two latter plagues of *Jerusalem*.

In gyuing them sutable phrase, had I the commaund of a thousand singular wits, I should banqroute them all in description. Plucke vppe a good courage, mine infant pen, and wearily struggle (as well as thou maist) thorow | thys H 4
10 huge word-dearthing taske.

The Store-houses burnt, the siege harde plyed, the waste of victuals great, the husbanding of them none at all, there fell such an infestuous vnsaciabie famine amongst them, that if all the stoness of *Jerusalem* had been bread, and they
15 should haue tyred on them, yet woulde they haue bene behind hand with their appetite. Their watry wesands were like to leape out of theyr mouthes for meate, and in theyr crawling vp to seeke passage, readie to haue bene seazd on by their iawes for sustenance. Like an ouer-
20 hanging Rocke eaten in with the tyde, or Death that is nere picturd but with an vpper chap only, so did theyr propendant breast-bones imminent-ouercanopy theyr bellies.

So many men as were in *Jerusalem*, so many pale raw-bone ghosts you woulde haue thought you had seene. Euen
25 through theyr garments they rake-leane rybbes appeared. Their sharpe embossed ankle-bones turnd vppe the earth like a Plowshare, when in going theyr feete swarued. The emptie ayre they woulde catch at in steade of meate, lyke as a Spaniell catcheth at a flie; the very dust they gnasht
30 at as it flew, and their owne armes & theyr legges they hardly for-bare. Theyr teeth they would grinde one against another to a white powder like meale. The durty mosse on the pentisses of theyr houses they gnawde of most greedily. Not a weede sprung vp, but (ere it aspired
35 halfe to his growth) by them it was weeded and rauenously rauncht vp. All the bushes and boughes, within or rounde

about *Jerusalem*, were hewd downe and feld, for men (like brute beastes) to brouze on.

Within twelue myle compasse of the Cittie, where there
 H 4^y were wont to be the most Elizianlike gardens and | flower-
 guilded fieldes vnder heauen, what for the Romans and them, 5
 was there not now left a croppe of anie Gourde or greene
 thing. The Seditious and the souldiours would come run-
 ning into the Cittizens houses, & taking them by the bosoms,
 cry aloude, Gyue vs meate, Gyue vs meate, by the Lord we
 will haue meate: robbe, steale, runne into the Tents of our 10
 enemies for meat for vs, or wee will make meate of you and
 your chyl dren. Mens Cellers and Garrets for meate they
 searcht. If there were but the bloode of any thing spylt on
 the grounde, like hungry dogs they woulde lick it vppe. Rats,
 Mise, Weasels, Scorpions, were no common mens iunckets. 15

In the beginning of thys scarcity, had any but a dish full
 of Corne left to send to the Mill, they were afrayd to send
 it, for feare they should sette all *Ierusalem* together by the
 eares for it. Wherefore in theyr low vnder-earth Vaultes
 they digd lower Caues, which couering with bordes and 20
 formally pauing ouer, there they ate theyr Corne vngrounde
 (closely), because they would not be circumvented.

Exceeding rich *Magnificos* stole victuall one from an-
 other, and would lye in waite a whole weeke together to
 intercept but a chypping. The Father stole from the Sonne, 25
 and oftentimes tore the meate out of his mouth ; the Sonne
 could scarce refraine from byting out his Fathers throate-
 boule, when he saw him swallow downe a bitte that he
 dyde for. The Mother lurcht from them both; her young
 weaned Children (famisht for want of nourishment) fastned 30
 theyr sharpe edged gums on her fingers, and would not let
 them goe till shee pluckt the morsell out of her owne mawe
 to put into theyrs. Hee that then had had a Kingdom
 would haue gyuen it for a crust of breade. |

Not a Butterflie, Grashopper, Worme, Neuette, or 35
 Cancker, but was persecuted and sought out to satis-fie
 emptines. You should haue scene a hundred together,

fighting and scrambling about a dead Horse. Sometimes they would send their chylidren farre out of the Cittie, to gather rootes and herbes, thinking that the Remains carried more honourable mindes then to execute their vtmost on
 5 them : but all was one, for they spared neither young nor olde. Many Noble-men eate the Leather of theyr Chariots as they ridde. *Miriam*, a Matron of great port, and of a high lynage discended, (hauing her receipt of disgestion almost closed vp with fasting,) after shee had sustained her
 10 lyfe a large space by scraping in chaffe and muck-hils for beastes dung, and, that meanes forsaking her, she had no other refuge of festerment, she was constrained (for her Hues supportance), hauing but one onely sonne, to kill him and rost him.

15 Mothers of LONDON, (each one of you to your selues) doe but imagine that you were *Miriam*, wyth what hart (suppose you) could ye go about the cooquerie of your own chylidren? Not hate, but hunger, taught *Miriam* to forgette mother-hood. To this purport conceite her dis-
 20 coursing with herselfe.

It is better to make a Sepulcher for him in mine owne body, then leaue him to be lickt vp by ouer-goers feete in' the streete. The wrath of GOD is kindled in euery' corner of the Citty; Famine hath sworne to leaue no'
 25 breathing thing in her walls; without the walls the Sworde' more vsurpeth then Famine. Our enemies are merciless,' for wee haue no eyes to see our owne miserie. Not they ' alone besiege vs, but our sinnes also. Fyre and Famine' afflict vs. We haue where-withal to feede Fyre and'
 30 Famine, but not wher-with to feed our selues | and our'li chylidren. My sonne, my sonne, I cannot relieue thee;' I haue Gold and Siluer to giue thee, but not a paring of any repast to preserue thee. My sonne, my son, why ' should I not kill Famine by killing thee, ere Famine, in'
 35 excruciating thee, kill mee? O my deere Babe, had I in ' euery limbe of mee a seuerall life, so many lyues as I haue '

'lymbes to Death wold I resigne, to saue thine one life.
 'Saue thee I may not, though I should giue my soule for
 'thee. The greatest debt I haue bounde thee to mee with,
 'is by bearing thee in my wombe: He bind thee to me
 'again, in my wombe He beare thee againe, and there bury 5
 'thee ere Famine shall confounde thee. I will vnswathe thy
 'breast with my sharpe knyfe, and breake ope the bone-
 'walled pryson where thy poore hart is lockt vp to be
 'pyned; Those Chaynes and Mannacles of corruptiue bowels
 '(where-with thy soule is now fettered) will I free it from. 10
 'I will lende Death a false key to enter into the closet of
 'thy breast.

' Euen as amongst the *Indians* there is a certaine people,
 'that when any of their Kins-folkes are sicke, saue charges
 'of phisicke, and rather resolute (vnaturally) to eate them '5
 'vppe, then day-diuersifying Agues or blood-boyling
 'surfets should fit-meale feede on them ; so do I resolute,
 'rather to eate thee vp, my sonne, and feed on thy flesh
 'royallie, then inward emperishing Famine shoulde too
 'vntimely inage thee. Woulde God, as the men of *Ephraim* 20
 'were not able distinctly to pronounce *Shibboleth*, so I could
 'not distinctly pronounce this sweet name of *My sonne*: it
 'is too sweet a name to come in slaughters mouth. Though
 'David sung of mercy and Judgement together, yet cannot
 'I sing of cruelty and compassion together; remember 25
 'I am a Mother, and play the murtheresse, both at once.
 12 'O, therefore in my words doe I striue | to be tyrannous,
 'that I may bee the better able to enact with my hands.
 'Sildome or neuer is there any that doth ill, but speakes ill
 'first. The tongue is the encouraging Captaine, that (with 30
 'daunger-glorifying perswasion) animates al the other cor-
 'poreall parts to be ventrous. He is the ludge that doomes
 '& determines ; the rest of our faculties and powers are but
 'the secular executioners of his sentence. Be prest, myne
 'hands, (as layle-garding officers) to see executed whatsoever 35
 'your superior tong-slaying ludge shall decree. Embrawne
 'your soft-skind enclosure with Adamantine dust, that it

' tender-starued Mother to kill and eate her onely sonne.
 ' And yet his owne onely chyld, *Christ Iesus*, (as deere to
 ' him as thou to mee, my sonne) he sent into the World to
 ' be crucified.

' O sorrowe-conceiuing Mothers, looke to haue all your 5
 ' children crucified, to haue none of them remitted, since our
 ' Husbands haue beene so hardy to lay harmfull hands on
 ' the Lord of lyfe. Can GOD be more grieffe-yeelding with
 ' the losse and life-famishing of our innocent chyldren, then
 ' he was at the giuing vp of his owne onely Sonne? That ¹⁰
 ' one deadly deede hath obdurated him, and made him a
 ' hard God to all Mothers. Famine, the Lord hath sent
 ' thee to heape a seconde curse vppon Mothers. Neuer
 ' shall it be sayd thou tookst from mee my Sonne, his fathers
 ' Fauchion shall sende him to sleepe with his Fathers. 15
 ' Neither shall his death be recorded as my crime in Heauens
 ' Iudgement-booke, when I but onely ridde him (that is as
 ' good as dead alreadie) out of the tedious payne of dying. |

I 3 ' I haue no meate, my sonne, to bring thee vp with. I
 ' haue no eares to giue idle passage to the playnts of thy 20
 ' pyning. The enemies without and within shall diuide thy
 ' bloods-guilt betwixt them. Amongst the rablement shalt
 ' thou not miscarrie: lie beare thee in my bosome to
 ' Paradise. Thy tombe shall be my stomack, with thy flesh
 ' will I feast mee. This shall be all the chyldes trybute I 35,
 ' will require of thee, for the sixe yeeres lyfe I haue
 ' gyuen thee, to cherrish mee but sixe dayes, and rather
 ' then Famine should consume mee, to consume thy selfe
 ' in my sustenance. The fore-skinne of originall sinne
 ' shalt thou cleane circumcise, by this one act of piety. 30
 ' Returne into me, and see the Mould wherein thou wert
 ' cast. As much payne in thy conception endured I for
 ' thee, as I will put thee to in thy departure. By nature
 ' we all desire to returne to the soile from whence we came :
 ' wert thou of age to pleade thine owne desires, I know they 35
 ; would be accordant with mine. I am thy Mother and
 ' must desire for thee: I loue thee more then thou canst

thy selfe; therefore cannot my desires endamage thee.'
 Into the Garden of *Eden* I will leade thee; but one
 gappe broke ope, thy entrance is made. More shalt thou
 terrifieth the Seditious by the constraintment of thy quarter-
 5 ing, then if *lehouah* out of a clowde should speake to them. '

'Tis not thou, but I, shall be counted opprobrius. Loe,'
 there goes the woman, shall they say, that hath slyced &
 eaten her owne sonne. I am content to vndergoe any'
 10 I haue flattered thee, looke for no direction from myne
 eyes: for though with my hands I out-rage, with mine'
 eyes I cannot. Myne eyes are womanish, my hands are '
 manly. Myne eyes will shed teares in steade of shedding'
 blood: they will regard pittifull lookes, the whyte | skin, ' I 3
 15 the comlie proportion, the tender youth, the quiet lying⁴
 like a Lambe; my hand beholdeth none of these: and yet '
 it is my right hand, which should doe euery one right,^c
 much more mine owne childe. Right will I doe thee (noble'
 infant) in righting thee from the wrongs of Famine. Nere '
 20 shall the Romains haue thee for theyr Warde. Thus, thus'
 (like blind-fold Fortune) I right thee, myne eyes being vailed.'

At one stroke (euen as these words were in speaking) she
 beheaded him, and when she had done, turning the Apron
 from of her own face on his, that the sight might not
 25 afreshly distemper her, without seeing, speaking, deliberat-
 ing, or almost thinking any more of him, she sod, rost, and
 powdred him; and hauing eaten as much as suffised, sette
 vp the rest.

The Seditious smelling the sauour of a feast (which at
 30 that time was no ordinary matter in *Ierusalem*), roughlie (in
 heapes) rusht & burst into the house, saying: wicked woman,
 thou hast meate, and traiterously concealest it from vs:
 we'le teare thee in peeces if thou settes not part of it before vs.

With some few words of excuse, before them what she
 35 had she brought, entertayning them in these or like termes.

Eate, I pray you, heere is good meate, be not afraid, it is'

' flesh of my flesh, I bare it, I nurst it, I suckled it. Loe,
 ' heere is the head, the handes, and the feete. It was myne
 ' owne onely sonne, I tell you. Sweet was he to mee in his
 ' life, but neuer so sweet as in his death. Beholde his pale
 ' perboyld visage, how pretie-pitteous it lookes. His pure 5
 ' snow-moulded soft fleshe will melt of it selfe in your
 ' mouthes: who can abstaine from these two round teat-like
 ' cheeks? Be not dainty to cut them vp; the rest of his |
 14 ' body haue I cutte vp to your hands.
 ' Crauens, cowards, recreants, sitte you mute & amazed? 10
 ' Neuer entred you into consideration of your crueltie before?
 ' It is you that haue robd me of all my food, & so conse-
 ' quently robd me of my onely son. Vengeance on your
 ' soules and all the discending generations of the seede of
 ' your Trybes, for thus mirrouring mee for the Monarch- 15
 ' monster of Mothers. No Chronicle that shal write of
 ' *Ieruselems* last captiuitie, but shall write of mee also. Not
 ' any shal talke of Gods iudgement on this Cittie, but, for
 ' the cardinall iudgement against it, shall recite myne enforce-
 ' ment to eate mine owne chyld. I am a woman, and haue kild a0
 ' him and eate of him. My womanish stomack hath serued
 ' me to that which your man-like stomacks are dastarded
 ' with. What I haue doone, you haue driuen me to doe:
 ' what you haue driuen me to do, nowbeeing doone you are
 ' daunted with. Eate of my sonne one morsel yet, that it 25
 ' may memorize against you, ye are accessory to his dis-
 ' membring. Let that morsell be his hart if you will, that
 ' the greater may be your conuictment.
 ' Men of warre you are, who make no conscience of tear-
 ' ing out any mans hart for a morsell of bread. Most valiant 30
 ' Captaines, why for-bear you? is not heere your owne diet,
 ' humane blood? Heere is my sonnes breast, peirce it once
 ' againe, for once you haue peirst it with Famine. Are not
 ' you they that spoyled my house, and left me no kind of
 ' cherishment for me & my sonne? Feede on that you haue 35
 ' slaine, & spare not O my sonne, O myne onely sonne, these
 ' Sedicious are the deuils that directed the sword against

thy throate. They, with their armed hands, haue crammed
 thy flesh into my pallate. Now poyson them with thy'
 flesh, for it is they that haue | supplanted thee. Renowned' 14
 is thyne end, for in *Jerusalem* is none hath resisted Famine
 5 but thou. Me thou hast fedde, thy selfe thou hast freed.'
 Tis thou onely that at the latter day shalt condemne these'
 Seditious. Excuse mee, that onely what I could not chuse
 committed. I did all for the best. The best remedy of'
 thyne vnretrieuable peruerse destiny was death: therefore'
 10 I deuour'd thee, that foules of the ayre might not rent thee
 For sauce to thy flesh haue I infused my teares: who so
 dippeth in them shall taste of my sorrow. c

The Rebels hearing this, were wholly metamorphizd into
 mellancholie; yea, the Chiefe-taines of them were ouer-
 15 clouded in conceite. Was neuer till this euer heard from
Adam that a woman eate her owne Childe. Was neuer such
 a *desolation* as the *desolation* of *Jerusalem*.

As touching the Pestilence, some short peroration is now
 to succede. Of it there dyed more then a hundred thousand
 20 during the time of the siege. Out of the least gate of
Jerusalem (which was that towards the Brooke *Cedron*)
 were carried foorth to buriall a hundred fyfteene thousand,
 a hundred and eyght persons; all which were of the Nobles,
 Gentlemen, and substantiallest men of the lewes. Many
 25 fledde to *Titus*, who when they came to meate, coulde eate
 none of it, but died with the very sight thereof. Of those
 that fledde, a great number swallowed vp theyr Gold and
 their Jewels, which (beeing cleerely escaped) they sought
 amongst theyr excrements. But when by the *Aramites* and
 30 *Arabians* (*Titus* mercenary souldiers) it was perceiued, they
 slewe them out-right, and ript theyr bowels for theyr golde,
 and so left them to the Eagles and Rauens. Two thousand
 by thys couetise slept theyr last. The Princes of the lewes |
 (which *Titus* as submissioners and succoursuers had receiued K i
 35 to mercy) he straightly examined on theyr allegiance and
 fidelity, how many were dead in the Cittie since he first

beleagured it; & the number was giuen vp, (namely of such as were carried forth at all gates to bee buried, & were slaine in battaile,) seauen hundred thousand, fiue hundred, seauenty & fiue, besides many thousands that in the streetes and Temple lay vnburied, and were cast downe into the 5 Brooke *Cedron*. The whole bil (when the siege was concluded) came to eleuen hundred thousande, all which in foureteene monthes misfortuned.

Sixteene thousande *Tittis* ledde prysoners to Rome (those omitted which vnder *Eleazers* conduct perished). The 10 *Sanctum sanctoruin* was sette on fire, and the Priestes therein smothered. All the antique buildings were burnt and beaten downe. Of *Dauid*, *Salomon*, or the olde Kings of Israeli, was there no Trophy remayning, no stone but discituate. *Jerusalem* was left, not as *Jerusalem* but a naked plot '5 of ground; And as it was said of *Priams* Towne, *lam seges est, vbi Troiafuit*, nowe is that a Corne-fielde, that was erst called *Troy*; so that is now a Mount of stones, that in yeeres past was intituled *Jerusalem*.

O *Jerusalem, Jerusalem*, what shall I say to thee more but ao Christ fore-told *thy house shoulde be left desolate vnto thee*, and loe, as he fore-told it is falne out?

Of all thy gates that were plated ouer with siluer, is there not so much as one nayle remayning. Thy streets were paved with Marble, and thy houses ietted out with 35 laphy and Cedar; that pauement, those houses, thy habitation (like dust engrauen Letters) is quite abraded and plowed K^{lv} vppe. Thyne enemies on thy Sanctuary tooke compassion (beholding the glory of it), thou took'st none. *Titus* (an Infidell) vnderstanding the multitude of thy prophana- 30 tions and contumacies, was afraid (hauing entred thee) to stay in thee, saying: *Let vs hence, least theyr sinnes destroy vs*. Nothing thou fearedst: in olde-Wiues fables thou believedst: with Th'almudisticall dreames (that thy Temple after her destruction shoulde be built vp in a day) thy selfe 35 thou deludest. And wheras thou hadst a Prophecie that thy Sanctuary should not be prostituted til out of thy

quarters sprung a Monarche of the whole Earth, thou wert blinded, & wantedst the sence in *Vespasian* to picke out his expletement. For hee, comming into *Iudea* but as a subiected Generall to the Romaine Empire, by his own 5 souldiers (against his wil) was there consecrated Emperour: and so out of thy dominions or quarters departed he, leauing his sonne *Titus* behind him to sack thee.

See with howe many deceits thou art circumvented, for calling Christ a circumuenter and deceiuer. For *stoning* Math. 27. 25- 10 *him and his Prophets*, and vsing such great iniustice to *S. Iames* (his cosin according to the flesh), *Iosephus* & *Eusebius* agree al those plagues were laid vpon thee. But to the imprecation ascribe I it rather, where-with, when *Pilate* washed his handes, thou cursedst thy selfe, saying: *His is blood be vpon vs and our chyl dren*. In humane policie another cause I conjecture. Thou lets *Eleazar*, a priuate man, take the sword of thy freedome into his hands vnauthorized; Thou sufferedst him (vnpunished) to resist the Romaine Prouinciall *Florus*. Ill didst thou therein, for in 20 gouernment (though it be to resist publique violence) it is not safe to suffer a priuate man to vnder-take Armes as generall. The reasons heereafter I wil open in some other dyscourse treating wholly of those matters. |

The chiefe reason of thy confusion was the ripenes of thy K a 25 sinnes, which were seeded for want of Gods putting his side into them. *Jerusalem*, if I were to describe Hell, some part of thy *desolations* description woulde I borrow, to make it more horrosome. Eleuen hundred thousand, for these few words *but thou wouldst not*, most wretchedly lost theyr Hues. 30 If but one lyne (*thy house shall be left desolate vnto thee*) included all this, what doth the whole Scripture include? Not a peece of a lyne in it that talkes of the Lake of fire and Brimstone, but by a hundred thousand parts more imported). It is a quiuer of short Arrowes, which neuer 35 shewe theyr length till they be full shotte out, a ball of Wild-fire round wrapt vp together, which burneth not but

cast fourth, a close winded clue, conducting those that deale vnadusedlie with it, into the Minotaurs Laborinth of payne euerlasting.

I would wish no man to be too milde in expounding it. It hath more edges to smyte with then it shewes. It is 5 not selie in operation, though it be simple in apparance. *Ierusalem*, not all thy seauenty *Esdrean* Cabalizers, who traditionately from *Moyses* receiued the Lawes interpretation, could euer rightly teach thee to diuine of the crucified *Messias*. The Scripture thou madest a too-to compoude 10 Cabalisticall substaunce of, by canonizing such a multifarious Genealogie of Comments.

HEtherto stretcheth the prosecution of thy *desolation*. Now to *London* must I turne me, *London* that turneth from none of thy left-hand impieties. As great 15 a *desolation* as *Ierusalem*, hath *London* deserued. Whatsoeuer of *Ierusalem* I haue written, was but to lend her a K 2^v Looking-glasse. Now enter I into my true | Teares, my Teares for *London*, wherein I craue pardon though I deale more searchingly then common Soule-Surgions accustome ; 30 for in this Booke, wholly haue I bequeathed my penne and my spyrite to the prosternating and enforrowing the frontiers of sinne. So let it be acceptable to God and his Church what I write, as no man in thys Treatise I will particularly tutch, none I will semouedly allude to, but onely attaint 25 vice in generall.

Pride shall be my principall ayme, which in *London* hath platformed another Sky-vndersetting Tower of *Babell*. *Iona-*
 i.Kin. *than* shotte fiue Arrowes beyond the marke; I feare I shall
 19, 22 shoote fifteene Arrowes behind the mark, in describing thys 30 hie-towring sinne.

O Pryde, of all Heauen-relapsing premunires the most fearefull; thou that ere this hast disparradiz'd our first Parent *Adam*, and vnrightuouzd the very Angels, how shall I arme myne elocution, to breake through the rankes of thy 35

hily stumbling blocks. After the destruction of *Antwerpe*, thou (beeing thrust out of house and home, and not knowing whither to betake thee) at hap hazard embarkedst for *England*. Where hearing riche *London* was the full-streamed
 5 wel-head, vnto it thou hastedst, & there hast dwelt many yeeres, begetting Sonnes and Daughters. Thy sonnes names are these, Ambition, Vaine-glory, Atheisme, Discontent, Contention. Thy Daughters, Disdaine, Gorgeous-attyre, and Delicacie. O had *Antwerpe* stil florished, that
 10 thou hadst nere come hether to mis-fashion vs, or that there were any Cittie would take thy Chyldren to halfes with vs!

Thy first Sonne, Ambition, is waxt a great Courtier, and maketh him wings of his long Furies hayre, to flye vp to Heauen with: hee hath a throne rayсед vp vnder | his K 3
 15 heeles in euery startup he treads on. Hys backe bandieth colours with the Sunne. The ground he thinketh extremely honoured and beholding to hym, if he blesse it but with one humble looke; Nothing he talks on but kentalls of Pearle, the conquering of *India*, and fishing for
 20 ao Kingdomes. Fame hee makes his God, and mens mouthes the limits of hys conscience. So many greater as there are then himselfe, so many grieues he hath. The deuill may commaunde all hys hart and soule, if hee will ryddehym but of one riuall. He that but crosseth hym in the course of his
 35 ascention, eyther kylleth hym outright (if he be aboue hys reach), or is sure (kill hee not first) in the end to be kyld by him.

Poore men he lookes shold part with all their goods to haue him but take knowledge of them; He seekes to gette
 30 hym a maiestie in his frowne, and doe some thing to seeme terrible to the multitude. Euen curtesie and humility he peruerteth to pryde, where hee cannot otherwise pray. Hath no chylde of Pryde so many Disciples as thys tiptoe
 35 Ambition. Why cal I him Ambition, when he hath changed his name vnto honor? I meane not the honour of

i hily] Gro.: bily Q. a (| before thou 93', 94 : om. 13. 14 hys c.w.
 21 limite 13. 26 to kild 13.

the fielde (Ambitions onely enemy), which I could wish might be euer and onely honourable, but Brokerly blowne vp honour, honour by antick fawning fidled vp, honour bestowed for damned deserts.

Of thys kind of honour is thys Elfe (we call Ambition) 5 compacted. Yet wil I not say, but euen in the highest, noblest byrth, and honourablest glory of Armes, there may be Ambition. *Dauid* was ambitious when hee caused the people to be numbred. *Nabuchadnezer* eate grasse for hys ambition. *Herod* was ambitious when in angelicall ¹⁰ apparraile he spoke to the people. The truest image of
 K 3^V thys kind of ambition was *Absalom*. *Iulius Cæsar* amongst the *Ethnicks* surmounted, who when he had conquerd Gallia, Belgia, thys our poore Albion, and the better part of Europe, and vpon his returne to Rome was crowned Em- 15 perour, in the heighth of his prosperity, he sent men skild in Geometry to measure the whole world, that whereas he intended to conquer it all, he might know howe long he should be in ouer-running it. Letters had they directed to all Presidents, Consuls, Dukes, Palatines, Tetrarchs, & ao Judges of Prouinces to assist them and safeconduct them. Their Commission was not onely to measure the earth, but the waters, the woods, the Seas, the shores, the valleyes, the hills, and the Mountaines. In this discouery 30. yeeres were spent, from his Consulshyp to the Consulshyp of *Saturminus*, 25 : when godwote, poore man, twenty yeeres good before they returned, he was all to bepoynyarded in the Senate house, and had the dust of his bones in a Brasen vrne (no bigger then a boule) barreld vp, whom (if he had lyued) all the Sea and Earth and ayre woulde haue beene to little for. 30

Let the ambitious man stretch out hys lymbes neuer so, he taketh vp no more ground (being dead) then the Begger. *Londony* of many ambitious busie heades hast thou beheld the rysing and downe falling. In thy stately Schoole are

2 honourably 13. 13 *Julius* . . .] *Line not set in, but preceding line*
 notfull 93, 94. *New par* ^{13.} 14 *Gallia, Belgia, . . . Albion* ^{13.} 19
 Letters ..] *New par. Gro.* 25 *Saturnius* ^{13.}

they first tutord in theyr Arte. With example thou first exaltest them, and still still liftes them vp, till thou hast lifted vp theyr heads on thy gates.

What a thing is the hart of man, that it should swell so 5 bigge as the whole world. *Alexander* was but a lyttle man, yet if there had beene a hundred Worlds to conquer, hys hart would haue comprised them. Dyd men consider whereof they were made, and that the dust was theyr great Grand-mother, they would be more humiliat and K⁴ 10 deiected ; Of a britler mettall then Glasse is this we call Ambition made, and to mischaunces more subiect. Glasse with good vsage may be kept and continue many ages. The dayes of man are numbred, threescore and tenne is his terme; if he lyue any longer, it is but labour and 15 sorrow.

Glasse feareth not sicknes nor old age, it gathereth no wrinkles with standing. It hath not so many that scout and lye in waite for his end as Ambition: for hee (as all man-kind) is continually liable to a myllion of mischances, 20 a besides a legion of diseases lingering about him. Admitte none of those meete with him, Tyme with his Sicke wil be sure not to misse hym. A man may scape a sicknesse, a blow, a fal, a Wild-beast; he cannot escape his last destiny. Externall daungers (such as these be) euery one is circum- 25 spect and careful to auoide ; Not any one ponders in his thought, howe to auoide the death that growes inward.

From the rich to the poore (in euery street in *London*) there is ambition, or swelling about theyr states: the rich Cittizen swells against the pryde of the prodigall Courtier ; 30 the prodigall Courtier swells against the welth of the Cittizen. One Company swells against another, and seekes to intercept the gaine of each other: nay, not any Company but is deuided in it selfe. The auncients, they oppose themselues against the younger, & suppress them and keepe them 35 downe all that they may. The young men, they call them dotards, & swel and rage, and with many othes swear on

a and stil lifts ^{13.}

the other side, they will not be kept vnder by such cullions, but goe good and neere to out-shoulder them.

Amongst their Wiues is lyke warre. Well did *Aristotle*, K^{4V} in the second of Phisickes, call sinnes Monsters of | nature, for as there is no Monster ordinarily reputed, but is a swelling or excesse of forme, so is there no sinne but is a swelling or rebelling against God. *Sinne* (sayth *Augustine*) is *eyther thought, worde, or deede, opposite to the eternall will of God.* Then if all sinnes be opposing themselves against God, surely ambition (which is part of the 10 deuils sinne) cannot but be the cherrishing of open enmitie against God: and so immediate I conclude, that so many ambitious men as are amongst vs, so manie open enemies God hath.

Ambition is any puft vp greedy humour of honor or 15 preferment. No puffing or swelling vp in any mans bodie but is a sore; when the soule doth swell with ambition, both soule and bodie (without timely phisick of repentaunce) will smart full sore for it. Humilitie was so hard a vertue to beate into our heades, that Christ purposely came downe ao from heauen in hys owne person to teach it vs, and continued thirty yeeres together, nothing but preaching and practising it heere vppon earth. The foolish things of the i. Cor. 3. world (saith *Paule*) God chuseth, and not the hauty or ambitious in conceite. God myght haue chosen Kings 25 and Emperours, or the Scribes and Pharisies, to be his Disciples, but foolish Fisher-men hee chose.

In worldly policy he vsed a foolish course to win credite to his doctrine: but foolish is the worldly policie that onely from the deuill borrowes his instance. Christ chose them 30 whom the deuill scorned tolooke so lowe as to tempt, in whose harts he had not yetlayd one stone of his building. They were the onely fit men to receiue the impression of hys Spirit. Whether it be a blessing or no giuen to all Fisher-men (for the Apostles sakes), I know not, but surely there 35

L I is no one trade (in their vo-|cation) lyues so faythfully &

painfully as Fishermen, that in theyr apparraile or dyet lesse exceede. He that should haue told the deuill, Christ would cast his nets amongst Fisher-men, he would haue laught him out of his coate for a cockscombe. What reason, what
5 likelihoode was there? was he borne in a Fisher-towne? was he allied either by the Father or the Mother to Fishermen? Nay, how should hee come almost in all hys life to heare of a Fisher-man? Tush, tush, hee wyll bee altogether in the Temple amongst the Doctors, the High-priestes, and
10 the Elders: them will I ply and way-laie against him.

To theyr vnbeliefe I wyll lende arguments. They haue the seedes of ambition rooted in theyr harts alreadie. I will put in theyr heads, that hee commeth to destroy theyr Law and theyr Temple, and turne them all out of theyr
15 stately chayres of authority: and thys (I thinke) will tickle them thorowly against him.

Simple deuill, Christ deceiued thee, and onely in thys he deceiued thee, that thou imaginedst hys pryde & ambition to be like thine, and neuer lookst for him amongst Net-
20 menders. I dare sweare for thee, thou wouldst haue sooner sought for hym amongst Carpenters. But when thou foundst how thou wert ouer-reacht, I think thou rann'st to them (from one to another) with cap in hand, to request them to betray hym. And euery one shakt thee of
35 churlishlie but *ludas*, and on hym hadst thou not had power, but that he carried the purse. It is a harde thing for hym that carries the purse, (that hath money and golde at commaunde,) not to be mou'd with ambition.

Peter, lames, and lohn, had you beene any thing but
30 beggerly Fisher-men, and that you had euer lyu'd but a hungerd and colde by the Sea-side, or once come into | the great Townes where Ambition sits in her Maiestie, and L 1^v bewitcheth all eyes, (before Christ met with, you) the deuill had caught hold of you. For your sakes all other of your
35 profession shall fare the worse, Beware, Fisher-men, the deuill owes you an old grudge, hee takes you for dangerous men. Till your predecessours, the Apostles, so went beyond

hym, he neuer suspected you, he neuer tempted you : now hee will sooner tempt you, and bee more busie about you, then Kings and Emperours.

Those that will shunne ambition, (for which the wrath of GOD hangeth heauy ouer thys our Citty,) must with-drawe 5 theyr eyes from vanities, haue something still to put them in minde whereof they are made, and whether they must. My young nouice (what euer thou be) not yet crept out of the shell, I say vnto thee as the Prophet sayd to the King 4. Kings, of Israeli, *Caue ne eas in locum ilium, nam ibi insidix sunt: 10*

6. Beware thou comst not in that place, for there thou art besette; So beware thou comst not to the Courte, or to *London*, for there thou shalt be besette. Besette with ambition, besette with vanitie, besette with all the sinnes that may be. The way to know Ambition when it inuades 15 thee, is to obserue and watch thy selfe when thou first fallest into a selfe-loue: if selfe-loue hath seazd on thee, she wil stand on no meane tearmes, nor bee content to lyue as a common drudge. None (in any case) must stande in her light, the Sun must shyne on none but her. What- 20 soeuer a man naturallie desires is Ambition. *Quod habere non vis est valde bonum, quod esse non vis hoc est bonum.* There is nothing is not Ambition, but that which a man woulde not haue, or would not be. *Hauing foode and*

i.Tim. 6. *clothing*, (as *Paul* willeth vs) *let vs be content: what more 25,*

• L 2 we require to content, is | Ambition. What more then the contented blessed state of an Angell the deuill gapt after, was that which cast him out of Heauen. Wee are sent in warfare into this world, to beare Armes and fight it out with the deuils chiefe Basso, Ambition. Vnder Christs 30 standard wee marche, he is our Leader ; small is his Armie, and but a handfull in comparison of the others ; hys outwarde pompe simple, hys prouision (in sight) slender or none at all.

If vpon these considerations (as distrusting his prouidence) we shall grow in mislike with him, and reuolt to

¹ 4. Kings, 6.] om¹³.

Ambition, his enemy, and betray him, shal we euer looke him in the face more, or wil hee euer after acknowledge vs ? O no, not only he shal forsake vs, but that rich brauing Basso, Ambition; (lyke a wise Prince that will trust no 5 Traytours). As soone as euer they are come neere hym, downe the hyll they climbed vp to him shall hee headlong reuerse them.

Euen in thys dilatement against Ambition, the deuill seekes to sette in a foote of affected applause and popular 10 fames Ambition in my stile, so as hee incited a number of Phylosophers (in times past) to prosecute theyr ambition of glory in writing of glories contemptiblenesse. I resist it and abhorre it: if any thing be here penned that may peirce or profite, heauenly Christ (not I) haue the prayse. 15 *London*, looke to Ambition, or it will lay thee desolate like *Jerusalem*. Onely the ambitious shaking of the yoke of the Romains was the bane of *Jerusalem*. The dust in the streets (being come of the same house that we are of, and seeing vs so proud and ambitious) thinks with her selfe, why 20 should not shee that is discended as well as we, rayse vp her plumes as wee doe. And thats the reason shee borrowes the winges of the | winde so oft to mount into the ayre ; and many times she dasheth herselfe in our eyes, as who should say. Are you my Kinsmen and will not know me ? O what 25 is it to bee Ambitious, when the dust of the streete (when it pleaseth her) can be Ambitious ?

The Iewes euer when they mourned, rent their garments, as it were to take reuenge on them for making them proude and Ambitious, and keeping them all the while from the 30 sight of theyr nakednesse. Then they put on Sack-cloth, and that Sack-cloth they sprinckled ouer with dust, and ouer-whelmed with ashes, to put God in minde that if he shold arme his displeasure against them, he should but contend with dust & ashes ; and what glorie or prayse 35 could they afford hym ? *Shall the dust prayse thee* (sayth *David* or those that goe downe to the pit glorifie thee ?

16 shaking off the ^{13.} 22 window. 23 should] would 13.

Besides, it signified that, whereas they had lyfted themselues about theyr creation, and forgot by whom and of what they were made, nowe they repented & returned to theyr first image; In all prostrate humility they confest, that the breath of the Lord (as easie as the wind disperseth dust) 5 might disperse them, and bring them to nothing. Dyd Ambition afford vs any content, or were it ought but a desire of disquiet, it were some-what

O *Augustine*, nowe I call to minde the tale of thy conversion, in the sixth Chapter of thy sixth booke ofio Confessions, where describing thy selfe to be a young man puft vppe with the Ambition of that tyme, thou wert chosen to make an Oration before the Emperour, in which (hauing toyled thy wits to theyr highest wrest) thou thought'st to haue purchast Heauen and immortality. 15

Comming to pronounce it, thy tongue (like *Orpheus* L 3 strings) drew alleares vnto it: the Emperour thou ex-|ceedingly pleasedst, because thou exceedingly & hyperbolically praisedst. Admiration encompass thee, & commendation stroue to be as eloquent as thou in thy commendation. 20 But what was all this to the purpose? the Bladder was burst that had so long swelled, winde thou spents, and nought but wind thou gainedst. For good words, good wordes were returned thee: like one that gaue *Augustus* Greeke verses, and he for his reward gaue him Greeke verses againe. The 25 . heauen thou dreamedst of, being attained, seemed so inferiour to thy hopes that it cast thee headlong into hell: Home againe (in a melancholy) with thy companions thou returnedst, where by the way in a greene Meddow, thou espyedst a poore drunken Begger (his belly beeing full) 30 heyghing, leaping, and dauncing, fetching strange youthful! friskes, & taking care for nothing. With that thou sighedst, and entredst into thys discourse with thy companions.

O what is Ambition, that it shold not yeeld so much content as beggery? Miserable is that life where none is happy 35 but the miserable. Trauel & care for wealth, riches, and

12 tyme: thou 97, 94.

honor, is but care & trauel for trauel and care. Mad and foolish are we, who watch and studie howe to vexe our selues, and in hunting after a vaine shadowe of felicitie, hunt and start vp more and more causes of perplexity.
 5 This Begger hath not burnt candles al night a month together as I haue done, hee hath made no Oration to the Emperour to day, and yet hee is merry : I that haue poor'd out myne eyes vpon bookes, & wel-nie spit out al my braine at my tongues end this morning, am dumpish, drousy, &
 10 wish my selfe dead : and yet if any man should aske mee if I woulde willingly die, or exchange my state with this Begger, I feare I shold hardly condescend. Such is my ambition, such is my foolish delight in my vnrest. |

Hee hauing but a little money, and a fewe dung-hill rags L 3
 15 clouted together on hys backe, hath true content: I (with many grievous hart-breakings and painful complots) haue layd to ouer-take it, and cannot. Hee is iocund, I am ioylesse: hee secure, I fearefull. There is no learning or Arte leading to true felicity, but the Arte of beggery.
 20 Vngratefull knowledge, that for all the bodie-wasting industry I haue vsed in thy compasment, hast not blest me so much as thys Begger. I hauing thee, hee wanting thee is preferred in harts-ease before mee. No delight or harts-ease receiued I from thee, for I haue spoke not to teach,
 25 but to please. Vild double-fac't Oratory, that art good for nothing but to fatten sinne wyth thy flattery, that callest it giuing immortality, when thou magnifiest vices for vertues, and challengest great deserts of Kings and nobility for dissembling : heere I renounce thee as the Parasite of Artes,
 30 the whorish painter of imperfections, and onely Patronesse of sinne.

To this scope (reuerend *Augustine*) tended thy plaintiue speech, though I haue not exprest it in the same words : but the operation in thee it brought forth was, that from
 35 the meditation of beggerly content, thou wadedst (by degrees) into the depth of the true heauenlie content. O singuler

II this] the 13. 16 many] my 13.

worke contriued by weake meanes. O rarely honoured beggery, to be the instrument of recalling so rich a soule.

O faithlesse and peruerse generation (sayth Christ vnto vs, Math. 17. as he said to the lewes), how long shall I be with you, how long shall I suffer you, ere my myracles work in you the 5 like meditation? All of you are ambitious of much prosperity, long life & many daies, for your bodies: none of you haue care of the prosperitie of your soules.

There is a place in the He of *Paphos* where there neuer |
L 4 fell rayne, there is a place within you called your harts, 10
where no drops of the dewe of grace can haue accesse; Your dayes are as swyft as a post, yea, swifter the a Wea-
uers shettle, they flye and see no good thing: yet flie you
swyfter to Hell then they. *Veniunt anni vt eant* (sayth
Augustine non veniunt vt stant, yeres come that they may 15
trauell on, and not stand still: passing by vs they spoile
vs, & lay vs open to the tirannie of a crueller enemy, Death.
O if we loue so this miserable and finite life, how ought we
to loue that celestial & infinite life, where we shal enioy all
pleasures so plentiful that Ambition shal haue nothing 20
ouer-plus to worke on!

Heere we labour, drudge, and moyle, yet for all our
labouring, drudging, and moyling, cannot number the things
we lacke. Wee are neuer long at ease, but some crosse or
other afflicteth vs. As the earth is compassed round with 2,3
waters, so are we (the inhabitants thereof) compassed round
with woes. Wee see great men dye, strong men dye, wittie
men dye, fooles dye, rich Merchants, poore Artificers,
Plowmen, Gentlemen, high men, low men, wearish men,
grosse men, and the fairest complexiond men die, yet we 30
perswade our selues wee shall neuer die. Or if we doe not
so perswade our selues, why prepare wee not to die? Why
doe wee raigne as Gods on the earth, that are to bee eaten
with wormes? Shoulde a man, with *Zerxes*, but enter into
this conceite with himselfe, that as he sees one old man 35
carried to buriall, so, within threescore yeres, not one of all
8 prosperitie] *Gro.*: posteritie *Q.* 13 shuttle 13. 15 *Austine* 13. 17 cruell 13.

our glistering Courtiers, not one of al our fayre Ladies, not one of all our stoute Souldiers and Captaines, not one of all thys age throughout the World should be left, what a dampe and deadly terror woulde it strike. Temples of stone and
 5 Marble decay and fall downe; then thinke not, | Ambition, L 4
 to out-face Death, that art but a Temple of flesh. *Diues* dyed and was buried, *Lazariis* dyed and was buried, brasenfore-head Ambition, thou shalt dye and be buried. King or Queene what-euer, thou shalt die & be buried.

10 Alas, what madde harebraynd sotts are we; wee will take vp a humour of Ambition which we are not able to vp-hold, and know assuredly (ere many yeres) we must be throwne downe from: yet come what will, (at all auentures) we will goe thorowe with it; Wee will be Gods and Monarchs in our
 15 lyfe, though we be deuils after death. Ouer and ouer I repeate it double and treble, that the spyrite of monarchizing in pryuate men is the spyrite of *Lucifer*. Christ sayd to his Disciples, *Hee that will be greatest amongst you shall be the least*: so say I, that he which will be the greatest in
 20 any state, or seeketh to make hys posterity greatest, shall be the least; The least accounted of, the least reuerenced (for none that is getting ambitious, but is generally hated). Hys posteritie (though he establish them neuer so) shall not holde out. Fooles shall squander in an houre all the auarice
 25 of their ambitious wise Auncesters.

Ambition, on the sands thou buildest; regard thy soule more then thy sons & daughters, let poore men gleane after thy Carte, cast thy breade vpon the Waters. Thy greedines of the World teacheth the deuil to be greedie of thy
 30 soule. Hee accuseth his Spyrites & vpbraydeth them of sloth by thee, saying: Mortall men in these and these many yeeres can heape together so manie thousandes, and what is it that they haue a minde to, which they gette not into their hands? but you Drones & Dormise (that in
 35 celerity & quicknes shold out-start them) lie sleeping & stretching your selues by the harth of Hel-|fire, and haue M i

no care to looke about for the encrease of our Kingdome. Heauen gate is no bigger then the eye of a Needle, yet ambitious worldly men (hauing theyr backs like a Cammels, bunched with cares, and betrayed with brybes and oppressions) thinke to enter in at it. 5

Ambition, Ambition, harken to mee, there will be a blacke day when thy Ambition shall breake hys necke, when thou shalt lie in thy bedde as on a Racke stretching out thy ioynts; when thine eyes shall start out of thy head, & euery part of thee be wrunge as with the wind-chollick. In midst of thy furie and malady, when thou shalt laugh and trifle, folter with thy tongue, rattle in thy throate, be busie in folding and doubling the clothes, & scratching and catching whatsoever comes neere thee: then (as the possessed with the Calentura) thou shalt offer to 15 leape and cast thy selfe out of the toppe of thyne house; thou shalt burst thy bowels and crack thy cheeks in striuing to keepe in thy soule: When thou shouldst looke vppe to Heauen, thou shalt be ouer-looking thy Will; and altering some clause of it, when thou shouldst be commending thy spirit. 10

In thy life hast thou sought more then what is needfull, therefore at thy death shalt thou neglect that is needfull. Ambition, (like *Ierusalem*) thou knowest not the time of thy visitation: for thou hast sought in this world to gather 25 great promotions vnto thee, & not gather thy selfe vnder Christs wing, *Thy house shall be left desolate vnto thee.*

A speciall branche of this Ambition is Auarice; as riches or couetise there is nothing that so engenders Ambition. Euery Tree, euery Apple, euery Graine, euerie Hearbe, 30 M i euery Fruite, euery Weede hath hys seuerall worme: the worme of wealth is Ambition, the spurre to Ambition is wealth. Ambitions selfe we haue displesd sufficiently, his supporter we will now call in question. *Difficile est* (sayth an auncient Father) *vt non sit super bus q,n diues; tolle 35 superbiam, diuitie non nocebunt:* It is a verie difficult thing

for him not to be proud or ambitious that is ritch; take away his ambition, his ritches neuer hurt him.

Ritches haue hurte a great number in *England*, who if their ritches had not beene, had still been men and not
 5 *Timonists*. Ritches, as they haue renowned, so they haue reproched *London*. It is nowe growne a Prouerbe *That there is no merchandize but Vsury*. I dare not afTyirme it, but, questionlesse, Vsury cryeth to the children of Prodigality in the streetes : All you that will take vp mony or
 10 commodities on your Land or possibilities, to banquet, riot, and be drunke, come vnto vs and you shall be furnished : for gaine we will helpe to damne both your soules and our owne. God in his mercy neuer cal them to their audit. God in his mercy ridde them all out of *London*, & then it
 15 were to be hoped the Plague would cease, els neuer.

Ieremy sayth, *Woe be to him that buildeth his house with Ierem. 22. vnrighteousnes, and his chambers without equity, whose eyes and whose hart are onely for couetousnes and to shed innocent blood.* The eyes and the hart of Vsurers are onely for
 20 couetousnes and to shed innocent blood. Moe Gentlemen by theyr entanglement and exactions haue they driuen to desperate courses, and so consequently made away & murdered, then eyther Fraunce, the Low-countries, or any forreyne siege or Sea-voyage this 40. yeres. Tell me
 35 (almost) what Gentleman hath been cast away at Sea, or disasterly souldiourizd it by Lande, but they | haue enforst M a him thereunto by their fleecing? What is left for a man to doe, beeing consumed to the bare bones by these greedy Horseleaches, and not hauing so much reserued as would
 30 buy him Bread, but eyther to hang at Tyborne, or pillage and reprizall where he may? Huge numbers in theyr stincking Prysons they haue starued, & made Dice of their bones for the deuill to throw at dice for theyr owne soules.

This is the course nowe-a-dayes euery one taketh to be
 35 ritch: beeing a young Trader, and hauing of olde Mumpsimus (his auaritious Maister) learnd to bee hys Craftsmaister, for a yeere or two he is very thrifty, and husbandly

he payes & takes as dulle as the Clock strikes, he seemeth very sober and precise, and bringeth all men in loue with him. When he thinketh he hath thorowlie wrunge himselfe into the Worlds good opinion, & that his credite is as much as hee will demaund, hee goes and tryes it, and on the 5 Tenter-hookes stretches it. No man he knoweth but he will scrape a little Booke curtesie of, two or three thousand pound (perhaps) makes vp his mouth. When hee hath it all in his handes, for a month or two he reuels it, and cuts it out in the whole cloth. 10

Hee falls acquainted with Gentlemen, frequents Ordinaries and Dicing-houses daily, where, when some of them (in play) haue lost all theyr money, he is very diligent at hand, on their Chaynes, or Bracelets, or Jewels, to lend them halfe the value: Now this is the nature of young Gentlemen, 15 that where they haue broke the Ise and borrowd once, they will come againe the seconde time; and that these young foxes knowe, as well as the Begger knowes his dish. But at the second time of their comming, it is doubtfull to say M 2 whether they shall haue | money or no. The worlde 20 growes hard, and wee all are mortal, let them make him any assurance before a ludge, and they shall haue some hundred poundes (*per consequence*) in Silks & Veluets. The third time if they come, they shall haue baser commodities: the fourth time Lute strings and gray Paper; i\$ And then, I pray pardon mee, I am not for you, pay me that you owe mee and you shall haue any thing.

When thus this young Vsurer hath thrust all hys pedlary into the hands of nouice heyres, & that he hath made, of his three thousand, nine thousand in Bonds and Recog- 30 nisances (besides the strong fayth of the forfeitures), he breakes, and cryes out amongst his neighbors, that he is vndone by trusting Gentlemen; his kinde hart hath made him a begger: and warnes al men (by his example) to beware howe they haue any dealings with them. For a 35 quarter of a yeere or there-about, hee slyps his necke out of the Coller, and settes some graue man of his kindred (as his

Father-in-law or such like) to goe and report his lamentable mischaunce to his Creditors, and what his honest care is, to pay euery man his owne as farre as he is able. His Creditors (thinking all is Gospell he speakes, & that his state is lower
 5 ebbd then it is) are glad to take any thing for theyr owne: so that wheras three thousand pound is due, in his absence all is satisfied for eyght hundred, (his Father-in-law making them belieue he layes it out of his owne purse).

All matters thus vnder-hand discharged, my young
 10 Merchant returnes, and settes vppe fresher then euer he did. Those Bonds and Statuts he hath, he puts in sute amaine. For a hundred pound commodity, (which is not forty pound money,) he recouers by relapse some hundred pound a yeere. In three Tearmes, of a banqrout he | wexeth a M 3
 15 great landed man, and may compare with the best of his Company. O intolerable Vsury! not the lewes (whose peculier sinne it is) haue euer committed the like.

What I write is most true, and hath beene practised by more then one or two. I haue a whole Booke of young
 20 Gentlemens cases lying by mee, which if I should sette forth, some graue Auntients (within the hearing of Bowbell) would be out of charity with mee. Howe euer I flie from particularities, this I will proue, that neuer in any Citty (since the first assembly of societies) was euer suffered
 25 such notorious cosonage and villany as is shrouded vnder thys seauentie-fold vsury of commodities. It is a hundred parts more hatefull then Conny-catching: it is the Nurse of sinnes, without the which the fire of them all would be extinguisht, and want matter to feede on.

30 Poets talke of enticing Syrens in the Sea, that on a sunnie-day lay forth theyr golden trammels, their luory neckes, & theyr siluer breastes, to entice men; sing sweetlie, glance peircingly, play on Lutes rauishingly: but I say, There is no such Syrens by Sea as by Land, nor women as
 35 men: those are the Syrens, that hang out theyr shyning Silkes and Veluets, and dazle Prides eyes with theyr

deceitfull haberdashry. They are like the Serpent that tempted *Adam* in Paradise, who whereas God stinted him, what Trees and fruites he should eat on, and goe no further, hee entist him to breake the bondes of that stint, and put into his head what a number of excellent 5 pleasures he should reape thereby; So wheras carefull Fathers send theyr chyldren to thys Citty, in all gentleman-like quallities to be trayned vp, and stint them to a M 3, moderate allowance, sufficient (indifferently hus-banded) to maintaine their credite euery way, and profite them in that they are sent hether for: what doe our couetous Cittie blood-suckers, but hyre Pandars and professed parasitical Epicures, to close in with them, and (like the Serpent) to alienate them from that ciuill course wherein they were settled? Tis ryot and misgouernment that must deliuer i them ouer into theyr hands to be deuoured.

Those that heere place their children to learne witte and see the worlde, are like those that In *Affrick* present theyr children (when they are first borne) before Serpents: which if the children (they so present) with their very sight scare 2 away the Serpents, then are they legitimate, otherwise they are Bastards. A number of poore chyldren & sucklings (in comparison) are, in the Court and Innes of Court, presented to these Serpents and stinging Extortioners of *London*, who neuer flye from them, but with their tayle winde 2' them in, and sucke out their soules without scarring their skinne. Whether they be legitimate or no that are so exposed to these Serpents, I dare not determine, for feare of enuie; But sure legitimately (or as they shold) they are not brought vp, that are manumitted from their parents 3 awe, as soone as they can goe and speake.

Zeuxes hauing artificially painted a Boy carrying Grapes in a Hand-basket, and seeing the Birds (as they had been true Grapes) come in flocks & pecke at them, was wonderfully angry with himselfe and his Arte, saying: Had I 3 painted the Boy (which was the chiefe part of my picture) as well as I haue done the grapes (which were but a by accident

belonging to it) the Birds durst neuer haue beene so bold ;
 So if Fathers wold haue but as much care to paint and
 forme the manners of theyr | children, (when they come M 4
 to mans estate,) as they haue well to proportion out trifles,
 5 (to instruct and educate them in their triuiall infant yeeres,)
 sure these rauenuous Byrdes (such as Brokers and Vsurers)
 would neuer flye to them and pecke at them as they doe.

O Country Gentlemen, I wonder you doe not lay your
 heads together, and put vp a generall Supplication to
 10 the Parliament against those priuie Canker-wormes &
 Catterpillers. Which of you all but (amongst them) hath
 his Heyre cosend, fetcht in, and almost consumed past
 recouery? Besides, his minde is cleane transposed from
 his originall, all deadly sinne he is infected with, all
 15 diseases are hanging about him.

If one tice a Prentise to robbe his Maister, it is Felony
 by the Law; nay, it is a great penalty, if he do but relieue
 him and encourage him, being fledde from his Maisters
 obedience and seruice: and shall wee haue no Lawe for
 20 him that ticeth a sonne to robbe his Father? Nay, that
 shall robbe a Father of his sonne, robbe God of a soule ?
 Euerie Science hath some principles in it which must be be-
 lieued, and cannot be declared. The principles and practises
 of vsury exceed declaration ; belieue them to be lewder then
 25 penne can with modestie expresse ; enquire not after them,
 for they are execrable. *De rebus male acquisitis, nongaude-
 bit tertius heres*, 111 gotten goods neuer trouble the third
 heyre. *Euerie plant* (saith Christ) *my heauenly Father*
hath not planted, shall be rooted out. Plant they neuer so
 30 their posterity with the reuenewes of oppression, since
 God hath not planted them, they shall be ruin'd and rooted
 out. As they haue supplanted other mens posteritie, so
 must they looke to haue theyr owne posteritie supplanted
 by others.

35 *Augustine*, in the fourth Chapter of his second Booke |
 of Confessions, pittifully complaineth how heynouslie he M 4

had offended when he was a young man, in leading his companions to rob a Peare-tree in their next neighbours Orchard: *Amauiperire, O Domine* (he exclaimes), *amaui perire, amaui defectum tirpis animse et disiliens a Firmamento: malitise mex causa nulla esset nisi malitia:* I loued 5 to perrish (6 Lord), I loued to perrish, in my vngratiousnesse I delighted (foule of soule that I was & quite slyding from the Firmament): of my malice there was no cause but malice. Of the stealing and beating downe of a fewe Peares, this holy Father makes such a burdenous matter 10 of conscience, as that he counted it his vtter perrishing and back-slyding from the Firmament; Vsurers make no conscience of cosoning and robbing men of whole Orchards, of whole fieldes, of whole Lordships; Of their malice and theft there is some other cause then malice, which is 15 Auarice.

If the stealing of one Apple in Paradise brought such an vniuersall plague to the worlde, what a plague to one soule will the robbing of a hundred Orphans of theyr possessions and fruite-yards bring? In the Country the Gentleman 20 takes in the Commons, racketh his Tennaunts, vndoeth the Farmer. In *London* the Vsurer snatcheth vp the Gentleman, gyues him Rattles and Babies for his ouer-rackt rent, and the Commons he tooke in, he makes him take out in Commodities. None but the Vsurer is or 25 dained for a scourge to Pride and Ambition. Therefore it is that Bees hate Sheepe more then anie thing, for that when they are once in theyr wooll, they are so intangled that they can neuer get out. Therefore it is that Courtiers hate Merchants more then any men, for that being once 30 in their bookes, they can neuer get out. Many of them Ni carry the countenaunces of Sheep, looke simple, goe plain, weare their haire short; but they are no Sheepe, but Sheepe-byters: their wooll, or their wealth, they make no other vse of but to snarle & enwrappe men with. The 35 law (which was instituted to redresse wrongs and oppres-
5 malitie mee 93, 94 : malitie me 13. 8] after I was in I. 7 Q.

sions) they wrest contrarily, to oppresse and to wrong with. And yet thats not so much wonder, for Law, Logique, and the Swizers, may be hir'd to fight for any body; and so may an Vsurer (for a halfepeny gaine) be hyred to bite 5 any body. For as the Beare cannot drinke but he must byte the water, so cannot hee coole his auaritious thirst but he must plucke and bite out hys Neighbors throate.

Bursa Auari os est diaboli, the Vsurers purse is Hell mouth. Hee hath *Hydropem conscientiam* (as *Augustine* 10 sayth), a dropsie conscience, that euer drinks and euer is dry. Like the Foxe, he vseth his witte and his teeth together, he neuer smyles but he seazeth, hee neuer talks but he takes aduantage. He cryes with the ill Husbandmen (to whom the Vineyarde was put out in the Gospel), 15 *This is the heyre, come let vs kill him, and we shal haue his Math. 21. inheritance.* Other men are sayd to goe to Hell, hee shall ryde to Hell on the deuils backe (as it is in the olde Morrall): and if he did not ryde, hee would swym thether in innocents blood whom hee hath circumvented. No men 30 so much as Vsurers coueteth the deuill to bee great with; He is called *Mammon*, the God or Prince of thys World, that is, The God and Prince of Vsurers and Penny-fathers. Nay more, euery Vsurer of himselfe is a deuill, since this word *Daemon* signifieth nought but *Sapiens*, a subtile 25 worldly Wise-man.

When a Legion of deuils (in the Land of the *Gargisens*) were cast forth of two men that came out of graues, they desired they might goe into Hogs or swine (which | are N i^v Vsurers): many of those Hogges or Swine they tumbled 30 into the Sea: many of our hoggish Vsurers the deuill tumbles for gaine into the Sea. Vsurers (with the draffe of thys world) so feede and fatten the deuils, that nowe they almost passe not of possessing any man else. The lewes were all Hogges, that is, Vsurers, and therefore 35 if there had beene no diuine restraint for it, yet nature it selfe woulde haue dissuaded them from eating Swines-

13-4 Husband-man .'. 21 of] 13: om. 93, 94 : [of] Gro,

flesh, that is, from feeding on one another. The Prodigall-child in the Gospell is reported to haue fedde Hogges, that is, Vsurers, by letting them beguile hym of his substance.

As the Hogge is still grunting, digging, & wrooting in 5 the mucke, so is the Vsurer still turning, tossing, digging, & wrooting in the muck of this world ; like the Hog he carries his snoute euer-more down-ward, & nere lookes vp to Heauen.

Christ sayd, *'I was not meete the childrens bread should 10 be taken from them and giuen vnto dogges;* no more is it meete that the chylidrens lyuing and substance shold be taken from them and giuen vnto Hogges. *Paule sayth,* Rom. 3. *We must not doe euill that good may come of it:* there is no euill which a hoggish Vsurer will not doe, so that goods 15 or profite may come of it. They will bee sure to verifie Math. 27. our Sauiours words, *The poore e haue you alwaiies with you:* for they will make all poore that they deale with. Such vnnaturall dealing they vse towards theyr poore bretheren as though they came not naturally into the worlde, but 20 like those that were called *Cæsares, quasi cæsi ex matris vtero,* they were also cutte out of their Mothers wombe, when they came into the world. For this, 6 *London,* if (like *Zaccheus*) thou repentest not, and restorst ten fold, *Thy house shall be left desolate vnto thee.* The cryes of 25 N 2 the | fatherlesse and widdowe shall break of the Angels *Hosannas and Alleluiahs,* and pluck the sterne of the worlde out of Gods hand, till he hath acquitted them. Oppression is the price of bloode : into your Treasuries you put the price of blood, which the lewes that kild Christ feared to 30 doe. You hauing many flockes of sheepe of your owne, and your poore Neighbour but one selie Lambe (which he nurst in his owne bosome), that Lambe haue you taken away from him, and spared farre better Fatlings of your owne. 35

By your swearing & forswearing in bargayning, you haue confiscated your soules long agoe. There is no

religion in you but loue of money. Any doctrine is welcome to you, but that which beates on good workes. The charity & dutie that God exacts of you, you thinke discharged, if in speech you neither meddle nor make
5 with hym; the charity to your Neighbour, you conjecture onely consisteth in bidding good-euen and good-morrowe. Beguile not your selues, for as there is no Prince but will haue his Lawes as well not broken, as not spoken against, so will God reuenge himselfe, as wel against the breakers of
10 his Lawes, as against those that speake against them.

It is not your abrupt Graces, *God bee prayesd, Much good doe it you*, or saying, *We are nought, God amende vs, Syr, I drinke to you*, that shal stop Gods mouth; but he will come and not hold hys peace; He will scatter your
15 treasure and your store, and leaue you nothing of that you haue layd vp, saue the Kingdome of Heauen & the righteousnesse therof. Rich Vsurers, be counsailed be-times, surcease to inritch your selues with other mens losse, Holde it not enough to fall downe and worship Christ, except
ao (with the Wise-men of the East) you open your | treasures, N 2^y and present him with Golde, Mirhe, and Frankinsence.

Bring forth some fruites of good workes in this lyfe, that we may not altogether dispayre of you as barrayne
Trees, good for nothing but to be hewne downe & cast into
35 Hell-fire. *Pasce fame morientem quisquispascendo seruare Ambro. de poteris: si non paueris, fame occidisti:* Feede him that office dyes for hunger: Whosoeuer thou art that canst preserue and doost not, thou art guilty of famishing him. Christ (at the latter day), in his behalfe, shall vpbrayde thee,
30 *When I was hungry, thou gauest me no meate; when I was Math. 25. thirstie, thou deniedst me drinke: Depart from me, thou accursed. Erogando pecuniam auges iustitiam,* by laying out thy money thou increasest thy righteousnesse. Againe, *Nil diues habet de diuitijs, nisi quod ab illo postulat pauper.*
35 A ritche man treasures vp no more of his ritches then he giueth in almes.

My Maisters, I will not dissuade, but giue you counsaile to be Vsurers: Put out your money to vsury to the poore heere on Earth, that you may haue it a hundred fold repaid you in Psalme 112. Heauen. As it is in the Psalmes, *A good man is mercifull and lendetky hee giueth, he disperseth, he distributetk to the 5 poore, and his righteousnes remaineth for euer.* So that we see, by that which we giue we gaine and not loose; and yet what doe we gyue, but that wee cannot keepe? For gyuing but backe againe what was first gyuen vs, and which if wee should not gyue, Death would take from vs, we shall pur-10 chase an immortall inheritance that can nere be pluckt from vs. With halfe the paynes wee put our selues to in purchasing earthlie wealth, we may purchase Heauen.

Wealth manytymes flyes from them that with greatest solli- N 3 citude & greedines seek after it. For Heauen, it is | no more 15 but seeke and it is yours, knocke and it shall be opened. With lesse sute (I assure you) is the kingdome of Heauen obtained, then a sute for a Pension or office to an earthly King, which though a man hath 20. yeeres followed, and hath better then three parts and a halfe of a promise to 20 haue confirmed, yet if hee haue but a quarter of an enemy in the Court, it is casheird & non suted. God will not be corrupted; he is not partial! as man is, he hath no Parasites about hym, hee seeth with hys owne eyes, & not with the eyes of those that speak for bribes. Hee is not angry, or 25 commaunds vs to be driuen backe when we are importunate; but he commaunds vs to be importunate, and is angry if we be not importunate. In the Parable of the godlesse ludge and the importunate Widdow, he teacheth that importunity may gette anie thing of him. 30

Luke, 21. So in the similitude of the man that came to his friend at midnight, to desire hym to lend hym three loaues, and hys friend answered him, Hys doore was shut, his children and seruauents in bedde, and he could not rise hymselfe to giue them him: at length (hee still continuing in knocking, 35 & that for him neither he nor his might rest) to be rid of

his importunity, (not for he was his friend,) he rose vp, and gaue him as many as he needed. Howe much more shall our GOD giue vs what we aske, that asketh no other tregage at our handes for giuing, but asking and thanksgiuing? We
 5 must hunger and thyrst after righteousnes, and we shall be satis-fied. Hunger and thirst makes the Lyon to rore, the Wolues to howle, Oxen and Kine to bellough and bray, and Sheepe (of al Beastes the most selie and timorous) to bleate and complaine; Can man then (that in spyrite and
 10 audacitie exceedeth all the beastes of the field), hungering & thirsting | after righteousnes, hold his peace? Woulde God N 3' euer haue encouraged him with a blessing to hunger and thirst, but that the extremity of hunger and thirst might driue him to the extremity of importunity and prayer? I
 15 *cryed vnto the Lord* (saith *Dauid*) *and he heard mee*: Hee did not coldly, bashfully, or formally onely, cry to the Lord, as not caring whether he were heard or no, but hee cryed vnto him with his whole hart: euen to the Lord he cryed, and hee heard him. *Ezekias* cryed vnto the Lord, and he
 20 heard him. The bloode of the Saints vnder the Altar (as all bloode) is sayde to cry vnto the Lord for vengeance. *Thy Brother Abels bloode hath cried vnto me*, sayd God to Gene. 4. *Caine*. The prayer of the fatherlesse and Widdow (which God heareth aboue all things) is called a cry.
 25 Vsurers, you are none of these cryers vnto God, but those that hourelly vnto God are most cryde out against. God hath cryde out vnto you by his Preachers, GOD hath cryde out vnto you by the poore; Prysoners on their death-beds haue cryde out of you, and when they haue had but one
 ahoure to intercessionate for theyr soules, & sue out the pardon of their numberles sinnes, the whole part of that
 35 brought to your doores in the open face of Cheapside, and ignominious Ballads made of you, which euery Boy woulde

chaunt vnder your nose: yet will not you repent, nor with
 all thys crying be awaked out of your Dreame of the Deuill
 and *Dines*. Therefore looke that when on your death-
 beddes you shall lye, and cry out of the Stone, the Stran-
 gullion, and the Goute, you shall not be heard: your paine 5
 N 4 shalbe so | wrastling, tearing, and intolerable, that you shal
 haue no leysure to repent or pray: no, nor so much as lyft
 vppe your hands, or think one good thought. Euen as others
 haue curst you, so shall you be ready to curse God, & desire
 to be swallowed quicke, to excorse the agony you are in. 10

As the deuill in the seconde of *lob*, being asked from
 whence he came, answered, From compassing the earth ; so
 you, being askt at the day of Judgement from whence you
 come, shall aunswer, From compassing the Earth; For
 Heauen you haue not compast or purchast; therfore shall 15
 2. Cor. 5. Hel-fire be your portion. *Euery man shall receiue of God,*
according to that in his body he hath wrought. If in your
 bodies you haue done no good works, of God you shall
 receiue no good words. The words of God are deedes ; he
 spake but the word, and Heauen & Earth were made. 20
 He shal speake but the word, and to Hel shal you be had.
 Good deedes deriued from fayth are Rampiers or Bulwarks
 rayсед vp against the deuill: he that hath no such Bulwarke
 of good deedes to resist the deuils batterie, cannot chuse
 but haue his soules-cittie soone raced. 35

It is not my meaning in all this discourse of good deedes to seiayne any of them from Fayth. Good deedes are a tribute which we pay vnto God for
 Defending vs from al our ghostly enemies, & planting his
 peace in our consciences. In stead of the ceremoniall
 Lawe, burnt *Offerings* and Sacrifices, (which are ceased,) God
 hath giuen vs a new Law, To loue one another: that is, to 30
 shew the fruites of loue, which are good deedes to one
 another. The Widdowes Oyle was increased in her Cruse,
 and her Meale in her tubbe, onelie for doing good deedes to
 the Prophet of the Lord. Few be there now-a-dayes that
 wil doe good deedes but for good deedes, that is, for rewardes. 35

¹ 2. Cor. 5.] *om.* 13 ² It is not...] *om.* ^{13.}

33 in in her tubbe .^{13.}

If seates of iustice were to be solde for money, wee haue them amongst vs | that would buy them vp by the whole N₄v sale, and make them away againe by retaile. Hee that buyes must sell; shrewd Alcumists there are risen vp, that 5 will pick a merchandise out of euery thing, and not spare to set vp their shops of buying and selling euen in the Temple: I wold to God they had not sold and pluckt downe Church & Temple, to build them houses of stone. God shall cutte them of, that enrich themselues with the 10 fatte of the Altar.

Oues pastorem non iudicent (sayth an auncient wryter), *quia non est Discipulus supra Magistrum; multo minus deglubent*: Let not the Sheepe iudge their sheepeheard, because the scholler is not about his Maister; much lesse 15 are they to fleece or pluck from their Maister or Sheepeheard: to shaue or to pelt him to the bare bones, to whom (for feeding them) they should offer vppe theyr fleeces. *Dijs parentibus, et magistris*, sayth *Aristotle*, *non potest reddi equi-* Aristot. in *ualen*, To the Gods, our Fathers, and our Schoole-maisters, **Ethi'** 20 can neuer bee giuen as they deserue. He was an Ethnick that spoke thus, we Christians (onely because he hath spoke it) will doe any thing against it: From God, our Parents, & our Schoole-maisters (which are our Preachers), say we, can neuer be pluckt sufficient. To make our selues rich, 25 we care not if wee make our Church like Hell, where (as *lob* sayth) *Vmbra mortis et nullus ordo est*, there is the shadow of death, & confusion without order.

O Auarice, that breaketh both the Lawe of *Moyses* and the Law of Nature, in taking vsury or in-comes for 30 Aduousions, and not letting the Land of the Priestes be free from trybute: those to whom thou leauest that ill gotten vsury or tribute shall be a pray to the irreligious. *Fyrejob*, 15. *shall consume the house of brybes*.

No Cart that is ouer-loden or crammed too full, but hath o i 35 a tayle that will scatter. Beware least Hogges come to

¹ Aristot. in *Ethi.*] *om.* 13.

15 fleece or] *om.* 13. maister the Shepheard 13.

gleane after your Carts-tayle, that your heyres come not to be Wardes vnto Vsurers, for they will put out theyr Lands to the best vse, of seauen-score in the hundred, and make them serue out theyr wardshippe in one Pryson or other. The onely way for a rich man to preuent robbing, is to be 5 bountifull and liberall. None is so much the thieues mark as the myser and the Carle. Giue while you Hue (rich men), that those you leaue behinde you may be free from Cormorants and Catterpillers. If there be but in your bags one shilling that shouldehauebeene the poores, that shilling will ro be the consumption of all his fellowes: one rotten Apple marreth all the rest, one scabbed sheepe infects a whole flock.

Euen as a Prince, out of his Subiects goods, hath lones, dismes, Subsidies, & Fifteenes; so God, out of our goods, demaundeth a lone, a tenth, and a Subsidie to the poore. 15 *Loe, the one halfe of my goods (sayth Zaccheus) I giue to the poore.* Is not he an ill seruant, that when his Maister shall into his hands deliuer a large summe of money, to be distributed amongst the needy and impotent, shall purse it vp into his owne Coffers, and eyther giue them none at all, ao or but the hundreth part of it? Such ill seruaunts are we. The treasure and possessions we haue, are not our owne, but the Lorde hath giuen them vs to giue to the poore, and spend in his seruice: we (very obsequiouslie) giue to the poore onely the mould of our treasure, and will rather 25 detract from Gods seruice then detract from our drosse. No where is pittie, no where is piety, our House must needes *be left desolate vnto vs.*

The Idolatrous Gentiles shall rise vp against vs, that bestowed all their wealth on Fanes and shrines to theyr | 30 O^v gods, and presents and offerings to their Images; To the true Image of God (which are the poore) wee will scarce offer our bread-parings. The Temple of *Diana* at *Ephesus* was two hundred yeeres in building by all *Asia*. There was none that obtained any victory, but built a Temple at 35

9 be in your bags, but one ^{13.} ¹⁹ among ^{13.} 27 piety] 94 (*B. M. copy*): pittie 93,13.

his return, to that god (as he thought) which assisted him. Not so much as the *Feuer quartan*, but the Romaines built a Temple to, thinking it some great God because it shooke them so; and another to *III fortune*, in *Exquilijs*, a Mountaine
 5 in Rome, because it should not plague them at Gardes and Dice. No *Feuer quartanes*, *III fortune*, or *Good fortune*, may wring out of vs any good workes. Our deuotion can away with anie thing, but this Pharasaicall almes-giuing.

Hee that hath nothing to doe with his money but build
 10 Churches, we count him one of God-almighties Fooles, or els (if he beare the name of a Wise-man) we tearme him a notable braggart. Tut, tut, Almes-houses will make good stables, and, let out in Tenements, yeelde a round sum by the yeere. A good strong bard hutch is a building
 15 worth twenty of those Hospitals arrd Almes-houses; Our rich Chuffes will rather put their helping hands to the building of a prison then a house of prayer. Our Courtiers lay that on their backs, which shold serue to build Churches and schooles. Those Preachers please best, which can fite
 20 vs with a cheape Religion, that preach Fayth, and all Fayth, and no Good-workes, but to the houshold of Fayth.

Ministers and Pastors (to some of you I speake, not to all), tis you that haue brought downe the price of Religion; beeing couetous your seines, you preach nothing
 25 but couetous doctrine: your followers, seeing you giue no almes, take example (by you) to hold in their handes | to, & will giue no almes. That Text is too often in your O a mouthes, *Hee is worse then an Infidel that protiides notfor his wife and family*. You doe not cry out for the Altar,
 30 cry out for money to maintaine poore Schollers, cry out for more liuing for Colledges, cry out for reliefe for the that are sicke and visited: you rather cry out against the Altar, cry out against the luyng the Church hath alreadie.

It were to be wished, that order were taken vppe amongst
 35 you, which was obserued in *S. Augustines* time: For then it was the custome, that the poore shold begge of none

but the Preacher or Minister, and if hee had not to giue them, they should exclaime and cry out of hym, for not more effectually moouing and crying out to the people for them. Had euery one of you all the poore of your Parishes hanging about your doores, and readie to rent 5 your garments of your backes, and teare out your throats for bread euery time you stird abroad, you wold bestirre you in exhortation to charity and good workes, and make your selues hoarse in crying out against couetise and hardnes of hart 10

London, thy hart is the hart of couetousnes, all charitie and compassion is cleane banished out of thee : except thou amendest, *Ierusalem*, *Sodome*, and thou, shall sit downe and weepe together.

From Ambition & Auarice, his suborner, let mee progresse 15 to the second sonne of Pride, which is Vaine-glorie. This Vaine-glorie is any excessiue pride or delight which we take in things vnecessary ; Much of the nature is it of Ambition, but it is not so daungerous, or conuersant about so great matters, as Ambition. It is (as I may call it) 20 the froth and scathing vp of Ambition. Ambition that cannot containe it selfe, but it must hop and | bubble aboue water. It is the placing of praise and renowne in contemptible things. As he that takes a glory in estrang-
 ing himselfe from the attyre and fashions of his owne 25 Country. Hee that taketh a glory to weare a huge head of hayre like *Absalom*. He that taketh a glory in the glystring of his apparraile and his perfumes, and thinks euery one that sees him or smels to him should be in loue with him. Hee that taketh a glory in hearing himselfe 30 talke, and stately pronouncing his words. He that taketh a glory to bring an othe out with a grace, to tell of hys cosonages, his surfettings, his drunkennes, and whoredomes. Hee that (to be counted a Caualeir, & a resolute braue man) cares not what mischiefe he doe, whom hee quarrels 35 with, kils, or stabbes.

Such was *Pausanias* that kild *Phillip* of *Macedon*, onelie for fame or vaine-glory. So did *Herostratus* burne the Temple of *Diana* (whereof I talkt in the leafe before), to gette him an eternall vaine-glory. The Spanyards are
 5 wonderfull vaine-glorious. Many Souldiours are most impatient vaine-glorious, in standing vpon theyr honor in euery trifle, & hosting more then euer they did. They are vaine-glorious also in commending one another for murders and braules: which (if they weighed aright) is the most
 10 ignominy that may be. By a great oth they wil sweare, he is a braue delicate sweet man, for he kild such & such a one; as if they should say, *Caine* was a braue delicate sweet man, for killing his brother *Abel*. He was the first that inuented this going into the field, and now it is growne
 15 to a common exercise euery day after meate. Many puny Poets & old ill Poets are mighty vaine-glorious, of whom *Horace* speaketh: *Ridentur mala qui compommt carmina; verum gaudent scribentes et se venerantur, et vitro, si taceas, laudant quicquid scripsere beati*. They | are of all 0 3
 20 men had in derision (sayth he) that bungle and bodge vppe wicked verses: but yet they doe honie and tickle at what they write, & wonderfully to themselues applaude and prayse themselues; And of theyr owne accord, (if you doe not commend them) they wil openly commend them-
 25 selues, and count their pennes blessed whatsoeuer they inuent. Many excellent Musitians are odde fantasticke vaine-glorious. There is vaine-glory in building, in banquetting, in being *Diogenicall* and dogged, in voluntary pouerty and deuotion. Great is theyr vaine-glory also
 30 that will rather reare themselues monuments of Marble then monuments of good deedes in mens mouthes. In a word, as *Paule* sayth, *Non est, Domine in quo gloriari possim, sed in Cruce Domini Iesu Christi*: There is no true glory, all is vain-glory, but in the Crosse of our Lorde
 35 Iesus Christ. The lewes vaine-glory and presumptuous

17-8 *carmina verum. Gaudent. . . vitro. Si* 93^{13.} 19 *laudant*] 94
 (B. M. copy): *laudunt* 93, 13.

110CHRISTSTEARES

confidence in theyr Temple, was one of the chiefe sinnes that pluckt on theyr *desolation*. In that Chapter where our Sauour gaue iudgement ouer *Jerusalem*, how bitterly did he inueigh against the hypocrisy and vaine-glorie of the Scribes and Pharisies. 5

Let vs examine what this hypocrisie and vaine-glorie was, he inueighed so against, and see if there be any such amongst vs heere in *London*.

First, he accuseth them, *Of binding heauy burdens and too grieuous to be borne, and laying them on other mens iō shoulders, and not moouing them with one finger themselues*. That is as much to say as States of a Country shoulde make burdenous Lawes, to oppresse and keepe vnder the Communalty, and looke seuerely to the obseruation of them; but woulde keepe none of them themselues, nor will 15 not so much as deigne with one finger to touch them. |

O 3^v Secondly, *They did all theyr workes to bee seene of men*.

So doe they that will doe no good works, but to be put in the Chronicles after theyr death: so do they that publiquely wil seeme the most precise iusticiaries vnder 20 heauen, but priuately mittigate theyr sentence for mony

Exod. 23. & gyfts, *which blind the wise, & subuert the words of the iust*. The especiall thing Christ in the Pharisies reprooueth

that they did to be seene of men, was the wearing of theyr lerom on large *Philacteries*. Those *Philacteries* (as S. *Ierom* saith) 25

Matthew! were broade peeces of Parchement, wheron they wrote the tenne Commaundements, and folding them vp close together, bound them to theyr fore-heade, and so wore them alwayes before theyr eyes, imagining thereby they fulfilled that which was sayd: *They shal be alwaies im- 30 moouable before thine eyes*. That which they had alwaies vaine-gloriously before their eyes, that haue we alwaies vaine-gloriously in our mouthes, but seldom or neuer in our harts. Neuer was so much professing & so little practising, so many good words and so few good deedes. 35

15-6 nor so much as deigne (with one of theyr fingers) to touch them. 94
(B. M. copy). 17 They] The 13. 18 worke 13.

The third obiection against the Pharisies was, *That they loued the highest places at feastes, the chiefe seates in assemblies, and greeting in the Market-place:* Which is as much to say as that they were arrogant, haughty minded, 5 and insolent ; that they had no spyrite of humilitie or meeknesse in them: They were besotted with the pryde of theyr owne singularity, they thought no man worthy of any honour but themselues. By intrusion & not standing on curtesie, they gotte to sitte highest at Feastes, and 10 be preferr'd in Assemblies : which appeareth by that which followeth some few verses after : *For who soeuer will exalt himselfe shall be brought lowe, and whosoezter will humble himselfe shal be exalted.* Which inferreth, | that O 4 they did intrude or exalt themselues, and were not exalted 15 otherwise : therfore they should be humbled or brought low. Diuers like Pharisies haue wee, that will proudly exalt themselues.

After thys, our Sauioir breathes out many woes against them. First, *For shutting vp the Kingdom of heauen from 20 before men, and neither entring themselues', nor suffering those that would to enter.* Next, *For deuouring widdowes houses vnder pretence of long prayers.* Thirdlie, *For compassing Sea and Lande to sedtice.* Fourthly, *For theyr false and fond distinction and interpretation of othes.* Fiftlie, 25 *For tithing mynt and Annise seede and commin, & leauing weightier matters of the law, iudgement, mercy, and fidelitie, fore-slowed: for straying at a Gnat and swallowing a Cammell.* Sixthly, *For making cleane the out-side of the cuppe or the platter, when within they were full of bribery 30 and excesse.* Seauenthly, *For they were like vnto whited Tombes, which appeare beautifull outward, but within are full of dead mens bones and all filthines.* Eyghtly, *For they built the Tombes of the Prophets and garnisht the Sepulchers of the righteous, whose doctrine they refused to 35 be ruled by.* Which of all these eyght woes but we haue incurred ?

Peculiarly apply them I will not, for feare their reference

might be offensiue : but let euery one that is guiltie in any of them apply them priuately to himselfe, least euery childe in the streete apply them openly to his reproofe.

London, looke to thy selfe, for the woes that were pronounced to *Jerusalem* are pronounced to thee. Thou, 5 transgressing as grieuously as shee, shalt be punished as grieuously. Fly from sinne, take no pride or vaine-glorie in it; for pryde or vaine-glory in sinne, is a horrible sinne, O 4^V though it be without purpose to sinne. Ah, what | is sinne that we should glory in it? To glory in it, is to glory 10 that the deuill is our father. Dooth the Peacocke glory in his foule feete? Dooth he not hang downe the taylor when he lookes on them? Dooth the Buck (hauing be-filtht himselfe with the female) lift vp his homes & walke proudly to the lawnes? O no, he so hateth himselfe, (by reason of 15 the stinch of his commixture,) that all drouping and languishing, into some solitary Ditch he with-drawes himselfe, and takes soyle, and batheth til such time as there fall a great shoure of rayne, when being thorowly washed and clensed, he posteth back to his foode. ao

Of the Peacocke, of the Bucke, nor any other brute Beast, can we be taught to lothe our filth, but (contrary to nature), farre worse then brute beastes, wee are enamoured of the sauour of it. *Omne mtium eo ipso quod mtium est, contra* 30 *est.* Euery vice as it is a vice, is contrary to nature. Takes the deuill a vaine-glory or pryde that he is exiled out of heauen? No, he rueth, hee curseth, he enuiet God, men, and Angels, that they should Hue in the kingdome of light, & he in the vallie of darknesse.

What cowarde is there that will bragge or glory hee was 30 beaten and disarmed? If wee had the witte to conceiue the basenesse of sinne, or from what abiect Parentage it is sprung, we would hate it as a Toade, and flye from it as an Adder. Not without reason haue manie learned Wryters called it Bestiall, for it is all deriued & borrowed from 35 Beastes. Pride and inflammation of hart we borrow from the

7 or] nor 13. 18 such] suck 13. ao feede 94 (B. M. copy).

Lyon, auarice from the Hedghog, luxury, ryot, and sensuality from the Hogge : and therefore we call a leatcherous person a boarish companion. Enuy from the Dogge, Ire or wrath from the Wolfe, | gluttony or gurmandise from P i
 5 the Beare, and lastly sloth from the Asse. So that as wee apparraile our selues in Beastes skinnes, in selfe same sort we clothe our soules in theyr sinnes. But if wee did imitate ought but the imperfections of Beastes, (or of the best Beastes, but the worst Beastes,) it were some-what: if we
 10 had any spark or taste of theyr perfections, wee were not so to be condemned. We haue no sparke, no taste, wee are nothing but a compound of vncleannes.

Let vs not glory that wee are men, who haue put on the •
 shapes of Beastes. Thrice blessed are Beastes that die
 15 soone, and after this life feele no hell: Woe vnto vs, we shall, if wee appeare to God in the image of beastes, and soone redeeme not from sathan the image of our creation he hath stolne from vs. O singuler subtilty of our enemy, so to sweeten the poyson of our perdition, that it should be
 20 more relishsome and pleasant vnto vs, then the nectarized *Aqua coelestis* of water-mingled blood, sluced from Christs side. We glory in that we are in the high-way to be throwne from glory: We will not heare our Folders or Sheepeheards, that would gather vs to glory. Our Lord
 35 rode vppon an Asse when hee gouerned the lewes, vnder the Law (in comparison of vs): we are the vnbroken-Colt, (including the Gentiles,) which hee commaunded (with the Asse) to be brought vnto hym. Thys thousand and odde hundred yeeres hath he beene breaking
 30 vs to his hand, & now (when he had thought to haue found vs fitte for the saddle) we are wilder and further of then euer we were. Wee kicke and winche, and will by no meanes endure his managing. Wherefore, (though vtterly wearied with both) better he esteemeth of his old
 35 obstinate slow Asse, the lewes, (which therfore he cast of, for they had tir'd him with continual | beating,) then P i^v
 7 in theyr skinnes Q. *Corr. in Errata of* 93. 25 lewes] lawes 13.

of the vntoward Colt (vs the Gentiles), that will not be bridled.

Ambition & vaine-glory make vs beare vp our necks stiflie, and bend our heads backward from the reyne, but age will make vs stoope thrice more forward, & warpe our 5 backs in such a round bundle that, with declyning, our snoutes shall digge our graues.

England, thou needst not be ambitious, thou needst not be vaine-glorious, for ere this hast thou been bowed and burdned till thy backe crackt. As the Israelites were 10 tenne times led into captiuity, so seauen times hast thou beene ouer-runne and conquered. In thy strength thou boasts ; God with the weake confoundeth the strong. The least lifting vp of his hand makes thy men of warre fall backward. Say thou art walled with Seas, how easie are 15 thy walls ouer-come! Who shall defende thy walls if the ciuill sworde waste thee? With more enemies is not *India* besette then thou are. Vngratefully hath God giuen thee long peace and plenty, since, whereas warre can but breede vices, thy peace and plentie hath begotte more sinnes then 20 warre euer hearde of or the Sunne hath *Atomi*.

Yet learne to leaue of thy vaine-glory, that God may glory in thee. Learne to despise the world, despise vanitie, despise thy selfe, to despise despysing, and lastlie, to despise no man. If you be of the worlde, you will affect the vain- 35 glory of the world : if you be not of the world, looke for no glory, but contempt, from the worlde. It lyes in your election to drawe lots, whither you will be heyres of the glory eternall, or enioy the short breath of vaine-glory amongst men. 30

The third sonne of Pride is Atheisme, which is when a
 P a man is so timpaniz'd with prosperity, and entranced | from
 himselfe with Wealth, Ambition, and Vaine-glory, that he
 forgets he had a Maker, or that there is a Heauen about
 him which controules him. Too much ioy of this world 35
 hath made him drunke. I haue read of many whom ex-

9 hast thou] thou hast .13

treame ioy & extreame grieffe hath forced to runne mad ; so with extreame ioy runnes he mad, he waxeth a Foole and an Idiote, and then hee sayes in his hart, *There is no God.* Others there be of these soule-benummed Atheists, who, (hauing so farre entred in bold blasphemies, and Scripture-scorning ironies against God, that they thinke, if God be a God of any iustice & omnipotence, it cannot stand with that his iustice & omnipotence, to suffer such despite vnpunished,) for their onely refuge, perswade themselues there is no God,
10 and with theyr prophane wits inuent reasons why there should be no God.

In our Sauours time there were *Saduces*, that denied the Resurrection ; what are these Atheists but Saducaean sectaries that deny the resurrection ? They belieue they
15 must die, though they belieue not the Deitie. By no meanes may they auoyd what they will not admitte. In the very houre of death shall appeare to them a God and a deuill. In the very houre of death, to Atheisticall *Iulian* (who mockingly called all Christians *Gallileans*) appeared a
20 grizly shaggy-bodied deuill, who for all (at his sight) hee recantingly cryed out, *Vicisti, Galilsee, vicisti.* Thine is the day, thine is the victory, 6 man of *Galilee*, yet would it not for-bear him or giue him ouer, till it had stript his soule forth of his fleshie rinde, and tooke it away with him.

25 Those that neuer heard of God or the deuill in theyr life before, at that instant of theyr transmutation shall gyue testimony of them. |

This I assure my selfe, that howe-euer in pride of minde p 2 (because they would be different in paradoxisme from all
30 the world) some there be that fantasie phylosophicall probabilities of the Trinities vnexistence, yet in the inmost recourse of theyr consciences they subscribe to him, and confesse him.

Most of them, because they cannot grosslie palpabriz or
35 feele God with their bodily fingers, confidently and grossly discard him. *Those that come to God must belieue that God* Hebr. n.

¹ Hebr. u. *Iom.* 13.

is, and that he is a rewarder of them that seeke him. They, comming against God, belieue that he is not, and that those prosper best, and are best rewarded, that sette him at Psalm 18, nought. *The heauens declare the glory of God, & the Firmament sheweth his handy work; one generation telleth 5 another of the wonders hee hath doone:* yet will not these faythlesse contradictours suffer any glory to be ascribed to him. Stoutly they refragate and withstande, that the Firmament is not his handy-worke, nor will they credite one generation telling another of his wonders. They fol- lowe the Pironicks, whose position and opinion it is that there is no Hel or misery but opinion. Impudently they persist in it, that the late discovered Indians are able to shew antiquities thousands before *Adam*.

With *Cornelius Tacitus*, they make *Moyes* a wise prouident man, well seene in the Egiptian learning, but denie hee had any diuine assistance in the greatest of his miracles. The water (they say) which he strooke out of a Rocke in the Wildernes, was not by any supernaturall worke of GOD, but by watching to what parte the Wild-asses repayred for 20 drink.

With *Albumazar*, they holde that his leading the Chyl- dren of Israeli ouer the Red-sea, was no more but obser- P 3 ing the influence of Starres, and wayning season | of the Moone that with-draweth the Tydes. They seek not to 25 know God in his workes, or in his Sonne Christ Iesus, but by his substance, his forme, or the place wherin he doth exist. Because some late Writers of our side haue sought to discredite the story of *Iudith*, of *Susanna* and *Daniell* and of *Bell* and the *Dragon*, they thinke they may thrust 30 all the rest of the Bible (in like manner) into the lewish Thalmud, and taxe it for a fabulous Legend.

Thys place serueth not to stand vppon proofes, or by confutation to confirme principles: neither dare I, with the weake poppe of my wit, offer to vp-holde the high Throne 35

¹ Psalm 18.] om. 13.

12 no] not !!.

of the Godhead, since he that but stretcht out his hande to vnder-prop the Arke falling, was presentlie striken dead. O Lord, thou hast tenne thousand stronger pyllers then I am. I am the vnworthiest of all worme-reserued wretches, 5 once to speake of thee, or name thee. *My sinnes are* Psalm 50. *alwaie before me.* Princes will not let those come before them with whom they are displeased. I am afraid the congealed clowdes of my sinne will not let my prayers come neer thee. O, fauour thy glory though I haue dis- 10 pleased thee with follie. I will not bee so vnweapondieopardous, to ouer-throwe both thy cause and my credite at once, by ouer-Atlassing myne inuention. That which I vnder-take shall be onely to throw one light Darteat their faces from a farre, and exhort all able pennes to Arme 15 themselues against thyne Atheisticall maledictours.

Of Atheists this age affordeth two sorts, the inwarde and the outward; The inwarde Atheist is he that deuoures widowes houses vnder pretence of long prayers, that (like the Panther) hideth his face in a hood of Religion, when he 20 goeth about his pray. He wold professe | himselfe an Atheist P 3^y openly but that (like the Pharisies) he feareth the multitude. Because the multitude fauours Religion, he runnes with the streame, and fauours Religion; onely for he woulde be Captaine of a multitude. To be the God of gold, he cares 25 not how many gods he entertaines. Church-rights hee supposeth not amisse to busie the Common-peoples heads with, that they shold not fall aboard Princes matters. And as *Numa Pompilius* in Rome, and *Minos* in Athens, kept the people in awe, and thrust what tyrannous Lawes they 30 list vppon them, (the one, vnder pretence hee did nothing without conference of the Nimphe *Egeria*, the other, vnder colour he was inspyred in a certaine hollowe Caue by *Iupiter*) so hee makes conscience and the Spyrite of God a long side-cloake for all his oppressions and pollicies. A 35 holie looke he will put on when he meaneth to do mischiefe,

¹ Psalm 50] Corrected by Gro. to Psalm 51: om. 13.

and haue Scripture in his mouth euen whiles hee is in cutting his neighbours throate.

The propagation of the Gospell (good Saint-like man) hee onely shootes at, when, vnder suppressing of Popery, hee striues to ouer-throwe all Church-lyuings. So that 5 euen as the Gospell is the power of God to saluation, to euery one that belieueth, so is it in him the deuils power of beguiling and vndoing, to euery one that belieues him. He it is that turneth the truth of God to a lye, and buildeth his house by hypocrisie; that hath his mouth 10 swept and garnished, but in his hart a whole Legion of deuils.

The outwarde Atheist (contrariwise), with those things that proceede from his mouth, defileth hys hart; He establisheth reason as his God, and will not be persvaded that 15 God (the true God) is, except he make him priuie to al the P 4 secrecies of his beginning & gouern-|ment. Straightly he will examine hym where hee was, what he did, before he created Heauen and Earth ; how it is possible he shoulde haue his beeing from before all beginnings. Euery circum- 20 stance of his prouidence hee will runne thorough, and question why he did not thys thing, and that thing, and the other thing, according to theyr humors?

Beeing earthlie bodies (vnapt to ascende), in theyr ambitious cogitation they will breake ope and ransacke hys 25 Closet: and if (conueniently) they may not come to it, then they wil derogate and depraue him all they can. Little doe they consider that, as the lyght which shined before *Paul* made hym blinde, so the lyght of Gods inuisible misteries (if euer it shyne in our harts) will con- 30 found and blind our carnall reason.

Phylosophies chiefe fulnesse, wisdoms adopted Father next vnto *Salomon*, vnsatiable Arte-searching *Aristotle*, that in the rounde compendiate bladder of thy brayne conglobedst these three great bodies (Heauen, Earth, and 35 the wide worlde of Waters), thyne Icarian-soaring comprehension, tossed and turmoyled but about the bounds &

beginning of *Nilus*, in *Nilus* drown'd it selfe, being too sely and feeble to plunge thorow it.

If knowledges second *Salomon* had not knowledge enough to engraspe one Riuer, and alledge probabilitie of hys
 5 beginning and bounding, who shall engraspe or bound the Heauens body? Nay, what soule is so metaphysicall subtile, that can humorously sirenize heauens soule, *lehouah*, out of the concealements of hys Godhead? He that is familiar with all earthly states must not thinke to
 10 be familiar with the state of Heauen. The very Angels knowe not the day nor houre of the last Judgement: if they know not the day nor houre of the iudge-ment, (which **P 4**
 is such a generall thing,) more priuate circumstances of the God-head (determinately) they are not acquainted with;
 15 And if not Angels (his sanctified attendants), much lesse are they reuealed to sinners. Idle-headed Atheist, ill wouldst thou (as the Romans) acknowledge and offer sacrifice to many gods, that wilt not graunt one God. From thy byrth to thys moment of thine vnbeleefe,
 20 reuolue the diarie of thy memory, & try if thou hast nere prayd and beene heard: if thou hast beene heard & thy prayer accomplit, who hath heard thee, who hath accomplit it? Wilt thou ratifidely affirme that God is no God, because (like a Noun substantiue) thou canst not
 25 essentially see him, feele him, or, heare him?

Is a Monarche no Monarch, because hee reareth not his resiant Throne amongst his vtmost Subjects? Wee (of all earthlings) are Gods vtmost subjects, the last (in a manner) that he brought to his obedience: shal we then forgette
 30 that wee are any subjects of hys, because (as amongst his Angels) he is not visibly conuersant amongst vs? Suppose our Monarche were as farre distanced from vs as Constantinople, yet still he is a Monarche, and his power vndiminished. Indeede so did our Fathers rebel, & forgot they had a
 35 King; when *Richard de Corde Lyon* was warring in the Holy-Land, hys owne brother, king *lohn*, forgot that he had

a brother, & crownd hymselfe King. But God is not absent, but present continuallie amongst vs, though not in sight yet as a Spirite at our elbowes euery where, (& so delight many Kings to walke disguised amongst theyr subiects.) Hee treades in all our steps, hee plucketh in 5 and letteth out our breath as hee pleaseth, our eyes he openeth and shutteth, our feete hee guideth as he listeth. |

Q i Tis nothing but plenty and aboundance that makes men Atheists. Euen as the Snake which the Husbandman tooke out of the cold and cherrisht in his bosome, once 10 attained to her liuely heate againe, & growne fatte and lusty, singled him out as the first whom shee might (vngratefully) enuenoume with her forked sting; So God hauing tooke a number of poore out-casts (farre poorer then poore frost-bitten Snakes) foorth of the colde of 15 scarcity and contempt, and put them in his bosome, cherrisht and prosperd them with all the blessings hee could, they (hauing once plentifully pickt vp theyr crumbes, and that they imagine (without his help) they can stand of themselues) now fall to darting their stings of derision at his 20 face, and finding themselues to bee as great as they can well be amongst men, grow to enuy & extenuate theyr Maker.

A seruauant that (of nothing) is waxt great vnder hys Maister, if hys Maister looke not to him, proues the greatest enemy he hath : Eftsoones he will draw all men 25 from hym, and vnder-hand disgrace him, to engrosse al in his owne hand. None are so great enemies to God as those that (of smal likelihoods) haue waxt greatest vnder him, and haue most tasted the gracious springs of his prouidence. Oft haue we seene a Begger promoted 30 forgette and renounce his owne naturall Parents: no meruaile then, if these mounted Beggers forgette and wil not acknowledge God, theyr common Parent and foster Father.

I cannot be perswaded any poore man, or man in misery, (be he not altogether desperate of hys estate,) is an Atheist. 35 Misery (mauger theyr hearts) will make them confesse God.

Who heareth the thunder, that thinkes not of God? I would know who is more feareful to die, | or dies with more Q i^y terror and afrightment, then an Atheist. Discourse ouer the ends of all Atheists, and theyr deatnes for the most 5 parte haue beene drunken, violent, and secluded from repentance. The blacke swuttie visage of the night, and the shatite fancies thereof, asserntaines euery guilty soule there is a sinne-hating God.

Howe can Bellowes blowe, except there be one that 10 bindes and first imprisons winde in them? How can fire burne if none first kindle it? How can man breathe, except God puts first the breath of life into hym? Who leadeth the Sunne out of his Chamber, or the Moone forth her cloudy Paulion, but God? Why dooth not the Sea swallow 15 vp the Earth, (when as it ouer-peeres it, and is greater then it,) but that there is a GOD that snaffles and curbes it?

There is a path which no Foule hath known, neither the lob, 28.

Kytes eyes scene: the Lyon himselfe hath not walkt in it, nor the Lyons whelpes past thereby. Who then knowes 20 it; who is there to trace it? Hath the vast azur'd Canopy nothing about it, where-vnto it is perpendicular knit? then why doe not all thinges wheele and swarue topsie-turuy? Why breake not thunder-bolts through the Clowdes in steade of thrids of rayne? Why are not Frost and Snow vn- 25 cessantly in Armes against the Summer?

The excellent compacture of mans bodie is an argument of force enough to confirme the Deity.

O why should I but squintingly glance at these matters, when they are so admirably expatiated by auncient Writers? 30 In the *Resolution* most notably is thys tractate enlarged. He which peruseth that, & yet is '*Diagorizd*, will neuer be Christianiz'd. Vniuersity men that are called to preache at the Crosse and the Court, Arme your | selues against nothing 35 opinions, but let Atheisme be the onely string you beate on; for there is no Sect now in *England* so scattered as

* Diagoras
primus
Deos
negans,
Q²

Atheisme. In vayne doe you preach, in vayne doe you teach, if the roote that nourisheth all the branches of security be not thorowly digd vp from the bottome. You are not halfe so wel acquainted as them that lyue continually about the Court and Citty, how many followers 5 this damnable paradoxe hath : how many high wits it hath bewicht. Where are they, that count a little smattring in liberall Artes & the reading ouer the Bible with a late Comment, sufficient to make a Father of Diuines ? What ' Disalow-
Atheists wyll their ' disalowed Bible or late Comments helpe them, 10
, 'key haue no other reading to resist Atheists ? Atheists if euer they be confuted, with theyr owne prophane Authors they must be confuted.

I am at my wits end, when I view how coldly, in comparison of other Countrimen, our *Englishmen* write. How, 15 in theyr Bookes of confutation, they shew no wit or courage, as well as learning. Iri all other things *English* men are the stoutest of all others, but beeing Schollers, and lyuing in their owne natiue soyle, theyr braines are so pesterd with full platters, that they haue no roome to bestirre them. 20 Fie, fie, shall we, because we haue Leade and Tynne Mynes in *England*, haue Leade and Tynne Muses? For shame, bury not your spyrits in Biefe-pots. Let not the *Italians* call you dul-headed *Tramontani*, So many Dunces in Cambridge and Oxford are entertayned as chiefe members into 25 societies, vnder pretence, though they haue no great learning, yet there is in them zeale and Religion, that scarce the least hope is left vs, we should haue any heereafter but
Q 2 blockes and Images, | to confute blocks and Images. That of *Terence* is oraculiz'd, *Patres xquum censere nos adulescentulos ilico apueris fieri senes*. Our Fathers are now growne to such austeritie, as they would haue vs straitte of chyldren to become old-men. They will allowe no time for a gray bearde to grow in. If at the first peeping out of the shell a young Student sets not a graue face on it, or seemes not 35

mortifiedly religious, (haue he neuer so good a witte, be hee neuer so fine a Scholler, he is cast of and discouraged. They sette not before they eyes how all were not called at the first houre of the day, for then had none of vs euer
5 beene called. That not the first sonne that promised his Father to goe into the Vineyarde went, but hee that refused and sayd he would not, went. That those blossomes which peepe foorth in the beginning of the Spring, are frost-bitten and die ere they can come to be fruite. That religion
10 which is soone rype, is soone rotten.

Too abortiue, reuerend Academians, doe you make your young plants. Your preferment (following the outward appearance) occasioneth a number of young hypocrites, who else had neuer knowne any such sinne as dissimulation, and
15 had beene more knowne to the Common-wealth. It is onely ridiculous dul Preachers (who leape out of a Library of Catechismes, into the loftiest Pulpits) that haue reuiued thys scornefull Secte of Atheists. What Kings embassage would be made account of, if it should be deliuered by a
20 meacocke and an ignorant? Or if percase he send variety of Embassadors. and not two of them agree in one tale, but be deuided amongst themselues, who will harken to them? Such is the deuision of Gods Embassadors heere amongst vs, so many cow-baby-bawlers and heauy-gated lumberers |
25 into the Ministry are stumbled, vnder thys Colledge or that Q 3 Halls commendation, that a great number had rather heare a iarring blacke-sant, then one of theyr balde Sermons.

They boldly will vsurpe *Moyses* chayre, without anie study or preparation. They would haue theyr mouthes
30 reuerenced as the mouthes of the *Sybils*, who spoke nothing but was registred; Yet nothing comes from theyr mouthes but grosse full-stomackt tautology. They sweat, they blunder, they bounce & plunge in the Pulpit, but all is voyce and no substance: they deafe mens eares, but not edifie.
35 Scripture peraduenture they come of thicke and three-folde

Ji Too . . . doe] *So punctuated in 13*: Too abortiue reuerend Academians,
doe 93, 94, *Gro.* 34 and] but 13.

with, but it is so vgly daubed, plaistred, and patent on, so peeuishly speckt & applyde, as if a Botcher (with a number of Satten and Veluette shreddes) should cloute and mend Leather-doublts & Cloth-breeches.

Gette you some witte in your great heades, my hotte-spurd 5
 Diuines, discredite not the Gospell: if you haue none, damme
 vp the Ouen of your vttrance, make not such a bigge sound
 with your empty vessels. At least, loue men of witte, and
 not hate them so as you doe, for they haue what you want.
 By louing them and accompanying with them, you shall 10
 both doe them good and your selues good; They of you
 shall learne sobriety and good life, you of them shal learne
 to vtter your learning, and speake mouinglie.

If you count it prophane to arte-enamel your speech to
 empeirce, and make a conscience to sweeten your tunes to 15
 catch soules, Religion (through you) shal reape infamy.
 Men are men, and with those thinges must bee mooued,
 that men wont to be mooued. They must haue a little
 Q 3^V Sugar mixt with their soure Pylls of reprdbfe; the | hookes
 must be pleasantly baited that they bite at. Those that 20
 hang forth theyr hookes and no bayte, may well enough en-
 tangle them in the weeds, (enwrap themselues in contentions,)
 but neuer winne one soule. Turne ouer the auncient Fathers,
 and marke howe sweete and honny-some they are in the
 mouth, and how musicall & melodious in the eare. No Orator 25
 was euer more pleasingly perswasieue then humble Saint
Augustine. These Atheists (with whom you are to encounter)
 are speciall men of witte. The Romish Seminaries haue not
 allured vnto them so many good wits as Atheisme. It is
 the superabundance of witte that makes Atheists : wil you 30
 then hope to beate them down with fusty brown-bread
 dorbellisme? No, no, either you must straine your wits an
 Ela aboute theyrs, and so entice them to your preachings,
 and ouer-turne them, or els with disordred hayle-shotte of
 Scriptures shall you neuer scare them. 35

Skyrmishing with Atheistes, you must behaue your selues

as you were conuerting the Gentiles. All antique hysterics you must haue at your fingers-end. No Phylosophers confession or opinion of God that you are to be ignorant in. Ethnicks with their own Ethnick weapons you must as-
5 sayle. Infinite laborinths of bookes he must runne thorough, that will be a compleate Champion in Christs Church. Let not sloth-fauouring innouation abuse you. Christ when he sayd, *You must forsake all and follow him*, meant not you should forsake all Artes and follow him.

10 *Luke* was a Physition and followed him. Physitions are the onely vp-holders of humane Artes. *Paule* was a Pharisie, & brought vp in all the knowledge of the Gentiles, and yet he was an Apostle of Iesus Christ. Though it pleased our louing crucified Lord, during his
15 residence | heere vppon earth, myraculously to inspyre Q 4
poore Fishermen, and disgregate his gifts from the ordinarie meanes, yet since his Ascention into heauen, meanelesse miracles are ceased. Certaine meanes hee hath assigned vs, which he hath promised to blesse, but without means
20 no blessing hath he warrantizd.

When the deuill woulde haue had him of stones to make Bread, he woulde in no kinde consent: no more will hee consent of blockes and stones in these dayes, to make distributers of the Bread of lyfe. What are Asses that will
35 take vppon them to preach without gyfts, but Bread made of stones? Euen as God sayde vnto *Adam*, *Hee should gette or earne his Breade with the sweate of hys browes*, so they that wil haue heauenly Bread enough to feede them-
selues and a family, (which is a Congregation or flocke,)
30 must earne it and gette it with the sweate of their browes, with long labour, study, & industry, toile and search after it.

No one Arte is there, that hath not some dependance vpon another, or to whose toppe or perfection we may climbe without steppes or degrees of the other. Humaine Artes are
35 the steppes and degrees Christ hath prescribed and assign'd vs, to climbe vp to heauen of Artes by, which is Diuinity.

He can neuer climbe to the toppe of it, which refuseth to climbe by these steppes. No knowledge but is of God. Vnworthy are wee of heauenly knowledge, if we keepe from her any one of her hand-maydes. Logique, Rethorique, History, Phylosophy, Musique, Poetry, all are the hand- 5 maides of Diuinitie. Shee can neuer be curiously drest or exquisitely accomplit, if any one of these be wanting.

God delighteth to be magnified in all his Creatures, especially in all the excellentest of his Creatures. Artes |
 Q 4 are the excellentest of hys Creatures, not one of them but 10
 Psalm 148. descended from his Throne. What sayth *Dauid* Prayse
 the Lord) *Sunne &• Moone, prayse him, ye bright stars, prayse him, heauen of heauens, and waters that be aboue the heauens.* That is, prayse the Lorde, Metaphusicall Phylosophy, which art conuersant in all these matters. Into the 15 maiestie and glory of the Sunne and Moone thou seest, the bright Starres predominance and moouing thou knowst, the heauen of heauens, and waters that be aboue the heauens, (in part though not at large) thou comprehendest : therefore prayse him in all these. Take occasion (Preachers, ao in your Sermons) from the wonders and secretes these include, to extoll his magnificent Name, and by humaine Arts abstracts to glorifie hym. *Prayse ye the Lord,* (thus *Dauid* proceedes,) *ye Dragons and all deepes, Fyre, Hayle, Snow, and vapours, stormy winds and tempests, execute his 25 word. Mountaines & hils, fruitfull trees and all Cedars: Beasts and Cattell, creeping thinges and feathered foules: Princes and ludges of the world\ young men and Maydens, olde men and chyl dren, prayse yee the Name of the Lord.*

So that it is lawfull, to execute his worde, that is, in 30 preaching of his word, by similitudes and comparisons drawne from the nature & property of all these, to laude and ampiifie the eternity of his Name. Christ, he drewe comparisons from the hayres of a mans head, from vineyards, from Fig-trees, from Sparrowes, from Lillies and a hundred 35 such like. Wee (in this age) count him a Heathen Diuine,

that alleadgeth any illustration out of humaine Authors,
& makes not al his sermons concloutments of Scripture.

Scripture we hotch-potch together, & doe not place it
like Pearle and Gold-lace on a garment, heere & there |
5 to adorne, but pile it and dunge it vp on heapes, without R ¶
vse or edification. We care not howe we mispeake it,
so we haue it to speake. Out it flyes East and West;
though we loose it all it is nothing, for more haue we of
it then we can well tell what to doe withall. Violent are
10 the most of our packe-horse Pulpit-men in vomiting theyr
duncery. Their preachings seeme rather pestilential frenzies
then any thing els. They writhe Texts lyke waxe, and
where they enuie, Scripture is theyr Champion to scold,
and though a whole month together so they should scold,
15 they woulde not want allegations to cast in one anothers
teeth. *Non fuit sic a principio*, I wis it was not so in the
Primitiue church, but in our Church euery man will be
a primate, euery man will be Lord & King ouer the flock that
he feedes, or else he will famish it. Thys is erring from
20 my scope : of the true vse of the Scripture I am to talke.

Scripture, if it be vsed otherwise then as the last scale
to confirme any thing, if it be triuially or without necessitie
cald vnto witnesse, it is a flatte taking of the Name of God
in vaine. The phrase of Sermons, as it ought to agree
35 with the Scripture, so heede must be taken, that theyr
whole Sermons seeme not a banquet of broken fragments
of Scripture: that it be not vsd but as the corner stone,
to close vp any building ; That they gather fruite and
not leaues, proofes and not phrases onely, out of the Bible.
30 As in battaile we vse the weapons and Engines of all
Nations, so embattailing our selues against sinne, we must
vse the weapons and Arts of all Nations : Scripture must
be reserued as the last volley of the victorie. It is the
great Ordinaunce which must play vppon our enemies
35 in the end & chiefe hazarde of the fight. If we refuse, with
Demosthenes, to reserue all our weightie | arguments till R ¶

the latter end, like the French-men wee shall fight valiantly at the first, but quaille in the midst.

Scripture is the chiefe power of GOD to saluation. Generals, in a pitchfield, will not thrust foorth theyr chiefe power first. By little and little, they will trayne theyr enemy 5 out of order with light onsets. Hee that will ascend, must from the low valleys creepe vp hygher and higher ; with one caper or iumpe is not the Mountaine of Theology to be scaled. This is it, I contende, that Starres haue theyr thrones of illumination allotted them in the Firmament, as 10 well as the Sunne & Moone; that humaine writers haue theyr vse of reproofing vices, as well as the Scriptures, It is an easie matter to prayse God in that wherein hee hath placed the especiall state-house of his praises. Hee which out of the barrainest and barest parts of his Lords dominion shall 15 accumulate and leuy to his Treasury a greater tribute then he hath out of his richest Prouinces, shall hee not (of all other) doe him the most remunerablest seruice? Malicious and maleuolent are they that will exclude any one Arte, or Athenian or Romane Author, any one creeping worme a or contemptible creature, from bearing witness of GOD.

Paule alleaged diuers verses out of Heathen Poets, as out of *EpemenideS*) *Aratus*, *Menander*, *Theocritus* nay, what place is it in the Scripture, where the holie Ghost doth not stoope himselfe to our capacities, by humane Metaphor's & 25 similitudes ? Our Atheist we haue in hand, with nothing but humane reasons will bee rebutted. Vaunt you yee speake from the holy Ghost neuer so, if you speake not in compasse of his fiue senses, hee will despise you, and floute you. He hearing euery one (that in the Pulpit talks 30 R a affectedly, coldly, crabbedly, or ab-|surdly,) say, Hee talks from the mouth of God, makes both an obloquy of Gods mouth and the Ministrie. But ill shall his scoffes prosper with him ; When hee thinks he hath wonne the greatest prize to his witte, in putting downe God, God in iudgement 35 shall arise and reprove him. At the day of death, and at fche day of iudgement, hee shall reprove him; sight-

killingly with his clusterd browes and clowde-begetting frownes, he shall teache him, both that he is, and what he is.

Reuerend Ecclesiasticall Fathers, and other speciall-titled
 5 Church substitutes, you it concerneth; your kingdome (by these Atheists) is called in question, in calling Gods kingdome in question. Prosecute with all your authority these *Porphirian* deriders. Imitate the Athenians, who committed *Anaxagoras* to pryson, and, but for *Pericles*, had put
 10 him to death, for writing but a Booke of the Moones eclipses, after by them shee was receiued for a Goddess. If they so farre pursued the disgrace of a feygned Goddess, be you wise as zealous in reuenging the disparagement of the true and euer-lyuing God.

15 Proclaime disputations, threaten punishments, bee vehement in your Sermons; whatsoever you write or speake, intende it against Atheisme. Atheisme hath ouer-spread vs; our ouer-throw, your ouer-throwe, it will be, except (in time) you preuent it. Fall *England*, farewell peace, woe-
 20 worth our Weale and tranquillitie, if Religion bids vs farewell. Our house shall be left desolate vnto vs, for Christ of vs is left desolate and forsaken.

The fourth sonne of Pryde is Discontent, which whom-soeuer it thoroughly enhabiteth, it carrieth cleane away to
 25 extreames. If it light on a poore man that hath | no R 2 meanes to prosecute it, it cutteth him of presentlie. If on a man of puissance, (be he not more then mother-witted circumspect,) to him and his family it is no lesse fatall. Generally it is grounded on pryde, as when a man taketh
 30 vnto him a minde aboue his byrth or fortune, and is not able to goe through with it. When hee hath resolved to prize himselfe thus great, and so great, & some man (as proude as himselfe) comes and vnderbids him, and outbraues him. And thirdly, when (on iust demerits) hee hath
 35 builded but meane hopes, and those not onely die in the dust, but hys iust demerits indignly draw vnto him vniust hatred. For such is great mens manner; any one that is

troublesome to them, or that they are indebted to, and cannot well recompence, they come to hate deadly.

There is a Discontent proceeding from a natural melancholic humour, or caused by surfet or misdiet. Some by ouer-studying come to be discontent and dogged. I haue 5 knowne many whom shrewd or light huswiues to their wiues, vnthrifft obstinate chyldren, sutes in Lawe ouer-ruled by Letters from aboue, haue caused to languish and droue away in discontent. The fruites of Discontent are bannings, cursings, secrete murmurings, out-rage, murder, iniustice, 10 all which are high treasonous trespasses against God.

The deuill is the Father of Discontent. One of the greatest miseries of the damned shall be discontent. Nothing so much prouoketh God to Judgement as discontent. Hee destroyed the chyldren of Israeli whiles the meate 15 was in their mouthes, in the Wildernes, for murmuring or being discontent: theyr discontent was sayd to afflict him. Many a tyme and oft haue they afflicted me, euen from my R 3 youth vp, saith *Dauid* in Gods person, | speaking of theyr repyning at the waters of strife. Therefore whosoouer is dis- 20 content with any crosse or calamitie the Lord layeth vppon him, afflicteth God, and must looke for speedy confusion. Nothing in this life reuengeth he so much as it. Hence it is so many stabbe, hang, and drowne themselues, and thereby endaunger theyr own soules beyond mercy. It 35 is the griuousest sentence God can pronounce against man, as to be his owne Executioner: whereby it appeareth that Discontent is the griuousest sinne that man can commit.

When did you euer heare of any but the discontented 30 man, that offered violence to himselfe? What is the sinne against the holy Ghost, (which *Augustine* concludeth to be nothing but *Desperatio morientis* to gyue vp a mans soule in despayre,) but a speciall branch of discontent? Wherefore did our Sauour thunder foorth such a terrible woe 35 against the causers of offence, or discontent, but that it was

the most heynous scourge-procuring transgression of all others ?

Ionas, the Lords annoynted Prophet, for he was discontent, and grugged when he should haue beene sent vnto 5 *Niniui*, had a torment like hel (for the time) inflicted vpon hym. In the Whales belly, full of horror, dispaire, stinche, and darknes, three dayes and three nights hee was shut. Hardly can GOD abstaine from throwing any man downe into Hell, that is vpbraidingly discontent. As the merry 10 man (of all other) best thriueth in that he goes about, so the discontented man (of all other) is most fore-spoken and vnluckie in hys enterprises. Fewe discontented men shall you obserue, that gyue vp the ghost in theyr bedds.

There is a Discontent contrary to Pryde, which is most 15 pleasing to GOD: which is when a man grieues | and is R 3^v discontent, because he cannot chuse but sinne and rebell against God. As also when he is wearied and discontent with the vanities of the world. So was the *Preacher*•, when he cryed, *Vanity of vanities, & all thing is vanitie.*

20 There is a tollerable Discontent likewise, which *Dauid* and *Iob* had, when they complayned that the Tabernacles of Robbers did prosper, and they were in safetie that prouokt God. But so little of this true discontent is there in *London*, that (almost) there is no content in it, but in 35 robbing and prouoking God. *Sinne is no sin*, (saith an auncient Father,) *except it be voluntary, and wee take a content in committing it.* Who is there that oppresseth, committeth adultery, is prodigall, sweareth, or forsweareth, but taketh a content in committing it? There wee place content, 30 where we should take vp discontent, and there are we discontent, where wee shoulde repose our whole gladnes and felicity. We are discontent if wee heare our sinnes ryp t vp sharply. We are discontent if we be detained in the seruice of God but halfe an houre extraordinary. We are discon- 35 tent if we be constrained to gyue to the poore. Euery man heere in *London* is discontent with the state wherein

17 As also] Also 13. 19 things] is Gro.

K 2

hee Hues. Euery one seeketh to vndermine another. No two of one trade, but as they are of one trade, enuy one another. Not two conioyned in one office, but ouerwhart & emulate one another, and one of them vndoes what the other hath done. 5

The Court is the true kingdom of discontent. There Pryde rainging most, Discontent cannot chuse but be a hanger on. No conspiracie or warre (ciuil or outward) but first springeth from dyscontent. What makes a number R 4 of our wanton wiues in *London* conspyre the | deaths of 10 theyr old doting husbands, but the discontent of a death-cold bed? Dyscontent makes Hereticks. Discontent is the cause of all the Traytors beyond Sea. Discontent caused *Ierusalem*s house to be left desolate vnto her. Dyscontent (*6 London*) will be thy destitution, if thou takest 15 not the better heede.

The fift Sonne of Pryde is Contention, which beeing the kept youngest sonne hee hath, is harder to bee yoked or in, then any of the other foure. It is euer in Armes, neuer out of brabblements. Looke what Ambition, Vaine-glory, 20 Atheisme, Discontent, shal consult or deuise, it enacteth and goes thorowe with. It is the Lawyers lyuing, the Hereticks foode, the Swizers house and Lande. No Crowne but hee challengeth a share in. No Church but hee will be of. On words, amphibologies, aequiuocations, quiddities and 25 quantities, he stands. Hee hunteth not aftertruth, but strife. He coueteth not so much to ouer-come, as contend.

These two lyttle words, *Ex* and *Per*, (as *Cornelius Agrippa* hath obserued,) held the Greeke & Latine Churches play, many yeeres together; they litigiously debating, 30 whether the holy Ghost proceeded of the Father and the Sonne, or not of the Sonne, but of the Father by the Sonne. So thys word *Nisi* in thys sentence, *Nisi manducaueritis carnem*, sette all the Counsayle of *Basill* in an vproare. Thys word *Donec*, as, *Ioseph non agnouit vxorem suam donec*, 35 *Ioseph* knewe not hys wife vntill, caused the *Antidicomaria-*

tans and *Eluidians* to denie the perpetuall virginity of the Virgine *Mary*. With a thousand such errors, Contention rayseth his Kingdome.

Our Diuines in these dayes (though they yet retaine
 5 many contentions of the olde Churches) haue founde out
 certaine newe ones of theyr owne. They contende | about R 4
 standing and sitting, about formes & substances, about
 prescription and confusion of prayers. They argue, *An ater*
sit contrarius albo, whether it bee better to weare a white
 10 Surplesse, or a black gowne, in ministring the Sacraments.
 Which is like the conflict in Rome betwixt the *Augustine*
 Fryers and the vulgar Chanons, whether *Augustine* did
 weare a blacke Weede vppon a white Coate, or a white
 Weede vppon a blacke Coate. Lyke the Geometritians,
 15 they square about poynts and lynes, and the vtter shew of
 things. As, this poynt is too-long, thys poynt is too-short,
 thys figure is too-much affected, thys lyne runnes not
 smooth, thys sillogisme limpeth. As Preachers, they labour
 not to speake properly, but intricately. In steade of Bread,
 20 they gyue the chyldren of theyr Ministry stones to throwe
 at one another; and in stead of Fish, Serpents to sting
 one another. In the 13. of *Mathew*, the Sower that went
 forth to sow, scattered some seede by the High-way side,
 which the Foules of the ayre peckt vp ; not vnlike to them
 25 whose Hawkes and Field-sports peck vp all the seedes of
 Christianity that should be sowne in theyr harts, And a
 myllion of others, whose eyes the Foules of the valley
 pecke out, before the seede of saluation can haue any
 rooting in theyr soules.

30 Other seede the Sower scattred amongst stones, and,
 the Sunne arising, it withered for want of earth, resembling
 these stony streetes of *London*, where nothing will spring
 vp but oppression, auarice, and infidelity. Other seede he
 disperst amongst thornes, and the thornes crept aloft and
 35 choked it. To those thornes I compare these thorny Con-
 tentioners, that choake the Word of God with foolish

controuersies and friuolous questions. Euen as the spyrite
 S i ledde our Sauiour aside into the Wil-|dernesse to bee
 tempted, so are there wicked spyrites of Contention amongst
 vs, that leade men aside into the woods and solitary places
 to be tempted. Let any (bee he the veriest block-head 5
 vnder heauen) raise vp a faction, and he shall be followd
 & supported. Englishmen are al for innouatio, they are
 cleane spoiled if once in 20. yeres they haue not a new
 fashion of religion. Somtimes *Vitia sunt ad virtutem*
occasio, Contention is the occasion of seeking out the 10
 truth: but our Contentions (for the most part) are the
 seeking to proue truth, no truth, after shee is once founde
 out: and preferring probability before manifest verity.
 We will not try her by her Peeres, (which are the best
 expositers,) and auncient Fathers, but by the litterall Law, 15
 eyther not expounded, or newe expounded, without any
 Quest of Church decretals or Cannons.

Were it not that in reprouing Contention I might haply
 seeme contentious, I woulde wade a little farther in thys sub-
 iect. Yet it were to no end, since fire, the more it is styrred 20
 vppe, the more it burneth; and heresie, the more it is stird
 and stroue with, the more vntoward it is. Nought but sharpe
 discipline is a fitte disputant with snarling Scismatiques.
 The Israelites, for they rooted not out the remnant of the
 Gentile Nations fro amongst them, they were as goades in 25
 theyr sides, and thornes in their nostrils: so if wee roote not
 out these remnants of Scismatiques from amongst vs, they
 will be as goades in our sides, and thornes in our nostrils.
Melius est vt per eat vnus, quam vt per eat vnitas: It is better
 that some fewe perrish, then vnity perrish. 30

London, beware of Contention; thou art counted the
 nursing-mother of Contention. No Sect or Scisme but
 thou affordest Disciples to. If thou beest too greedie of |
 S i^v innouation and contention, the sword of inuasion and
 ciuill debate shall leaue thy house desolate vnto thee. 35

Nowe come I to the Daughters of Pryde, whereof Dis-
 daïne is the eldest.

Disdayne is a vjce in comparison of which Ambition is a vertue. It is the extreame of Ambition. It is a kind of scorne, that scorneth to be compared to any other thing. None are more subiect vnto it then fayre women, for they
 5 disdaine any one shoulde be helde as fayre as they. They disdaine any should goe before them, or sit about them. They disdayne any shoulde be brauer then they, or haue more absolute pennes entertaynd in theyr prayes then they. Thys woman disdaines any but she should carry
 10 the credite of wit: another, that any shoulde sing so sweet as shee ; a thyrd, that any should sette forth the porte and maiestie in gate and behaiour like vnto her. Onely for disdaine and preheminance, theyr Husbands and theyr Loues they draw sundry times into neuer dated quarrels.
 15 Such disdayne and scorne was betwixt the wiues of *Iacob*, *Rachell* and *Leah*, because the one had chyl dren, and the other none. Such disdayne was betwixt *Sarah* and *Hagar*. There was a disdaine or shouldring amongst the Disciples, who should be greatest. *Iosephs* Brethren disdained theyr
 20 Father should loue hym better then he did them. *Diues* disdayned *Lazarus*. In *London*, the ritch disdayne the poore. The Courtier the Cittizen. The Cittizen the Countriman. One Occupation disdayneth another. The Merchant the Retayler. The Retayler the Craftsman.
 25 The better sort of Craftsmen the baser. The Shoomaker the Cobler. The Cobler the Carman. One nyce Dame disdaynes her next neighbour shoulde haue that furniture to her house, or dainty dishe or deuise, | which she wants, s a
 Shee will not goe to Church, because shee disdaines to
 30 mixe herselfe with base company, and cannot haue her close Pue by herselfe. Shee disdaines to weare that euery one weares, or heare that Preacher which euery one heares. So did *Ierusalem* disdaine Gods Prophets, because they came in the likenesse of poore men. Shee disdayned
 35 *Amos*, because he was a keeper of Oxen, as also the rest, *Amos*, i. for they were of the dregges of the people; But theyr

disdayne prosperd not with thg, theyr house, for theyr disdayne, was left desolate vnto them.

London, thy house, (except thou repents,) for thy dysdayne, shall be left desolate vnto thee.

The second Daughter of Pryde is Gorgeous attyre. 5 Both the Sonnes and Daughters of Pride delight to goe gorgeously. As *Democritus* sette vp hys brasen shield against the Sunne, to the intent that (continually gazing on it) he might with the bright reflection of his beamy radiation seare out hys eyes and see no more vanities, 10 so sette they theyr ritche embroydred sutes against the Sunne, to dazle, daunt, and spoyle poore mens eyes that looke vpon them. Lyke Idols, not men, they apparraile themselues. Blocks and stones by the Panims & Infidels are ouer-gilded, to be honored and worshipped: so ouer- 15 gilde they themselues, to bee more honoured and worshipped.

The women would seeme Angels heere vpon earth, for which (it is to be feared) they will scarce lyue wyth the Angels in heauen. The ende of Gorgeous attyre (both in men and women) is but more fully to enkindle fleshly 20 concupiscence, to assist the deuill in lustful temptations. Men thinke that women (seeing them so sumptuously S 2 pearled & bespangled) cannot chuse but offer | to tender theyr tender soules at theyr feete. The weomen, they thinke that (hauing naturally cleere beauty, scortchingly 25 blazing, which enkindles any soule that comes neere it, and adding more Bauiues vnto it of lasciuious embolstrings) men should euen flash their harts (at first sight) into the purified flames of theyr faire faces.

Euer since *Euah* was tempted, and the Serpent preuailed 30 with her, weomen haue tooke vpon them both the person of the tempted and the tempter. They tempt to be tempted, and not one of them, except she be tempted, but thinkes herselfe contemptible. Vnto the greatnesse of theyr great Grand-mother *Euah*, they seeke to aspire, 35 in being tempted and tempting. If not to tempt and be

thought worthy to be tempted, why dye they & diet they
 their faces with so many drugges as they doe, as it were
 to correct Gods work-manship, and reprooue him as
 a bungler, and one that is hot his crafts Maister? Why
 5 ensparkle they they eyes with spiritualiz'd distillations?
 Why tippe they they tongues with *Aurum potabilet*
 Why fill they vp ages frets with fresh colours? Euen
 as Roses and flowers in Winter are preserued in close
 houses vnder earth, so preserue they their beauties by
 10 continuall lying in bed.

Iust to Dinner they will arise, and after Dinner goe
 to bedde againe, and lye vntill Supper. Yea, sometimes
 (by no sicknes occasioned) they will lye in bedde three
 dayes together: prouided euery morning before foure
 15 a clock, they haue theyr brothes & theyr Cullises, with
 Pearle and Gold sodden in them, If haply they breake
 theyr houres and rise more earlie to goe a banquetting,
 they stande practising halfe a day with theyr Looking-
 glasses, howe to peirce and to glaunce and looke allu-
 20 ringly amiable. Theyr feete are not so wel framed to S 3
 the Measures, as are theyr eyes to moue and bewitch.
 Euen as Angels are painted in Church-windowes with
 glorious golden fronts besette with Sunne-beames, so
 beset they theyr fore-heads on eyther side with glorious
 25 borrowed gleamy bushes; which, rightly interpreted, shold
 signifie beauty to sell, since a bushe is not else hanged
 forth but to inuite men to buy. And in *Italy*, when they
 sette any Beast to sale, they crowne his heade with Garlands,
 and be-deck it with gaudy blossoms, as full as euer it may
 30 stick.

Theyr heads, with theyr top and top gallant Lawne
 baby-caps, and Snow-resembled siluer curlings, they make
 a playne Puppet stage of. Theyr breasts they embuske
 vp on hie, and theyr round Roseate buds immodestly lay
 35 foorth, to shew at theyr handes there is fruite to be hoped.

In theyr curious Antick-wouen garments, they imitate

and mocke the Wormes and Adders that must eat them. They shew the swellings of their mind, in the swellings and plumpings out of theyr apparrayle. Gorgeous Ladies of the Court, neuer was I admitted so neere any of you, as to see how you torture poore olde Time with spunging, 5 pynning, and pounsing; but they say, his side you haue burst in twaine, to make your Periwigs more eleuated arches of.

I dare not meddle with yee, since the Phylosopher that too intentiuely gaz'd on the starres stumbled & fell into 10 a ditch; and many gazing too immoderatly on our earthly starres, fal in the end into the ditch of all vncleanesse. Onely thys humble caueat let me giue you by the way, that you looke the deuill come not to you in the likenes of a Tayler or Painter; that howe euer you disguise your 15
S 3, bodies, you lay not on your colours so thick | that they sincke into your soules. That your skinnes being too white without, your soules be not al fclack within.

It is not your pinches, your purles, your floury laggings, superfluous enterlacings, and puffings vppe, that can any a way offend God, but the puffings vppe of your soules, which therein you expresse. For as the byting of a bullet is not that which poysons the bullet, but the lying of the Gunpowder in the dint of the byting: so it is not the wearing of costly burnisht apparraile that shall be obiected 25 vnto you for sinne, but the pryde of your harts, which (like the Moath) lyes closely shrouded amongst the thrids of that apparraile. Nothing els is garish apparraile, but Prydes vlcer broken forth. How will you attyre your selues, what gowne, what head-tyre will you put on, when 30 you shall lyue in Hell amongst Haggas and deuils?

As many iaggas, blysters, and scarres, shall Toades, Cankers, and Serpents, make on your pure skinnes in the graue, as nowe you haue cuts, iaggas, or raysings, vpon your garments. In the marrow of your bones snakes shall 35 breede. Your morne-like christall countenaunces shall be
4 of Court 77. 14 that thou looke !!. 21 puffing 13. 34 vp on 93, 94.

netted ouer and (Masker-like) cawle-visarded with crawl-
 ing venomous wormes. Your orient teeth Toades shall
 steale into theyr heads for pearle; Of the ielly of your
 decayed eyes shall they engender them young. In theyr
 5 hollowe Caues, (theyr transplendent iuyce so pollutionately
 employd,) shelly Snayles shall keepe house.

O, what is beauty more then a wind-blowne bladder, that
 it should forget whereto it is borne? It is the foode of
 cloying-concupiscence, lyuing, and the substaunce of the
 10 most noysome infection, beeing dead. The Mothers | of 84
 the iustest men are not freed from corruption, the Mothers
 of Kings and Emperours are not freed fro corruption. No
 gorgeous attire (man or woman) hast thou in thys world,
 but the wedding garment of fayth. Thy winding-sheete
 15 shall see thee in none of thy silks or shyning robes; To
 shew they are not of God, when thou goest to God, thou
 shalt lay them all of. Then shalt thou restore to euey
 creature what thou hast robd him of. All the Leases which
 dust let out to life, at the day of death shall be returned
 20 againe into his hands. In skinnes of beastes *Adam* and
Eue were clothed; in nought but thyne owne skinne at the
 day of ludgement shalt thou be clothed. If thou beest
 more deformed then the age wherin thou diedst shold make
 thee, the deuil shall stand vp and certifie, that with payntmg
 25 & phisicking thy visage thou so deformedst it; Wherto
 God shall reply, What haue I to doe with thee, thou painted
 sepulcher? Thou hast so differenced & diuorced thy selfe
 from thy creation, that I know thee not for my creature.

The print of my finger thou hast defaced, and wyth Arts-
 30 vanishing varnishment made thy selfe a changeling from
 the forme I first cast thee in; Sathan, take her to thee,
 with blacke boyling Pitch rough cast ouer her counterfeite
 red and white; and whereas she was wont in Asses mylke
 to bathe her, to engraine her skyn more gentle, plyant,
 35 delicate, and supple, in bubling scalding Lead, and fatty
 flame-feeding Brimstone, see thou vncessantly bathe her.

With glowing hote yrons, sindge and sucke vp that adulterized sinfull beauty, where-with she hath branded herselfe to infelicity.

O female pride, this is but the dalliance of thy doome, but the intermissiue recreation of thy torments. The great-
 S 4 nesse of thy paynes I want portentous wordes to [portray. Wherein soeuer thou hast tooke extreame delight and glory, therein shalt thou be plagued with extreame & despiteous malady. For thy flaring frounzed Periwigs lowe dangled downe with loue-locks, shalt thou haue thy head side 10 dangled downe with more Snakes then euer it had hayres. In the moulde of thy braine shall they claspe theyr mouthes, and gnawing through euery parte of thy scull, ensnarle their teeth amongst thy braines, as an Angler
 15 ensnarleth his hooke amongst weedes.

For thy rich borders, shalt thou haue a number of discoloured Scorpions rould vp together, and Cockatrices, that kill with their verie sight, shall continually stand spirting fiery poysen in thine eyes. In the hollowe Caue of thy mouth, Basiliskes shall keepe house, & supply thy talke with 20 hyssing when thou striuest to speake. At thy breasts (as at *Cleopatras*\ Aspisses shall be put out to nurse. For thy Carcanets of pearle, shalt thou haue Carcanets of Spyders, or the greene venemous flies Cantharides. Hels torments were no torments, if inuention might conceite the. As no 25 eye hath seene, no eare hath heard, no tongue can expresse, no thought comprehend, the ioyes prepared for the Elect, so no eye hath seene, no eare hath heard, no thought can comprehend, the pains prepared for the reiected.

Weomen, as the paines of the deuils shal be doubled, 3^o that goe about hourelie tempting, and seeking whom they may deuoure, so except you soone lay holde on grace, your paines in hell (aboue mens) shal be doubled, for millions haue you tempted, millions of men (both in soule & substance) haue you deuoured. To you, halfe your husbands 35 damnation (as to *Euah*) will be imputed. Pryde is your
 T i naturall sinne ; that woman you account as | common, which

is not coy & proude. Woman-head you deeme nothing els but a disdainfull maiesticall cariage. Beeing but a ribbe of man, you will thinke to ouer-rule him you ought to be subiect too. Watch ouer your pathes, looke to your
 5 waies, leas the Serpent (long since) hauing ouer-maistred one of you, ouer-maister all of you, one after another. Banish Pride from your Bours, and the lineall discents of your other sinnes are cut of; you will seeme Saints and not women. But for you, men woulde nere be so proude, nere
 to care to goe so gorgeously, nere fetch so many newfangles from other Countries; you haue corrupted them, you haue tempted them, halfe of your pride you haue deuided with them. No Nation hath any excesse but they haue made it theirs. Certaine glasses there are, wherein a man seeth
 15 the image of another, & not his owne: those glasses are their eyes, for in the they see the image of other Countries, and not their owne. Other Countries fashions they see, but neuer looke backe to the attyre of their fore-fathers, or consider what shape their own Country shold giue them.

ao *Themistocles* put all his felicitie in beeing discended from a noble lynage. *Simonides*, to be well-beloued of his people or Cittizens. *Antistines*, in renowne after hys death. *Englishmen* put all their felicitie in going pompously and garishly: they care not how they impouerish their sub-
 25 stance, to seeme ritche to the outwarde apperaunce.

What wise man is there that makes the case or couer of any thing ritche then the thing it selfe which it containeth or couereth? Our garments (which are cases and couers for our bodies) we compact of Pearle and golde, our bodies
 30 themselues are nought but clay and putrifaction. |

If (as the case or couer of any thing keeps it fro dust or T i^v from soyling) so our costly skinne-cases could keepe vs from consuming to dust, or beeing sinne-soyled, it were some-what: but they (contrariwise) resoluē into dust; they
 35 are no Armour against old age, but such as are harmed by

10 gorgeously, nere] *Gro.*: gorgeously. Nere *Q.* 22 *Antistines]*
Antistifanes Gro.

olde age. They weare away with continuance, euen as Time doth weare and fore-welke vs ; Our soules they keepe not from sinne-soyling, but are the onely instruments so to soile and sinne-eclipse them. They are a second flesh-assisting prison and further corrupting weight of corruption 5 cast on our soules to keepe them from soaring to heauen.

Decke our selues how we will, in all our royaltie, wee cannot equalize one of the Lillies of the field; as they wither, so shall we wanze and decay, and our place no more be found. Though our span-long youthly prime blossomes 10 fourth eye-banqueting flowers, though our delicious gleaming features make vs seeme the Sonnes and Daughters of the Graces, though we glister it neuer so in our worme-spunne robes and golde-florisht garments, yet in the graue shall we rotte: from our redolentest refined compositions, 15 ayre pestilenzing stincks .and breath-choking poysnous vapours shall issue.

England, the Players stage of gorgeous attyre, the Ape of all Nations superfluities, the continuall Masquer in outlandish habilements, great plenty-scanting calamities art as thou to await, for wanton disguising thy selfe against kind, and digressing from the plainnesse of thine Auncesters. Scandalous and shamefull is it, that not anie in thee (Fishermen & Husbandmen set aside) but lyue about their ability and birth ; That the outward habite (which in other as Countries is the only distinction of honour) shoulde yeele
T a in thee no difference of persons: | that all thy auncient Nobilitie (almost), with this gorgeous prodigalitie, should be deuoured and eaten vppe, and vp-starts inhabite their stately Pallaces, who from farre haue fetcht in this varietie 30 of pride to entrappe and to spoyle them. Those of thy people that in all other things are miserable, in their apparraile will be prodigal. No Lande can so vnfallibly experience this Prouerbe, *The hoode makes not the Moncke* > as thou ; for Tailers, Seruing-men, Make-shifts, and Gentle- 35 men, in thee are confounded. For the compasment of
a fore-walke 13. 10 span long 93, 94. 27 thy] om. 13.

brauery, we haue the will robbe, steale, cosen, cheate, betray
 theyr owne Fathers, swear and for-swear, or doe any
 thing. Take away brauerie, you kill the hart of lust and
 incontinenzie. Wherefore doe men make themselues braue,
 5 but to riot and to reuell? Looke after what state they
 apparraile is, that state they take to them and carry,
 and after a little accustomed to that carriage, perswade
 themselues they are such indeede.

Apparraile, more then any thing, bewrayeth his wearers
 10 minde. All sorts couet in it to exceede. Olde age I ex-
 clude, for that couets nought but gold couetise. None (in a
 manner) fore-cast for their soules, they suffer them to goe
 naked, with no good deeds will they cloth them. They let
 them freeze to death for want of the garment of faith; they
 35 famish and staruethem, in not supplying them with ghostly
 cherishment. O soule, of all humaine parts the most di-
 uinest and soueraignest, of all the rest art thou the most
 despicable and wretched! Not any part of the bodie but
 thou consultest and carest for. To euerie part is thy care
 40 more auailable then thy selfe. Impart but the tenths of
 it on thy selfe, be not more curious of a wimple or spot in thy
 vesture, then thou art of spotting and thorow-stayning thy
 deere bought Spyrīt with ten | thousand abhominations. T 24
 Whiles the good Angell of mercy stirres about the blood-
 35 springing Poole of expiation, haste thou to bathe in it.
 Thou canst not bathe in it effectually, vnlesse thou strippe
 thy selfe cleane out of the attyre of sinne. All gorgeous
 attire is the attire of sinne.

The frayle flesh wherein thou art inuested is nothing but
 30 a sin-battred Armour, with many strokes of temptations
 assaulted and brused, to breake in to thee & surpryse thee.
 Watch & pray, that thou be not surprisid. In vaine is thy
 prayer against sinne, except thou watchest also to preuent
 sinne. We heere in *London*, what for dressing our selues,
 35 following our worldly affayres, dyning, supping, and keeping
 company, haue no leysure, not onely not to watch against

sinne, but not so much as once to thinke of sinne. In bedde, wiues must question their Husbands about house-keeping, and prouiding for their children and familie. No seruice must God expect of vs, but a little in Lent, & in sicknes and aduersity. Our gorgeous attyre we make not 5 to serue him, but to serue the flesh. If he were pleased with it, why did they euer in the old Law, (when they presented themselues before him, in fasting and prayer,) rent it of theyr backs, & put on course Sack-cloth and ashes? No lifting vppe a mans selfe that God likes, but 10 the lifting vp of the Spyrite in prayer.

One thing it is for a man to lift vp himselfe to God, another thing to lift vp himselfe against God. In prancking vp our carcasses too proudly, we lift vp our flesh against God. In lifting vp our flesh, we depresse our Spyrites. 15 *London*, lay of thy gorgeous attyre, and cast downe thy selfe before God in contrition and prayer, least hee cast thee downe in his indignation into hell-fire. |

T 3 Greeuously hast thou offended, and transgressed against his diuine maiestie, in turning that to pryde which was allotted thee for a punishment. His workmanshpype thou hast scorned, and counted imperfect without thyne owne additions put to it. Thou hast cotended to bee a more beautiful! Creator and repolisher of thy selfe, then hee. His owne workmanshippe thou hast made him out of loue 25 with, by altering & deforming it at thy pleasure. There is no workman that regardeth or esteemeth his owne workmanship after it is translated and transposed by others. Except thou quickly vndoest and with-drawest all thy ouer-working, he will (in wreakfull recompence that thou hast so disgrac't 30 him) alter thee, deforme thee, translate thee, transpose thee, and leaue thy house desolate vnto thee.

The last Daughter of Pride is Delicacie, vnder which is contained Gluttony, Luxury, Sloth, & Security. But properly, Delicacie is the sinne of our *London* Dames. So 35 delicate are they in their dyet, so dainty and puling fine in their speech, so typtoe-nyce in treading on the earth, as

though they walke vpon Snakes, and feard to treade hard, least they shoulde turne againe. Their houses so pickedly and neatly must be trickt vp and tapistred, as if (like *Abraham* or *Lot*) they were to receiue Angels: the floare 5 vnder foote, glisteringly rubbed and glased, that a lew (if he should behold it) would suspect it for Holy ground.

Nothing about them but is wealth-boastingly & elaborately beautified: onely their soules they keepe poore and beggerly. *Iob* scrypt his sores with a potshard; if they 10 haue any sore or noysome maladie about them, they will ouer-gilde it, and make it seeme more amiable then any other parte of theyr body. Their habitations they | make T 3^v so resplendent and pleasurable on earth, that they haue no mind to goe to heauen. Into heauens pleasures they can- 15 not see, for their eyes are dazeled with terrestriall delights. Those that will haue theyr harts thorowlie enflamed with the ioyes of the worlde to come, must place no ioy in this world, nor frame to themselues anie obiet that may too much cotent. They must haue something euer-more to 20 amate and check their felicity, and, wyth Macedon *Phillip*, to remember them of mortalitie.

Delicacy is nought but the art of security, and forgetting mortalitie. It is a kind of Alchymical quintessensing a heauen out of earth. It is the exchaunging of an 25 eternall heauen for a short, momentary, imperfect heauen. Blessed are they that by pining and excruciating theyr bodies, lyue in hell heere on earth, to auoyd the hell neuer ending. Many of the Saints and Martyrs of the Primitiue Church, when they might haue spent theyr daies in all 30 affluence and delicacy, and lyu'd out of gunshot of misery, haue, notwithstanding, tooke vnto them the contemptiblest pouerty that might be.

They haue abandoned all theyr goods and possessions, and in the Wildernesse conuersed with pennury and scarcity, 35 to beate downe and keepe vnder theyr rebellious flesh. Some of them haue drunke puddle water, and fed on the

4 Angels. The *Q.* la theyr] they 93', 94.: the 13. 15 terrestriall *Gro.*

lothsomest things that might be, to bring their affection out of loue with this transitory infelicitie. Some of them haue grated and rawed theyr smooth tender skinnes with hayre shirts and rough garments, that they might Hue in vncessant smart, & take no ease or rest in thys life, where no rest or 5 ease is to be taken vppe, but onely a watch-mans lodge, to soiurne in for a nyght, or such a house as the Moath buildeth in a garment. |

T4 Others, all naked, on sharpe shreds of broken flint & fragmets of potsheards, haue spread theyr weary limbes, 10 that lust in theyr sleepe might not assaile them. Holy S. *Jerome*, in the Desert thou builts thee a Cell, to Hue out of the haunts of concupiscence, where parched & broiled in Sommer with the raging beames of the Sunne, & quiuering and quaking in Winter, all riued and weather-beaten with 15 the sharpe dryuing shours & freezing Northren-winde, thou drunkest no kind of liquor but the Ice-chylled water from the cold Fountaine, nor eats any meate but tough dried rootes. On the bare ground thou lodgedst, and with abstinence and want of sleepe lookedst pale and wanne. 20 Thys didst thou to mortifie thy insurrectiue masse of corruption. This didst thou to teach mortification & sobriety to these licentious times of ours.

No course doe we take to mortifie the Lawe of our members: all mortification we censure by the name of 35 superstition: our fasts are no fasts, but preparatiues to Euening feastes: our mourning is like the mourning of an Heyre, who then laughs inward, when hee weepes most outward. It is not prayer alone may kill the olde man in vs; eyther it must be sanctified and assisted with fasting & 30 abstinence, or it cannot cast out a spyrit of such might. It is heauenly policie, as well as humaine policie, to weaken our enemy before we fight with him. Wee must weaken our enemy & Gods enemy, the flesh, with abstinence and fasting, before wee fight with him, or els he will be to strong 35 for vs.

Physitions minister Purgations before they apply any

Medicine. Surgions lay Corsiues to any wounde, to eat out the dead-flesh, ere they can cure it. Abstinence and fasting are as Corsiues to eat out the dead-flesh of | gluttony, drunkennes, and concupiscence in our loynes, T 4^V
 5 which so projected and eaten out, Christ is that kind Samaritan that will come and bind vp our wounds, & carrie vs home with him to his house or Kingdome euerlasting. Thus much of Delicacy in generall: nowe more particularly of hys first branch, Gluttony; which if any Country vnder 10 heauen be culpable of, *England* is.

All our friendship & curtesie is nothing but gluttony. Great men shew their state and magnificence in nothing so much as gluttony. The byrth day of our Sauour, his Resurrection and Ascention, wee honour onely with glut-
 15 tony. How many Cookes, Apothecaries, Confectioners, and Vintners in London, grow pursie by gluttonie? Vnder Gluttony, I shrowde not onely excesse in meate, but in drinke also. Our full platters and our plentifull cuppes vnapt vs to any exercise of Christianitie or prayer. We
 20 doe nothing but fatten our soules to Hell-fire. Our bodies we bumbast and balist with engorging diseases. Diseases shorten our daies; therefore whosoever englutte himselfe is guilty of hys owne death & damnation.

Qui diligit epulas (sayth *Salomon*) *in egestate erit.* Hee Prou. 21.
 25 that loueth dainty fare shall feele scarcity. *Venter mxro* Ierom. ad *xstians dispumat libidinem*, The belly abounding with wine Eustoch. and good cheere vomiteth forth lust. Gluttony were no sinne, or not so heynous as it is, dyd it not pluck on a number of other heynous sinnes with it: or that wee so
 30 engorging our selues, infinite of our poore bretheren hungerd & staru'd not in the streetes, for want of the least dish on our Tables. Very largely haue I inueighed against this vice elsewhere, wherefore heere I will trusse it vp more surcinct; Text vpdn text I coulede heape, to shewe the
 35 inconuenience of it. In *London* I | could exemplify it by v i many note-worthy specialities, but in so dooing I shoulde

but lay downe what euery one knowes, and purchase no thanke for my labour.

To my iourneys end I haste, & discend to the second continent of Delicacie, which is Lust or Luxury. In complayning of it, I am afrayd I shall defile good words, and 5 too-long detayne my Readers. It is a sinne that nowe serueth in *London* in steade of an after-noonnes recreation. It is a trade that heeretofore thriued in hugger-mugger, but of late dayes walketh openly by day light, like a substantiall graue Merchant. Of hys name or profession hee 10 is not ashamed: at the first beeing askt of it, he will confesse it. Into the hart of the Citty is vncleannesse crept Great Patrons it hath gotte: almost none are punisht for it that haue a good purse. Euery queane vaunts herselfe of some or other man of Nobility. 15

London, what are thy Suburbs but licensed Stewes? Can it be so many brothel-houses of salary sensuality & sixe-penny whoredome (the next doore to the Magistrates) should be sette vp and maintained, if brybes dyd not bestirre them? I accuse none, but certainly iustice somewhere is corrupted. Whole Hospitals of tenne times a day dishonested strumpets haue we cloystred together. Night and day the entrance vnto them is as free as to a Tauerne. Not one of them but hath a hundred retayners. Prentises and poore Seruants they encourage to robbe theyr Masters. Gentlemens purses and pockets they will diue into and picke, euen whiles they are dallying with them.

No Smithfield ruffianly Swashbuckler will come of with such harshe hell-raking othes as they. Euery one of them is a Gentlewoman, and eyther the wife of two 30 V i^v husbands, or a bedde-wedded Bride before shee was | tenne yeeres old. The speech-shunning sores and sight-irking botches of theyr vnsatiate intemperance, they will vnblushingly lay foorth and iestingly brag of, where euer they haunt. To Church they neuer repaire. Not in all theyr 35 whole life would they heare of GOD, if it were not for their huge swearing and forswearing by him.

I am halfe of beliefe it is not a reasonable soule which effecteth motion and speech in them, but a soule-imitating deuill, who (the more to despite God) goes and enlyueth such licentious shapes, and (in them) enacteth more ab-
 5 homination and villany then hee coulde in the euillest of euill functions, which is, in deuilling it simply. I wonder there is any of these shee retayling bodie-traffiquers, which when a man commeth to try the, will easily credite him to be a man, & not rather suspect hym to be a forme-shyfting
 10 deuill, disguised in mans lykenesse. Vtterly are they giuen ouer to the deuill, and he is theyr God, since they serue him & not God. With many of their mercenary predecessors, in the proportion of men, haue deuils had carnall copulation. A guilty conscience hath occasion to distrust
 15 euery thing.

Sathan would thinke it a dishonour to him, if hee should not tempt & winne vnto him those who weake-witted man can tempt and winne vnto him. Neuer will they resist sathans temptations that cannot resist the temptations of
 20 a fleshly tongue. In a damnable state are you, 6 yee excrementall vessels of lust. In selling your bodies to sinne, you sell them to the deuill, and with a little money hee buyes them at your hands from Christ, that payd so deere a pryce for them. Halfe a Crowne or little more
 25 (or some-times lesse) is the sette pryce of a strumpets soule. The deuill needeth neuer to tempt her, | when for v. a
 so small a value he may haue her. Wee hate and cry out against them that like Turkes and Moores sell their Christian bretheren as slaues: how much more ought wee to
 30 hate & cry out against them that sel themselues and their soules vnto sinne as slaues? Those skin-playstring Painters (of whom in the treaty of gorgeous attyre we dilated) doe not so much alter Gods image, (by artificiall ouer-beautifying their bodies,) as these doe, by debasing themselues to
 55 euery one that brings coyne.

Ere they come to forty, you shall see them worne to the

2 soule imitating Q. 2-3 imitating the diuel !.

bare bone. At twenty their liuely colour is lost, their faces are sodden & perboyld with French surfets. That colour on their cheekes you behold superficializd, is but sir lohn whites, or sir lohn Red-caps liury. The Alcumist of Quicksiluer makes gold. These, (our openers to all 5 commers,)with quickning & conceiuing, getgold. The soules they bring forth, at the latter day, shall stande vp and giue euidence against them. The deuill, to enfranchise them of hell, shall doe no more but produce the misbegotten of theyr loynes. Those that haue beene daily Fornicatresses 10 and yet are vnfruitfull, hee shall accuse of ten thousand murders, by confusion of seedes and barraying their wombes by drugges. There is no such murderer on the face of the earth as a whore. Not onely shall she be araigned and impeached of defeating an infinite number 15 of Gods images ; but of defacing and destroying the moule, wherin he hath appointed them to be cast.

To whom much is given, of them shall much bee required. God, hauing giuen them excellent gifts of beauty & wit, requireth at theyr hands excellent increase of the, which 20 when he shall find contrary, he will conuert the excesse |
 v a^y of his graces and gyfts to the excesse of scourges & curses. Tell me, you dissolute harlots, what increase do you render to God, of your wits or your beauties, but wantonnesse ? The vnworthiest are you of life, of anie that Hue. All your 25 life time you doe nothing but spoyle others, and spoyle your selues. You marre your mindes & your beauties both at once, by putting them out to bad vses. What are you but sincks and priues to swallow in mens filth ?

Esay, 21. If God (as in *Esay*) shold aske our watch-man the deuill, 30 *Gustos, quid de nocte ?* Watchman, what seest thou ? what seest thou in *London* by night? he would answer, I see a number of whores making men drunke, to cosen them of theyr money. I see others of them sharing halfe with the Baudes their Hostesses, & laughing at the Punies 35 they haue lurchd. Others meeting with their cut-purse

Paramours in the darke, to whom they deliuer what they haue beene getting all day from a dozen. I see reuelling, dauncing, and banquetting till midnight. I see a number of wiues cockolding their husbandes, vnder pretence of
 5 going to their next neighbours labour. I see Gentlewomen baking in their painting on their faces by the fire, and burning out many pounds of Candle in pinning their treble rebaters, when they wil not bestow the snuffe of a light on looking on anie good Booke. I see theft, murder, and con-
 10 spiracie, following their busines verie closelie. What would you haue more? Those whom the Sunne sees not in a month together, I nowe see in their cuppes and their iolitie.

Well conceited was that Italian who writ the Supplication to Candle-light, earnestly desiring her by writing to disclose
 15 vnto him the rare secretes shee sawe in her Emperie. |

One Iudgement-day is scarce enough for GOD to take V 3 the confession alone of Candle-light. He had neede of a night of Judgement as well as a day, to endite the sinners of the night.

20 Prouident Iustices, to whom these abuses redresse appertaineth, take a little paines to visite these houses of hospitality by night, and you shall see what Courtes of good fellowship they keepe. Hoyses vppon Baudes in the Subsidie booke, for the plentie they Hue in is princelie.
 25 A great office is not so gainefull as the principalship of a Colledge of Curtizans. No Merchant in ritches may compare with those Merchants of maiden-head, if theyr female Inmates were not so fleeting & vncertaine. Thys is a tricke amongst all Baudes, they will faine themselues
 30 to be zealous Catholiques; and whereas they dare not come to Church, or into any open assembly, for wondering and howting at, they pretend scrupulosity of conscience, and that they refraine onely for religion. So if they be imprisoned or carried to Bridewel for their baudrie, they
 35 giue out they suffer for the Church.

9 in looking 13. 13 that] the 13. 18 night iudgement 13.
 35 primipalship 93, 94. *Corr. in Errata.* 27 maiden-heads 13.

Great cunning doe they ascribe to their arte, as the discerning (by the very countenance) a man that hath Crownes in his purse: the fine closing in with the next Justice, or Aldermans deputy of the ward: the winning loue of neyghbours round about, to repell violence, if haply their houses 5 shoulde be enuironed, or any in them proue vnruilie (being pilled and pould too vnconscionably). They fore-cast for back-doores, to come in and out by vndiscoverd. Slyding windowes also, and trappe-bordes in floars, to hyde whores behind and vnder, with false counterfet panes in walls, to 10 be opened and shut like a wicket. Some one Gentleman generally acquainted, they giue his admission vnto sans fee, V a^v & free priuiledge | thence-forward in theyr Nunnery, to procure them frequentance. Awake your wits, graue authorized Lawe-distributers, and shew your selues as insinua- 15 tiue subtile, in smoaking this City-sodoming trade out of his starting-holes, as the professors of it are in vnderpropping it. Eyther you doe not, or will not, discend into their deepe-iugling legerdemaine. Any excuse or vnlikely pretext goes for payment. Sette vppe a shoppe of incon- 20 tinencie who so will, let hym haue but one letter of an honest name to grace it. In such a place dwels a wise woman that tels fortunes, and shee (vnder that shadowe) hath her house neuer empty of forlorne vnfortunate Dames, married to olde husbands. 25

In another corner enhabiteth a Phisition and a Coniurer, who hath corners and spare Chambers to hyde carion in, and can coniure vp an vnphisicall drabbe at all times. In a third place is there a grosse-pencild Painter, who works all in oyle-colours, & vnder colour of drawing of pictures, 30 drawes more to his shady Pauilion, then depart thence pure Vestals. Lodge these Baudes any suspicious Gentlewoman, and being askt what shee is, (be she young and braue) they will aunswer, that shee is an Esquires or Knights daughter, sent vp to be plac't with I wote not what Lady or Count- 35 esse. Bee shee of middle yeeres, shee is a widdow that hath sutes in Lawe here at the Tearme, and hath bene a

long Counsaile table petitioner. Be shee but ciuilly plaine, and in her apparraile cittizinizd, shee is the good-wiues Niece, or neere Kinswoman.

Thus haue they euasions for all obiections, and are neuer
 5 (lightly) brought in question, but when they breake and iarre with their neighbours. Monstrous creatures are they, meruaile is it fire from heauen consumes | not *London*, as V 4 long as they are in it. A thousande partes better were it to haue publique Stewes, then to let them keepe priuate
 10 Stewes as they doe. The worlde woulde count me the most licentiate loose strayer vnder heauen, if I shoulde vnrippe but halfe so much of their veneriall machiauelisme as I haue lookt into. We haue not English words enough to vnfold it. Positions & instructions haue they, to make theyr
 15 whores a hundred times more whorish and treacherous, then theyr owne wicked affects (resigned to the deuils disposing) can make them. Waters and receipts haue they to enable a man to the acte after hee is spent, dormatiue potions to procure deadly sleepe, that when the hackney
 20 he hath payde for lyes by hym, hee may haue no power to deale wyth her, but shee may steale from hym, whiles he is in his deepe memento, and make her gayne of three or foure other.

I am weary of recapitulating theyr rogerie. I woulde
 25 those that shoulde reforme it woulde take but halfe the paynes in supplanting it that I haue done in disclosing it. Repent, repent, you ruines of intemperaunce, recouer your soules though you haue sudded your bodies. Let not your feete bee fast locked in the myre of pollution. Meditate
 30 but what a brutish thing it is, howe short lasting, and but a minute contentiue. If you should lende it (from the beginning to the ending) but sutable descriptionate politure, or if with your eyes you coulde but view the meeting of venums, I know it wold worke in some of you an abiuring dislike.

35 Consider but what lothsome things are engendred of the excesse of it, and how the soule (which was made to mount

v upward) in the heate of it descends downward. Sinne
 V4^v enough of your selues (weomen) haue you, you | neede
 haue no sinne put into you. Your flesh of the own accord
 will corrupt faster then you would, though you corrupt it
 not before his time with inordinate carnall sluttishnes. 5
 Make not your bodies stincking dungeons for diseases to
 dwell in : imprison not your soules in a sinck.

To you, men, this admonition I will giue, be prodigal any
 way, rather then giue a whore an earnest pennie of her
 Prou. 29. perdition. *Salomon sayth, Qui nutrit scortum perdit sub-10*
stantiam, Hee that keepeth a harlot squandreth hys sub-
 i. Cor. 6. stance. *Paule saith, Qui fornicatur, in corpus suum peccat,*
 He which committeth fornication sinneth against hys owne
 Acts, 15, flesh. In the Acts it is sayde, *Abstinete vos a fornicatione,*
 Abstaine from, fornication. In the Epistle to the Galathians, 15
The workes pf the flesh are adultery, fornications, &c. In
 Ephe. 5. the Epistle to the Ephesians, *No whoremonger, adulterer,*
or couetous person, shall enter into the Kingdome of heauen.
 Hebrues the 13. *Adulterers God will iudge.* Deutero-
 nomy 'he 33. *There shall not bee a harlot of the Daughters 20*
of Israeli. Mathew the tenth, *Whom God hath ioyned, let*
no man seperate. An adulterer goes betwixt or seperates
 whom God hath ioyned. *Cum cetera possit Deus, &c.*
 lerom
 Amos When God can doe all things els, he cannot restore a
 Virgin after she is defloured. *Lxxsa pudicitia, sayth Ouid, 25*
deperit ilia semel, Chastitie, beeing once scarred, is neuer
 salued.

Agamemnon defiling *Brisis*, his wife *Clitemnestra* playd
 false with *Egistus* in the meane time. On the other side,
Ulisses shunning the enchauntments of *Circes*, the sweet 30
 descant of the Syrens, and immortality of *Calipso*, to liue
 with his constant wife *Penelope*, shee (notwithstanding
 all the gallant troupes of Grecian woers enticements, that
 in her house kept a standing court a long time) kept |
 X i herselfe chaste for him twenty yeeres. *Solon* ordained that 35
 'he adulterer should be put to death. The tale of *Seleucus*

& hys sonne is stale. I haue made my booke too great already, onely in displaying the sinnes of *London*. Who soeuer they be that haue soules, and woulde in no meanes haue them miscarry, let them remember that of S. *Augustine* 5
In pollutione anima fit tota caro, In adulterie or fornication the soule is made all flesh, & is wholie employde in impouerishing and debilitating the fleshe. *Quidam dixit olim, diues eram dudum, sed tria me fecerunt nudum, alea, vina, venus; tribus his factus sum egenus*. There was a man 10
 sayd late, hee was in ritche estate, but 3. things haue vndone hym, froward Dice, Wine, and Weomen: onely from these three things all his confusion springs.

The thyrd deriuatiue of Delicacie is sloth, of which I will say a word or two, and so shake hands with all the 15
 Sonnes and Daughters of Pride. Security, the last deident of Delicacy, it includeth in it: for Security is nothing but the effect of Sloth, therefore will I handle both vnder one. It is a sinne which is good for nothing but to be Dame Lecheries Keeper when she lyes in. Hee or shee that is 20
 possessed with Sloth is slow in good works, slowe in coming to Sermons, slowe in looking after thrift, slow in resisting temptations, slowe in defending any good cause. And of these fore-slowers it is sayde, Those that be neyther hote nor cold, I will spue them out of my mouth. *Reuela.* 25
 the 3.

There is a certaine kind of good sloth, as to be slowe to anger, slowe to Iudgement, slowe to reuenge. But there is a sloth vnto iudgement, which is also an ill sloth. As when a poore mans cause hangs so long in Court ere it can be 30
 decided, that through the Judges sloth hee is | vndone with X i^v following of it. There is a sloth also in punishing sinne, as when Magistrates will haue theyr eyes put out with gyfts, and will not see it, but winck at it, till they be broad-waked with the generall cry of the Common-wealth. There 35
 is a sloth of Souldioury, as of those that come from the warres, and will not fall to any thing afterward, but cosen,

begge, and robbe. There is a sloth of the Ministry, as of those that after they be Beneficed, will neuer preach, lob, 6. *Doth the wild Asse bray, saith lob, when he hath grasse, or loweth the Oxe when he hath fodder ?* No more doe a great sorte of our Diuines after they haue lyuing. They haue 5 learned to spare theyr tongues against they are to plead for greater preferment. So haue a rtuber of Lawyers learned to spare theyr eares, against golden Aduocates come to pleade to them. They cannot heare except their eares be rubd with the oyle of angels: they must haue a 10 spurre to prick on an old dogge, a few Spur-Rials to remedy deafnes.

Others there are (though not of the same order) that can neuer heare but when they are flattered, & they cry con- Essay, 30. tinually to their Preachers, *Loquere nobis placentia, Loquere 15 nobis placentia.* Speake to vs nothing but pleasing things. And euen as *Archabius* the Trumpeter had more giuen him to cease th^t to sound, (the noise that he made was so harsh,) so wil they giue them more to cease then to sound, to corrupt them then to make them sound, to feede their 20 sores then to launch the. The noise of Judgements which they pronounce soundeth too harshe in theyr eares. They must haue *Orpheus* melodie, who the *Ciconian* weomen tore in peeces, because with his musique hee corrupted and Gmdo in effeminated theyr men. *Guide* saith, There are certaine 25 **musica.** deuils that can abide no musick ; these are contrary deuils, x 2 for they delight in nothing but | the musique of flattery. Mouing words please them ; but they heare them but as a passion in a play, which maketh them raiushtly melancholy, and nere renteth the hart. 30

The Delicacie both of men & women in *London* will enforce the Lorde to turne all their plenty to scarcity, their tunes of wantonnesse to the alarums of warre, and to leaue their house desolate vnto them.

How the Lord hath begunne to leaue our house desolate 35

6 tongue 13. 18 the] them .'. 20 sound, feed 13. 21 Judgement 13.
28-9 as passio' 13. 31 Run on in 13.

vnto vs, let vs enter into the consideration thereof with our selues. At this instant is a generall plague disperst throughout our Land. No voyce is hearde in our streetes, but that of *Ieremy*, *Callfor the mourning weomen, that they* Ierem. 9.
 5 *may come and take vp a lamentation for vs, for death is come into our windowes, and entred into our Pallaces.* God hath Ierem. 5.
 stricken vs, but we haue not sorrowed, of hys heauiest correction wee make a iest. Wee are not moued with that which he hath sent to amaze vs: As it is in *Ezechidl*, Ezech. 3.
 10 *They will not heare thee, for they wil not heare me:* So they will not, nor cannot, heare God in his visitation, which haue refused to heare him in his Preachers. For your contempt and neglect of hearing Gods Preachers, euen as *S. Iohn Baptist* sayd, *There was one come into the*
 15 *world more mighty then he, that carried his fanne in his hand,* So say I, there is one come into the worlde, more mighty then the word preached, which is the Lorde in this present visitation: He carrieth his fanne in his hand to purge his Floore. All the chaffe of carnal Gospellers,
 ao that are blowne from hym with euery wind of vanity or aduersity, he shall purge from amongst you.

A time of springing and growing haue we had ; nowe is our mercifull Father come to demaunde fruite of vs. The fruite of fayth, the fruite of good works, the fruite of patience
 35 and long suffering. If he find no fruite on vs, | he will say X a^v
 to vs as hee sayd to the Figge-tree on which he found
 . nothing but leaues, *Neuer fruite gr owe on thee henceforward.* Math. ai.
 And incontinent it withered ; and incontinent Death shall^{19,}
 seaze on vs. From the mouth of the Lord I speake it,
 30 Except in time you conuert, and bring forth the fruites of good life, the Kingdome of GOD shall be taken from you, and giuen to a Nation bringing forth worthy fruits thereof.
 With the two blinde men that sattu by the High-way side Math. ao.
 when Christ came from *Iericho*, we haue cryed a long time,^{19,}
 35 *Lord, haue mercy vpon vs, Lord, haue mercy vpon vs, O Sonne of Dauid, haue mercie vpon vs:* and loe, our eyes haue beene opened, the light of the Gospell hath appeared

vnto vs; But (like those blind-men) after our eyes were opened, after the lyght of the Gospell hath appeared vnto vs, we haue refused to follow Christ.

You Vsurers and Engrossers of Corne, by your hoording vp of gold and graine tyll it is mould, rusty, Moath-eaten, 5 and almost infects the ayre with the stinche, you haue taught God to hoord vp your iniquities and transgressions, tyll mouldinesse, putrifaction, and mustinesse enforceth hym to open them: and being opened, they so poyson the ayre with theyr ill sauour, that from them proceedeth 10

lerem. 23. thys perrilsome contagion. The Land is full of adulterers, Esay, 24, & for this cause the Land mourneth. The Land is full of Extortioners, full of proude men, full of hypocrites, full of murderers. This is the cause why the Sword deuoureth abroad, and the Pestilence at home. Wicked deedes haue 15

lerem. 12. preuailed against vs. *Howe long (saith leremie) shall the Land mourne, and the hear be s of euery field wither, for the wickednesse of the Inhabitants that dwell therein? Our Land mournes for the sicknesse, the hearbes of the field* X 3 haue withered for want of raine, yet | will no man depart 20 from his wickednesse. Post ouer the Plague to what naturall cause you will, I positiuelie affirme it is for sinne.

lerem. 21. *For sinne (said the Lord by the fore-named leremy) I will smyte the inhabitants of Ierusalem, and man and beast shall*

lerem. 19. *die of a great pestilence. I will bring a Plague vpon you, 35 that whosoever heareth of it, his eares shal tingle.* Eyther take away the cause, or there is no remouing of the effect.

London, thou art the seeded Garden of sinne, the Sea that sucks in all the scummy chanel of the Realme. The honestest in thee (for the most) are eyther Lawyers or 30 Vsurers. Deceite is that which aduanceth the greater sorte of thy chiefest; Let them looke that theyr ritches shall rust and canker, being wet & dewed with Orphans teares.

ii adulteries.:. 13 Extortions.:. 28-p, 159,!. 23 *In the cancel leaf issued in 94 the following was substituted for these two paragraphs:*

London thou art the welhead of the land, and therefore it behoueth thee to send forth wholesome spring'. Suffer not thy channels to ouerflow like full conduits. Let not gaine outrun godlinesse and honestie. Make no trade of

The Lord thinketh it were as good for him to kill with the Plague, as to let them kill with oppression. He beholdeth from on hie al subtile conueiances and recognisances. He beholdeth how they peruert foundations, and will not bestow
5 the Bequeathers free almes, but for brybes, or for friendship. I pray God they take not the like course in preferring poore mens chyl dren into theyr Hospitals, and conuerting the impotents mony to theyr priuate vsury.

God likewise beholdeth how, to beguile a sely young
10 Gentleman of his Land, they will crouch cap in hande, play the Brokers, Baudes, Apron-squires, Pandars, or any thing. Let vs leaue of the Prouerbe which we vse to a cruell dealer, saying, Goe thy waies, thou art a lewe; and say, Goe thy waies, thou art a Londoner. For then
15 Londoners, are none more hard harted and cruell. Is it not a common prouerbe amongst vs, whe any man hath cosend or gone beyonde vs, to say, Hee hath playde the Merchant with vs? But Merchants, they turne it another | way, and say, He hath playd the Gentleman with them. X 3^v
20 The Snake eateth the Toade, and the Toade the Snaile. The Merchant eates vp the Gentleman, the Gentleman eates vp the Yeoman, and all three do nothing but exclaime one vpon another.

The head of *Daniels* Image was of beaten golde, but his Dan. 2.23.

¹ Dan. 2. 23.] 3. (*rest dropped*) 94 (*cancel*).

deceit, nor occupation of vsurie. Why may not the Lord as well kill with the plague, as suffer cruell extortioners to kill with oppression? He beholdeth ifrom on high all subtile conueyances and craftie recognisances. No defrauder of the poore, or couetous peruert of foundations, but is put in the deuils blacke booke. Cursed be they that giue almes with the one hand, and take bribes with the other, that sell bequests for good turnes, and are not ashamed to prostitute chantie like a strumpet for readie money. I speake not this for I know any such, but if there be anie such, to forewarae and reforme them.

Many good me, many good magistrats are there in this City, diuerse godly & wise counselors hath she to prouide for her peace, them no part of any reproofe of mine concerneth, how euer it may be otherwise thought. Other wicked liuers in it questionlesse there be, which want no ill gotten goods, nor ill mmdes to the common wealth. Verie good it were, when they are reuealed, they had plague bills set vpon their doores, to make them more noted and detestable. The snake eateth vp the toade, and the | toade the snayle: the X 3^v
Vsurer eateth vp the Gentleman, and the Gentleman the yeoman, and all three being deuoured one of another, do nothing but complaine one vpon another.

feete yron. Our head or our Soueraigne is all golde, golden in her lookes, golden in her thoughts, in her words and deedes golden. We, her feete or hersubiects, all yron. Though for her vertues sake, and the prayers of his dispersed Congregation, God prorogeth our desolation for a 5 while, yet wee must not thinke but, at one time or other, he will smyte vs and plague vs. Hee shall not take away our sinne, because wee will not confesse, with *Dauid*, that we haue sinned: or if wee doe so confesse, wee holde it full satis-faction for it, without any reformation or amende- 10 ment. In thys time of infection, we purge our houses, our bodies, and our streetes, and looke to all but our soules.

Psalm 76. The *Psalmist* was of another mind, for he said, *O Lord, I*
 Math. 8. *haue purged and clesned my spirit.* Blessed are they that are cleane in hart, howe euer theyr houses be infected. 15 There were the in the heate of the sicknes, that thought to purge and dense theyr houses by conueying their infected seruaunts forth by night into thefieldes, which there starued and dyed, for want of reliefe and warme-keeping. Such mercilesse Canibals (in steade of purging theyr spyrits and ao theyr houses) haue thereby doubled the Plague on them and theyr houses, In Grayes-Inne, Clarkenwell, Finsbury, and Moore-fieldes, wyth myne owne eyes haue I seene halfe a dozen of such lamentable out-casts. Their Bretheren & their Kinsfolkes haue offered large summes of money, to 25 X 4 gette them conueied | into any out-house, and no man would earne it, no man would receiue them. Cursing and rauing by the High-way side haue they expired, & theyr Maisters neuer sent to them, nor succourd them. The feare of God is come amongst vs, and the loue of God gone from vs. 30

If Christ were now naked and visited, naked and visited should he be, for none wold come neere him. They would rather forswear him and defie him, then come within forty foote of him. In other Lands, they haue Hospitals, whether their infected are transported, presently after they are 35 strooken. They haue one Hospitall for those that haue

¹ Psalm 76.] om. 94 (cancel). 2Math. 8.] om. 94 (cancel).

been in the houses with the infected, and are not yet tainted : another for those that are taynted, and haue the sores rysen on them, but not broken out A third, for those that both haue the sores, & haue them broken out on
 5 them. We haue no prouision but mixing hand ouer heade the sicke with the whole. A halfe-penny a month to the poore mans boxe we count our vtter empouerishing. I haue hearde Trauailers of credite auouch, that in *London* is not gyuen the tenth part of that almes in a weeke, which
 10 in the poorest besieged City of Fraunce is gyuen in a day. What, is our religion all auarice and no good works ? Because we may not build Monasteries, or haue Masses, Dirges, or Trentals sung for our soules, are there no deeds of mercy that God hath enioyned vs ?

15 Our dogges are fedde with the crumbes that fal from our Tables. Our Christian bretheren are famisht for want of the crumbes that fall from our Tables. Take it of me, rich-men expresly, that it is not your owne which you haue purchast with your industry: it is part of it the poores,
 20 parte your Princes, parte your Preachers. You ought to possesse no more then will moderatly sustaine | your house X 4' and your family. Christ gaue all the victuall he had to those that flocked to hearehis Sermons. We haue no such promise-founded plea at the day of al flesh as that in
 35 Christs name we haue done almes-deeds. How would we with our charity sustaine so many mendicant orders of Religion as we heere-to-fore haue, & as now at thys very houre beyond Sea are, if wee cannot keepe and cherrish the casuall poore amongst vs ? Neuer was there a simple
 30 liberall relieuerof the poore but prospered in most things he went about. The cause that some of you cannot prosper is for you put out so little to interest to the poore.

No thanks-worthy exhibitions or reasonable pensions will you contribute to maymd Souldiours or poore Schol-
 35 lers, as other Nations doe, but suffer other Nations with your discontented poore to Arme themselues against you. Not halfe the Priestes that haue beene sent from them into

England had hether beene sent, or euer fledde hence, if the Crampe had not helde close your purse strings. The lyuings of Colledges by you are not increased, but diminished : because those that first rayed them had a superstitious intent, none of vs euer after will haue any Christian 5 charitable intent.

In the dayes of *Salomon*, gold and siluer bare no price. In these our dayes, (which are the dayes of sathan,) nought but they beare any price. God is despised in comparison of them. *Demas* forsooke Christ for the worlde; ¹⁰ in this our deceasing couetous world, *Demas* hath more followers then Christ. An old Vsurer that hath nere an heyre, rakes vp thirty or forty thousande pounds together in a hutch, will not part with a penny, fares miserably, dyes suddainly, and leaues those the fruites of ^{X5} hys niggardize to them that neuer thanke him. |

Y i He that bestoweth any thing on a Colledge or Hospitall, to the worlds end shal haue his name remembred in daily thanksgyuing to God for him : otherwise hee perisheth as the Pellitory on the wall or the weede on the ao house toppe, that groweth onely to wither; Of all his wealth no good man reaping any benefite, none but Canckers, prysons, and bard Chestes, Hue to report hee was ritch. Those great bard Chestes hee carries on hys backe to Heauen gates, and none so burdened is permitted ²⁵ to enter.

There is no Male of any kinde hath apparance of breastes but man, and hee, hauing them, giues no sucke with them at all. Such dry-nurses are our English Cormogeons; they haue breasts, but giue no suck with them. They haue 30 treasure innumerable, but doe no good with it. All the Abbey-lands that were the abstracts from impertinent almes, nowe scarce afforde a meales meate of almes. A penny bestowed on the poore is abridged out of house-keeping. All must be for their Chyldren that spend more 35 then all. More prosperous chyldren should they haue,

were they more open handed. The Plague of God threatens to shorten both them and their children, because they shorten their hands from the poore. To no cause referre I this present mortality but to couetise.

5 Let couetise be enlarged out of durance, the infected ayre will vncongeale, and the wombes of the contagious Clowdes will be censed. Pray and distribute, you gorbellied Mammonists; without prayer and distribution, or almost thinking of GOD, haue you congested those reful-
 10 gent masses of substaunce. With the destribution of them, (if you looke for saluation,) your soules must you raunsome from Belial. And fortunate are you, | if with tedious inter- Y i^v
 cessions and prayers you may gette your raunsome accepted of. Nothing of all your drosse (going downe into the earth)
 15 shall you take with you: you shal cary no more hence, *Nisi parua quod vrna capit*, but a Coffyn and a winding-sheete.

They haue slept theyr sleepe, saith *Dauid*, and all the Psalm 75. men of riches haue found none of their treasure in their
 20 owne hands after theyr sleepe was ended. Poore men, to you I speake, (for ritch men haue theyr Country Granges to flye to from contagion,) humble your soules with fasting and prayer. *Elias* and *Moyses*, by their fasting and prayer, were filled with the familiarity of God. Entreatethe Lord
 25 that he would passe ouer your houses, as in Egypt hee past ouer the houses of the Israelites first-borne: Beseech him, with the *Gerazens* (into whose Heardes of Swine the deuils were sent), to depart (with his heauy iudgements) out of your quarters. Though he seemeth a little to sleepe,
 30 (as when hee was on the Sea with his Disciples, and the tempest arose,) yet if you awake him with your out-crying prayers, as the Apostles did, saying: *Lord, saue vs, Lord, saue vs, or wee per risk*, hee will commaund the windes and the Sea, controule the contagion and the sicknes, and make
 35 a calme ensue; heale euery disease and languor amongst you.

Psalm 77. *In the day of my trouble, (saith the fore-named propheti-
call King,) I sought vnto the Lorde my sore ran & ceased not
in the night, my soule refused comfort. I did thinke vpon
God, and was troubled; I prayed, and my spyrit was ful of
anguish.* Let vs seeke vnto the Lorde in like sorte, let our 5
soules refuse comfort, let vs thinke vpon him & be troubled,
let vs pray, and fill our spyrits ful of anguish, til such time
as he turneth our affliction from vs, If wee be not thus
Y 2 troubled, if our spyrits bee not possessed with an-|guish,
but we make a sport and flea-byting of his fearefull visita- 10
tion, and thinke (without our prayers) the season of the
yeere will cease it, hee will sende a rougher stringed scourge
amongst vs, a desolation that shall furrow deeper in our
sides, and roote out the memoriall of vs.

Hebr. 12. *If (saith the Apostle to the Hebrues) they escaped not 15
which refused him that spake on earth, much more shall they
not escape that turne awayfrom him that speaketh to them
from heauen.* Now it is that God speaketh to vs fro heauen,
now if wee turne away from him, or will not turne to him,
there shall not one of vs escape. 20

In the time of *Gregory Nasianzene*, (if wee may credite
Ecclesiasticall recordes,) there sprung vp the direfullest
mortality in Rome, that man-kinde hath beene acquainted
with: scarce able were the luyng to bury the dead, and
not so much but their streets were digged vp for graues; 25
Which this holy Father (with no little comiseFate hart-
bleeding) beholding, commanded all the Clergie (for hee
was at that time their chiefe Bishop) to assemble in prayer
and supplications, & deale forcingleie beseeching with God, to
intermit his furie and forgiue them. For all this, not any 30
whit it abated; hee tooke no pittie on them. There-with
that reuerend Pastor (entranced to hell in his thoughts for
the distresse of his people) caused al the Cittizens, young
and old, to be called foorth theyr houses, and attende him in
a howling procession. Vppe and downe the streetes, from 35
one end of the City to the other he ledde them, and

Preachers (as Captains ouer multitudes) were sette to direct & encourage them in their Inuocations and Orizons. Foure dayes together, in this feruent exercise he detained the. In those places where the mortality raged most, a
 5 stande | would hee make halfe a day, and with reiterated Y 2^v.
 solicitings, and prostrate voyce-crazing vehemencie, breake ope a broade clowde-dispersing passage to the throne of mercy.

The foure dayes concluded, and that with their bellowing
 10 clamors and breast-embolning sighes they had enforced a sufficient breache in the Firmament, there appeared a bright sunne-arraied Angell, standing with a reaking bloody sword in his hand, in the chiefe gate of theyr Citty, which, (they comming neere,) in all theyr sights, on hys arme hee
 15 wiped and put vp : and (in that very instant) throughout the Citty the plague ceased. Some (peraduenture) may take exceptions against the certainty heereof, but if we will authorize any thing in the Romaine or Ecclesiasticall histories, we must ascribe truth as well vnto this. I would
 20 see him that could giue me any other reason but thys, of the building of the yet extant gate and Castle of S. *Angelas*, on both which the Angell with hys sworde drawne is artificially engrauen. True, or not true, the example can doe no harme : We will not be too hastie to imitate it.

25 In stead of humbling our selues after this manner, and wearying God with our cryes and lamentations, wee fall a drinking and bousing, & making iestes of his frowning castigation. As Babes smyle and laugh in theyr sleepe, so we (surprised with a lethargy of sinne) do nothing but
 30 laugh and iest in the midst of our sleepee security. Wee scoffe and are iocund, when the sworde is ready to goe through vs. On our wine-benches we bidde a *Fico* for tenne thousand Plagues.

Him as a timerous milke-soppe we deride, that takes
 35 any antidote against it. Vpon the poynt of Gods sword wee will runne as he is in stryking: rush into houses that | are infected, as it were to out-face him. *My sonne* (sayth Y 3

Hebr.12.5. the Apostle), *despise not the chastisement of the Lorde.*

The Lordes chastising wee thinke to escape, by despysing it. *Quod in communi possidetiir, ab omnibus negligitur.*

That which is disperst, of all is despised. *Est tentatio adducens peccatum, et tentatio probans fidem.* There is a 5

temptation leading to sinne, and a temptation trying our fayth. The temptation of this our visitation hath both

ledde vs to sinne, and tryed our fayth. It hath ledde vs to sinne, in that it hath hardned our harts, & we haue not

humbled our selues vnder it as wee should. It hath tryed 10 our fayth to be a presumptuous and rash fayth, and that

lob, 5.17. it is built on no firme foundation. *Blessed is the man, saith Iob, whom God correcteth.* Cursed are we, for God correcteth vs and we regard it not.

As the holy Ghost willeth vs not to despise the chastising 15

of God, so he wold haue vs not to faint when we are rebuked of him, and thereof hee giueth a reason, *For whom the Lord*

loueth, he chastiseth, and he scourgeth euery Sonne he receiueth. As there be drunken despysers of Gods present

chastisement, so are there them that faynt too much vnder 20 it: that thinke it lyes not in the Lordes power to restore them ; that no prayers or repentaunce may repriue them:

that imagine (since GOD in thys world hath forsooke them) he wil for euer forsake the. Thus they argument

against themselues : He that denieth vs a small request, of 25 the prolongment of a fewe earthlie dayes, he will surely stoppe his eares, when in a greater sute (for the life eternall)

we shall importune him.

O no, foolish men, you erre, though long life on earth be a blessing, yet it followes not by contradiction, that 30

GOD curseth all those whose dayes hee shortens. Many, Y 3^v except theyr dayes were shortned, wold neuer be | saued.

Many in theyr prime and best yeeres are raught hence, because the world is vnworthy of them, and they are more

worthy of heauen then the world. The good King *losias* 35 was taken away in his youth. Our Sauour was take vp

in his best youthly age. Others for their sins the Lord by vntimely death punisheth in this world, that they may be absolued in the worlde to come. A large account of them shall he demaund, to whom he lendeth long life.
 5 Whom God chastiseth or cutteth of, hee loueth: halfe his account he cutts of, Euey son hee scourgeth that he receiueth.

Hath GOD chastised 'or scourged such a man by the sicknes, he is not a greater sinner then thou who he hath
 10 not chastised, but he loueth him better then thee, for, in his chastising, he hath shewed more care ouer him then he hath ouer thee. Few men defamed with any notorious vice can I heare of, that haue dyed of this sicknesse. God chastiseth his Sonnes and not bastards. No Sonnes
 15 of God are we, but bastards, vntill we be chastned. The Heb. ia. Fathers of our earthly bodies for a few dayes chastise vs ^{8 9} at theyr pleasure, but God chastiseth vs for our profite, that we may be partakers of his holmes. The Fathers of our earthly bodies, though they beate vs and chastise vs,
 20 yet cannot (for all the payne they put vs to) enfeofe vs in glory perpetuall; for howe shoulde they doe that for vs, which they cannot doe for themselues? Onely because they are to benefite vs with a litle transitory chaffe, they tyrannise and raigne ouer vs: and therefore more
 35 austere are they to keepe vs in obedience, for we should not (after theyr death) lauishly mispende the labours of theyr parsimony.

The guerdon they giue vs (for all theyr inflicted sorrow and smart) is that which they must leaue in spite | of theyr Y 4
 30 harts, & cannot themselues keepe any longer. They giue vs place, that in selfe-same sort we may gyue place to others. But God, our Redeemer, Chastiser, and Father, corrects vs, that wee may receiue no corruptiue inheritaunce, (such as in this life we receiue, by the wayning of our earthly
 35 Fathers,) but a neuer fayling inheritaunce, where we shall haue our Father himselfe for our inheritaunce.

O what a blessed thing is it to bee chastised of the Lord.

Is it not better (6 *London*) that God correct thee, and loue thee, then forbear thee, and forsake thee? He is a iust God, and must punish eyther in thys life, or in the lyfe to come. Though thou considerest onely the things before thee, yet he, being a louing fore-seeing father for thee, and 5 knowing the intollerableness of the neuer quenched Fornace (which for sinne he hath prepared), will not consent to thine owne childish wishes, of winking at thee heere on earth, (where though he did spare thee, thou shouldst haue no perfect tranquillity,) but with a short light 10 punishment, acquitteth thee from the punishment eternall, & eternally incomprehensible tortorous.

When Preachers threaten vs for sinne with thys adiunct, eternall, as, paynes eternall, eternall damnation, eternall horror and vexation, we heare them as words of course, but 15 neuer diue right downe into theyr bottomlesse sence. A confused modell and misty figure of Hell haue we, conglomerate in our braynes, drowsily dreaming that it is a place vnder earth, vncessantly vomiting flames, like *Aetna* or *Mongiball*, and fraught full of fire & Brimstone, but we 20 neuer follow the meditation of it so farre (were it nothing els) as to thinke what a thing it is to lyue in it perpetually. |

Y 4^v It is a thousand thousand times worse then to be staked on the tope of *Aetna* or *Mongiball*. A hundred thousande 25 thousande times more then thought can attract, or supposition apprehend. But eternally to Hue in it, that makes it the hell, though the torment were but trifling. Signified this word eternal but some sixe thousand yeeres (which is about the distance from *Adam*), in our comprehension it 3^o were a thing beyond mind, insomuch as wee deeme it an impatient spectacle, to see a Traytour but halfe an houre groning vnder the Hangmans hands. What then is it, to Hue in threescore times more griding discruciament of dying, a yere, a hundred yeere, a thousand yeere, sixe 35 thousand yeere, sixty thousand yeere, more thousandes
ia tortorort .? : tortures *Gro'* 16 theyr] the 13. 34 grinding 13.

then can be numbred in a thousand yeeres? so much importeth this word eternal, or for euer.

Though all the men that euer God made were hundred handed like *Briareus*, and shoulde all at once take pennes
5 in theyr hundred handes, and doe nothing in a whole age together but sette downe in Figures & characters as many myllions or thousands as they could, so many millions or thousands could they neuer set down as this worde of three sillables, *Eternally* includeth ; an Ocean of yncke would it
10 draw dry to describe it. Hell is a circle which hath no breakings of, or discontinuing. Hence blasphemous Witches and Coniurers, whg they raise vp the deuill, drawe a ringed circle ail-about hym, that he should not rushe out and oppresse them : as also to humble & debase him, in putting
15 him in mind, by that circle, of the eternall circle of damnation, wherin God hath confined and shut him. What dullards and block-heads are wee, that hearing these tearmes of hell and eternall so often souned in our eares, sound them so | shallowly, or if we sound them as we z i
20 shold, are no more confounded with them! It should seeme we are not too much terrified with them, when for an houres pleasure (which hath no taste of true pleasure in it), we will dare them both to theyr vtmost.

Foules of the ayre, though neuer so empty stomackt,
25 flye not for foode into open Pit-fals. *Qux nimis apparent retia vitat auis*. Too open snares euen simple birdes doe shunne. No Beast of the Forrest, spying a gin or a trap layd for him, but eschewes it. We spy and fore-see the Pyt-fal, the Nette, the Ginne, the Trappe, that sathan (our
30 old entrapper) layes for vs, yet wilfully wee (without any flattering hope of foode, without any excellent allurements to entice vs, or hunger to costrain vs) with full race will darte our selues into them. Yea, though Christ from the skyes hold out neuer so moouing lures vnto vs, all of them
35 (Haggard-like) wee wil turne taylor to, and haste to the yron fist that holds out nought but a knyfe to enthrill vs.

O, if there were no heauen, me thinkes, (hauing that vnderstanding we ought,) we should forbear to sinne, if it were but for feare of hell. Our Lawes, with nothing but proposed penalty, from offending cohibite vs ; they allow no rewarde to theyr temperate obseruants: Gods Lawes 5 (proposing both exceeding rewarde and exceeding penalty) are euery day violated and infringed. Eyther wee suppose him not able to execute his Lawes, or that (like one of Romes Epicure Emperors) he more fauoureth their breakers then obeyers ; aduancing men sooner for oppugning then 10 obseruing them. Farre is hee from that mad-braine fondnesse; of his Lawes he is not onely not carelesse, but ielous and zealous, and to the fourth generation pursueth their neglecters. |

Z 1^v None of them he pardons, though for a space he may 15 respite. If he delayeth or respiteth, his delaying or respityng is but to fetch vp his hand hyer, that he may let it fal on them heauier. His deferring is the more to infer. Of no ill payment shall he complaine, that hath the wages of his wickednes held from him in this world, to receiue 20 them by the whole summe in Hell. Could the least and sencelessest of our sences into the quietest corner of hel be transported in a vision but three minutes, it woulde breede in vs such an agasting terror, and shyuering mislike of it, that to make vs more wary of sinne-meriting it, we would 25 haue it painted in our Gardens, our banquetting-houses, on our gates, in our Gallaries, our Closets, our bed-chambers.

Againe, were there no hell but the accusing of a mans owne conscience, it were hell and the profundity of hel to any sharpe transpercing soule that had neuer so lyttle inckling of 30 the ioyes of heauen, to be separte fro them ; to heare and see tryumphing and melody, and, *Tantalus* like, not bee suffered to come neere them or partake them; to thinke when all els were entred, hee should be excluded. Our best method to preuent this excluding, or seperating fro Gods presence, is 35 heere on earth (what soeuer we goe about) to thinke we see him present. Let vs fancy the firmament as his face,

the all-seeing Sun to be his right eye, and the Moone hys left, (although hys eyes are farre more fiery pointed and subtile,) that the Starres are but the congemmed twincklings of those his cleare eyes, that the winds are the breath
 5 of his nostrils, and the lightning & tempests the troubled action of hys ire: that his frownes bring forth frost & snowe, and hys smiles faire weather, that the Winter is the image of the first world, wherein *Adam* was vnparadized, & the fruit-(fostering Summer the representation of the seede of Z
 10 womans satis-fying, for the vnfortunate fruite of lyfe which he pluckt. Who is there entertayning these diuine allusiue cogitations, that hath not God vnremoueable in his memory? Hee that hath God in his memorie, and aduanceth him before his eyes euer-more, will be bridled and pluckt backe
 15 from much abusion and bestialnesse. Many sinnes be there, which if none but man should ouer-eye vs offending in, we woulde neuer exceede or offend in. In the presence of his Prince, the dissolutest misliuer that lyues wil not offend or misgouerne himselfe: how much more ought we (abyding
 20 alwaies in Gods presence) precisely to straighten our pathes? Harde is it when we shall haue our ludge an eye-witnes against vs. There is no demurring or exceptioning against his testimony.

Purblind *London*, neyther canst thou see that GOD sees
 25 thee, nor see into thy selfe. Howe long wilt thou clowde , his earthly prospect with the misty night of thy mounting iniquities? Therefore hath hee smytten thee and strooke thee, because thou wouldest not belieue he was present with thee. He thought, if nothing els might moue thee to
 30 looke backe, at least thou wouldest looke back to thy striker. Had it not beene so to cause thee to looke back & repent, with no crosse or plague would he haue visited, or sought to call thee. He could haue beene reuenged on thee
 35 superaboudantly at the day of thy dissolution & soules general Law-day, though none of thy chyl dren or allies by his hand had been sepulchred. Hys hande I may well terme it, for on many that are arrested with the JPlague is

the print of a hand scene, and in the very moment it first takes
 thg, they feele a sencible blow gyuen them, as it were with
 Z 2^v the hande of some stander | by. As Gods hand wee will not
 take it, but the hande of fortune, the hande of hote weather,
 the hande of close smouldry ayre. The Astronomers, they 5
 assigne it to the regiment and operation of Planets. They
 say, *Venus*, *Mars*, or *Saturne*, are motiues therof, and
 neuer mention our sinnes, which are his chiefe procreatours.
 The vulgar menially conclude, therefore it is like to en-
 crease, because a Hearneshaw (a whole afternoone together) 10
 sate on the top of S. *Peters* Church in Cornehill. They
 talke of an Oxe that tolde the bell at *Wolwitch*, & howe
 from an Oxe hee trans-formed himselfe to an olde man, and
 from an old man to an infant, & fro an infant to a young
 man. Strange propheticall reports (as touching the sicknes) 15
 they mutter he gaue out, when in trueth they are nought
 els but cleanly coyned lyes, which some pleasant sportiue
 wittes haue deuised, to gull them most groselie. Vnder
 Maister *Dees* name, the lyke fabulous diuinations haue they
 bruted, when (good reuerend old man) hee is as farre from 20
 any such arrogant prescience, as the superstitious spreaders
 of it are from peace of conscience.

If we would hunt after signes and tokens, we should
 ominate from our hardnes of hart and want of charitie
 amongst bretheren, that Gods iustice is harde entring. No 25
 certainer coiecture is there of theruine of any kingdom then
 theyr reuolting from God. Certaine coniectures haue we
 had that we are reuolted from God and that our ruine is
 not far of. In diuers places of our Land it hath rained
 blood, the ground hath been remoued, and horrible de- 30
 formed byrthes conceiued. Did the Romans take it for an
 ill signe, whg their Capitol was strooken with lightning, how
 much more ought *London* to take it for an ill signe, when
 Z 3 her chiefe steeple is strooken | with lightning? They with
 thunder fro any enterprise were disanimated, we nothing are 35

7 or] om. 13. ai prescience] precisenesse 13. 22 from true peace .:.
 35 any] an 13.

amated. The blazing starre, the Earthquake, the dearth
 and famine some fewe yeeres since, may nothing afright vs.
 Let vs looke for the sworde next to remembrance and warne
 vs. As there is a tyme of peace, so is there a time of warre.
 5 No prosperity lasteth alwaies. The Lord by a solemne
 oath bound himsele to the lewes; yet when they were
 obliuious of him, he was obliuious of the couenant he made
 with their forefathers, and left theyr Citty desolate vnto
 them. Shall he not then (we starting from him, to who by
 10 no bonde he is tyde) leaue our house desolate vnto vs?
 Shall we receiue of God (a long time) al good, and shall we
 not looke in the end to receiue of hym some ill? O ye ^{lerem.}
 disobedient chyldren, returne, and the Lorde shall heale your ^{3:22}
 infirmities. Lye downe in your confusion, & couer your
 15 faces with shame. From your youth to thys day, haue
 you sinned, and not obeyed the voyce of the Lord your
 God. Now, in the age of your obstinacie and vngrateful
 abandonments, repent and be conuerted. With one vnited
 intercessionment, thus reconcile your selues vnto hym.
 20 O Lord, ourrefuge from one generation to another, whether
 from thy sight shall we goe, or whether, but to thee, shall
 we flye from thee? Iust is thy wrath; it sendeth no man
 to hell vniustly. Rebuke vs not in thine anger, neyther
 chastise vs in thy displeasure. We haue sinned, we confesse,
 25 & for our sinnes thou hast plagued vs, with the sorrowes of
 death thou hast compast vs, & thy snares haue ouer-tooke
 vs: out of Natures hande hast thou wrested the sword of
 Fate, and now slayest euery one in thy way. Ah, thou pre-
 seruer of men, why hast thou sette vs vp as a marke against
 30 thee? Why wilt thou breake a | leafe driuen to and fro Z^{3v}
 with the wind, & pursue the dry stubble? Returne & shew
 thy selfe meruailous vpon vs. None haue we like *Moyse*,
 to stand betwixt life & death⁷ for vs. None to offer himselfe
 to die for the people, that the Plague may cease. O deere

¹ Ierem. 3. 22] *om.* 13.

⁷ he was obliuious of the] it pleased him to forget the 13. 20 In 13
 this begins a new page and is in larger type.

Lord, for *Ierusakm* didst thou die, yet could'st not driue
 backe the plagues destinate to *Jerusalem*. No image or
 likenes of thy *Jerusalem* on earth is there left, but *London*.
 Spare *London*, for *London* is like the Citty that thou louedst.
 Rage not so farre against *Jerusalem*, as not onely to desolate 5
 her, but to wreake thy selfe on her likenes also. All the
 honor of thy miracles thou loolest, which thou hast shewed
 so many and sundry times, in rescuing vs with a strong
 hand from our enemies, if now thou becommest our enemy.
 Let not worldlings iudge thee inconstant, or vndeliberate 10
 in thy choise, in so soone reiecting the Nation thou hast
 chosen. In thee we hope beyond hope. Wee haue no
 reason to pray to thee to spare vs, and yet haue wee no
 reason to spare from prayer, since thou hast wild vs. Thy
 will be done, which willeth not the death of any sinner. 15
 Death let it kill sinne in vs, and reserue vs to prayse thee.
 Though thou kilst vs, wee will prayse thee : but more prayse
 shall thou reape by preseruing then killing, since it is the
 onely prayse to preserue where thou maist kill. With the
 Leaper we cry out, *O Lorde, if thou wilt, thou canst make vs 20*
cleane. We claime thy promise, *That those which mourne*
shall be comforted.

Comfort vs, Lord ; we mourne, our bread is mingled with
 ashes, and our drinke with teares. With so manie Funerals
 are wee oppressed, that wee haue no leysure to weepe for 25
 our sinnes for howling for our Sonnes and Daughters.
 O heare the voyce of our howling, withdraw thy hand from
 vs, & we will draw neere vnto thee. |

Z 4 Come, Lorde Iesu, come, for as thou art Iesus, thou
 art pittifull. Challenge some part of our sinne-procured 3^o
 scourge to thy Crosse. Let it not be sayd, That thou but
 halfe satis-fiedst for sinne. We belieue thee to be an
 absolute satis-fier for sinne. As we belieue, so for thy
 merits sake we beseech thee let it happen vnto vs.

Thus ought euery Christian in *London*, fro the highest to 35
 ,he lowest, to pray. From Gods iustice wee must appeale to

his mercy. As the French King, *Frauncis* the first, a woman kneeling to hym for iustice, sayd vnto her, Stand vp, woman, for iustice I owe thee ; if thou begst any thing, beg for mercy. So if we begge of GOD for anie thing, let vs begge for mercy, 5 for iustice hee owes vs. Mercy, mercy, O graunt vs, heauenly Father, for thy mercy.

Luctus monumenta manebunt.

C H R I S T S
TEARES OVER
IERVSALEM.

VVHEREVNTO IS AN-
nexed, a comparatiue admonition
to *London.*

AIOVB MVSA.

By *Tho. Nashe.*



LONDON.

Printed for Andrew Wife, and arctobcfbldat
his fhop in Pauls Church-yard, at the figne
of the Angell. 1594

TO THE READER.

* 4v

C
V
X
 Entlemen, my former Epistle vnto you in this place
 began with *Nil nisi flere libet*; now must I of
 necessitie alter that posie, and transpose my com-
 5 plaint to a new tune of *Flendus amor meus est*; The loue
 or pitie I shewed towards mine enemie, of all my ill fortunes
 hath most confounded me. The onely refuge which for
 my abused innocencie is left me, is to take vnto me the
 Academicks opinion, who absolutely conclude that nothing
 10 is to be affirmed. Kings and Emperours that by the Popes
 curse haue beene terrified from warres they intended haue
 termed religion the mother of cowardise, resolutions man-
 acles, honours miserie. Religion or conscience hath made
 me sacrifice my zealous wit to simplicitie, and my deuout
 15 pen to reprochfull penitence. The druggiers at Venice, to
 approue their Mithridate to the Phisitions, take Spiders
 and eat them: so I, to approue the Mithridate of my new
 diuinitie to the special Phisitions of our soules here in
 England, determined with my selfe to disgest a Spider,
 20 that is, swallow all iniuries, to my credit how banefull
 soeuer, and embrace sweete peace. Cleane contrarie to my
 expectation it hath fallen out, for treason was shrowded
 vnder termes of truce: whereas I thought to make my foe
 a bridge of golde, or faire words, to flie by, he hath vsed it
 35 as a high way to inuade me. *Hoc pia lingua dedit*. This
 it is to deale plainly. An extreme gull he is in this age,
 and no better, that beleeuues a man for his swearing. Im-
 piou *Gabriell Haruey*, the vowed enemie to all vowes and
 protestations, plucking on with a slauish priuat submis-
 30 sion a generall publike reconciliation, hath with a cunning

i This epistle is found in 94 alone. It is preceded, on pages ' 3 to ' 4, by the dedication to Lady Elizabeth Carey reprinted from 93.

ambuscado of confiscated idle othes, welneare betrayed me to infamie eternall, (his owne proper chaire of torment in hell.) I can say no more but the deuill & he be no men of their a'i words. Many cour-|ses there be (as *Machiauell* inspiredly sets downe) which in them selues seeme singular & vertuous, 5 but if a man follow them they wilbe his vtter subuersion; others that seeme absurd, odious, and vitious, that well looked into will breed him most ease. This course of shaking hands with *Haruey* seemd at the first most plausible and commendable, and the rather because I desired to conforms 10 my selfe to the holy subiect of my booke; but afterwards (being by his malice peruerted) it seemd most degenerate and abiect Henceforth, with the forenamed *Machiauel*, for an vnrefutable principle I will hold it, that he is vtterly vndone which seekes by new good turnes to roote out old grudges. A prouerbe it is as stale as sea-biefe ; saue a the,f from the gallows, and hee'le be the first shall shew thee the way to Saint Gileseesse. *Haruey* I manifestly saued from the knot vnder the eare; verily he had hangd him selfe had I gone forwards in my vengeance ; but, I know aot not how, vpon his prostrate intreatie I was content to giue him a short Psalme of mercie : nowe, for repriuing him when he was ripe for execution, thus he requites me. Sixe and thirtie sheets of mustard-pot paper since that hath he published against me, wherein like a drunken begger he 25 hath rayled most grossely, and imitated the rascally phrase of sunne-burnt rogues in the field. Was neuer whore of Babylon so betrapd with abhominations as his stile (like the dog-house in the fields) is pestred with stinking filth. His vaine glorie (which some take to be his gentlewoman) 30 he hath new painted ouer an inch thicke. Some fewe crummes of my booke he hath confuted, all the rest of his inuention is nothing but an oxe with a pudding in his bellie, not fit for any thing els, saue only to feast the dull eares of ironmongers, ploughmen, carpenters, and porters. Maister 35 *Lillie*, poore deceased *KitMarlow*, reuerent Doctor *Perne*, with a hundred other quiet senslesse carkasses before the

c6quest departed, in the same worke he hath most notori-
 ously & vilely dealt with ; and to conclude, he hath proued
 him selfe to be the only *Gabriel* Graue-digger vnder heauen.
 Thrice more conuenient time I wil picke out to stretch him
 5 forth limbe by limbe on the racke, and a field as large as
Achilles race to baite him to death with darts according to
 the custome of bayting buls in Spaine. Neuer more let him
 looke to quench wilde fire with milke, or mitigate the |
 matter with mild termes, for *Licya* in times past was not ^{a* r}
 10 one halfe so afflicted with the fires of *Chimera*, as hee will
 be with the thuder & lightning of some mens furie vp in
 armes. I speake not of my self so much as of foraine
 preparations that are whetting their pens to pricke him to
 death. Excuse me, Gentlemen, though I be obstinately
 15 bent in this quarell, for I haue tried all wayes with mine
 aduersary. Heretofore I was like a tyrat which knowes
 not whether it is better to be feared or loued of hissubiects.
 First I put my feare in practise, and that housed him for a
 while, next into my loue and my fauour I receiued him, and
 20 that puft him vp with such arrogance that he thought him
 selfe a better man then his maister, and was ready to iustle
 me out of all the reputation I had. Let him trust to it He
 hamper him like a iade as he is for this geare, & ride him
 with a snaffle vp & down the whole realme. But because
 25 here I haue shewed my selfe in diuinitie, of diuerse great
 diuines I askt counsell, and made it a matter of conscience
 whether it were lawfull to rap a foole with his owne bable
 and teach him to know him selfe, and they expresly certified
 me it was euerie way as allowable as the punishing of
 30 malefactors and offenders. Indeede I haue heard there
 are mad men whipt in Bedlam, and lazie vagabonds in
 Bridewell; wherfore me seemeth there should be no more
 differēce betwixt the displing of this vaine *Braggadocchio*,
 then the whipping of a mad man or a vagabond.
 35 Leauē we him till his fatall houre call for him, and let
 vs cast about to some more necessarie matter. I am

informed there be certaine busie wits abrode, that seeke in my *lacke Wilton* to anagramatize the name of Wittenberge to one of the Vniuersities of England, that scorn to be cofited honest plaine meaning men like their neighbours, for not so much as out of mutton and potage but they wil construe a meaning of Kings and Princes. Let one but name bread, they will interpret it to be the town of Bredan in the low countreyes ; if of beere he talkes, then straight he mocks the Countie Beroune in France. If of foule weather or a shower of raine, he hath relation to some that shall raigne next Infinite number of these phanatical strange hieroglyphicks haue these new decipherers framed to them selues, & stretcht words on the tenter hooks so miserably, that a man were as good, considering euerie circustace, write on cheuerell as on paper. For my part I would wish them not to deceiue the selues with the spirit of inspiration without prooffe, or confound Logicke by making no difference *betwixtprobabile* and *manifeste verum*. Yet neither doe I grant the any right *probabile*, but a peece of a lame likelihood, as much as if one shuld thus argue, such two me are alike, for the one hath a scar in his foot, the other in his face. It was not without cause that *Lucilius*, in *Tullies* second booke *de Oratore*, wisht to be blest from two sorts of readers, to wit, the too learned & the too ignorant, for the one wil cast beyond the Moone in imaginations vpon wordes, the other will scarce vnderstand common sence.

This I will mildly say to them that haue entertained this mislike, if there be anie thing they may iustly take offence at, and wherein to the full I cannot priuatly satisfie them, I craue no delay of the sentence of detraction and infamie. If in this Epistle I should rip vp and canuasse blind cauils, some light brains would imagine I went about to get new fame to their disgrace. A number of excellent wel conceived learned men in that Vniuersity there be whom I loue and honor with my hart, and vnto whom I would sooner commit my selfe to be censured, then to all the

world besides. Had I the least suspicion or inkling this ignominious ill opinion were settled in their conceits, nothing should stay me from running my countrie. Euen of the meanest and basest, whatsoere hee be, that is once
5 admitted and matriculated amongst them, I desire to be thought fauourably of. Onely the bloud of the *Harrys* put by, who if they should once grow into the least liking of me, I would sinfully loth my selfe while I liued.

But for a mans very name in the way of praise to come in
10 a noted fooles mouth, is an vtter blemish to him and to his heires. I warrant the heralds wil giue him such an Item in his armes for it, as he shall neuer claw off.

Graue learned curteous Gentlemen, in a word I wil end with you ; I had no allusion in sentence, word, or sillable
15 vnto anie of you when I writ the entertainment at Wittenberge, and let so much suffice to your contentment.

What talke I so long of *lacke Wilton* ? I may tell you he hath but a sleight wringing by the eares, in comparison of the heauie | penance my poore Teares here haue en- a' av
20 dured, to turne them cleane vnto tares: there be that haue laboured, and haue got salt Catars in their throats with vehemgt railing vpon it. The plodding sort of vnlearned Zoilists about London exclaim that it is a puft-vp stile, and full of prophane eloquence: others obiect vnto me the
25 multitude of my boystrous compound wordes, and the often coyning of Italionate verbes which end all in Ize, as mummianize, tympanize, tyrannize. To the first array of my clumperton Antigonists this I answer, that my stile is no otherwise puft up, then any mas should be which writes
30 with any Spirite; and whom would not such a deuine subiect put a high raushte Spirite into? For the prophanesse of my eloquence, so they may tearme the eloquence of *Sainct Austen, Ierome, Chrysostome*, prophane, since none of them but takes vnto him farre more liberty of Tropes,
35 Figures, and Metaphors, and alleadging Heathen examples and Histories.

To the second rancke of reprehenders that complain of my boystrous compound wordes, and ending my Italionate coyned verbes all in Ize, thus I replie: That no winde that blowes strong but is boystrous, no speech or wordes of any power or force to confute or perswade but mustbee swelling and boystrous. Fof the compounding of my wordes, therein I imitate rich men who, hauing gathered store of white single money together, conuert a number of those small little scutes into great peeces of gold, such as double Pistols and Portugues; Our English tongue of all Ian-10 guages most swarmeth with the single money of monasilables, which are the onely scandall of it. Bookes written in them and no other seeme like Shop-keepers boxes, that Containe nothing else saufc halfe-pence, three-farthings, and two-pences. Therefore what did me I, but hauing a huge 15 heape of those worthlesse shfeds of small English in my *Pia Waters* purse, to make the royaller shew with them to mens eyes, had the to the compounders immediately, and exchanged theta foure into one, and others into more, according to thfc Greek, French, Spanish, and Italian? 20

Come, my maisters, Inure your mouths to it, and neuer trust me but when you haue tride the commodity of carrying much in a small roome, you will, like the Apothecaries, 2'3 vse more com-|pounds then simples, and graft wordes as men do their trees to make them more fruitfull. My vbraided 25 Italionate verbes are the least crime of a thousand, since they are growne in generall request with euery good Poet.

Besides, they carrie farre more state with them then any other, and are not halfe so harsh in their desinence as the old hobling English verbes eriding in R; they expresse more 3° then any other verbes whatsoever, and their substantiues would be quite barraine of verbs but for that ending. This word Mummianizd in the beginning of my first Epistle is shrewdly called in question; for no other reason that I can conceiue, but that his true deriuatiue, which is Mummy, is somewhat 35 obscure also: To Phisitions and their confectioners it is as familiar as Mumchance amongst Pages, being nothing

else but mans flesh long buried and broyled in the burning sands of Arabia. Hereupon I haue taken vp this phrase of Ieruselems Mummianized earth, (as much to say as Ieruselems earth manured with mans flesh.) Expreſſe who can the
5 same substance so briefly in any other word but that. A man may murder any thing if hee list in the mouthing, and grinde it to powder extempore betwixt a huge paire of iawes: but let a quest of calme censors goe vpon it twixt the houres of sixe and seauen in the morning, and they will
10 in their graue wisdoms subscribe to it as tollerable and significant.

Madde heads ouer a dish of stewd prunes are terrible mockers: 6, but the other pint of wine cuts the throat of *Spencer* and euerie body. To them I discend by degrees of
15 Apologie, who condemne me all to vineger for my bitterness. It will bee some of their destinies to carrie the vineger bottle ere they die, for being so desperate in preiudice. No more adoe, but if they wilbe good Costerd-mungers or Vintners, they must make choise of such fruit
20 and wine which is sweetly sower and pleasantly sharp. The Bee is a creature not so bigge as a Wart with thorough hairs on an old wiuers chin, yet he is priuiledged, in so much as he is free of Honny lane, to bestir him with his sting as ordinarily as a Sergeant with his mace. Then wherefore
25 should they hate vs for our sting that bring forth Honny as well as they?

Singular happie are those that are acquainted with the true | mixture of Alchimists musically gold, and can, with a³
Platoes Gorgias) proue vnrighteousnesse true godlinesse with
30 a breath; they shall be prouided for sumptuously, when sooth and verity may walke melancholy in Marke Lane. Wise was Saint *Thomas* that choose rather to go preach to the Indians then his owne countrey men. There he might be sure to haue gold inough, here is none. Some write he
35 was slaine at Malaqua, a prouince of that countrey. It is better to be slaine abroad then Hue at home without money.

Haue at you, backebiters, with a bargaine; raile vpon me till
 your tongues rotte, short cut and long-taile, for groats a peece
 euery quarter. Mince mee betwixt your teeth as small as
 Oatmeale, I care not, so I haue Crownes for your scofs;
 Without paying me any Tribute, as it seemes you spare not 5
 to doe it, but the best is, bring you as many needles as you
 will, I haue Loadstones to touch them. There is a moun-
 taine in *Cyrenaica* consecrated to the South-wind, which if
 it be toucht with a mans hand, there arise exceeding boy-
 strous blastes, that tosse and turmoile the sands like waues 10
 of the Sea. As great a miracle as that in me is experienst,
 for let me but touch a peece of paper, there arise such
 stormes and tempestes about my eares as is admirable.
 Euen of sands and superficiall bubbles they will make hideous
 waues and dangerous quicke-sands. This is my last will 15
 and Testament: those that tosse at me, ile tosse at them
 againe if I can, alwayes prouided it bee not a Tennice-play
 of Pots and Cups, like the Centaurs feast. Diuinity is the
 ground-worke of my Booke, no more herein will I doe then
 shall haue his ground from Diuinity. Farewell, Paules ao
 Church-yard, till I see thee next, which shall not be long.

Tho. Nashe.

22 *This epistle is followed by a cancel leaffor X 3, which sofar as it differs
 from that originally issued, will be found in the footnote on pages 158-9. The
 rest of the book consists of the sheets of the first edition, from A onwards.*

THE VNFORTVNATE TRAVELLER

Entry in the Stationers Register:

xvij^{mo} die Septembris [1593].

John wolf.' Entred for his Copie vnder th[e h]andes of
the [Arch] Bishop of Canterburie and the
wardens, A booke intituled the vnfortunate
travellour. vji
(*S. R.*, ed. Arber, II. 636.)

Editions : (i) Early :

1594 (A), [head ornament] | THE | VNFORTVNATE |
TRAVELLER. | *Or*, \ The life of lacke Wilton. | *Qui*
audiunt audita dicunt. \ Tho. Nafhe. | [device] | LONDON, |
Printed by T. Scarlet for C. Burby, & are to be fold at
his | (hop adioyning to the Exchange. | 1594.

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-O⁴. (A i) Title, v. blank. *Az*'*To the right*
Honorable Lord Henrie Wriothsley . . .' *Rom.* R-T. [almost
entirely cut off in copy used, possibly *The Epistle Dedicatorie*.
(A 3) 'To the Gentlemen Readers.' *Ital. and Rom.* (A 3)^v 'The
Induction to the dapper Mounsier Pages . . .' *Ital. and Rom.* R-T.
The Induction to the Pages. (A4) blank. B. THE VN-
FORTVNATE TRAVELLER.' *B. Z., Rom. and Ital.* R-T.
The vnfortunate Trauellen (O4)^v blank.

Signatures are in Black Letter, except that of A 2, which is Roman
with Italic numeral. A 3 is not signed. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words : A 2. of A 3^v. *which* B I. and C I. you D I.
they E i. of F i. (slot-)ten, G I. to Hi. ouer ii. eies,
K i. It Li. com-(pelled) M i. (coun-)saile N I. Heres O I. I
(All in Black Letter, except A 2 and F i in Roman, and A 3^v in
Italic.)

Copy used: That in the British Museum (96. b. 17, (2)). Some of the
running-titles have been shorn off in this copy. I have been unable
to refer to any other.

188 THE UNFORTUNATE TRAVELLER

1594 (B). THE UNFORTUNATE Traveller. OR, The life of lacke Wilton. Newly corrected and augmented. *Qui audiunt audita dicunt'* THO. NASHE. [ornament] j LONDON, Imprinted by Thomas Scarlet for Cuthbert Burby. 1594. [Within border.]

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation : A-M⁴. (A i) Title, V. blank. A 2 'The Induction to the dapper Mounsier Pages of the Court! Rom. and Ital. R-T. The Induction to the Pages. A 3 'The vnfortunate Traueller.' B. L. Rom. and Ital R-T. The vnfortunate [or Vnfortunate] Traueller. (M 4) blank.

The running-title on sheets B, C, D, I, K is in larger type than that on other sheets, while the number of lines to the inch and the general style of the workmanship also differ considerably, showing that these sheets were executed by a different printer from the others. See below, *Note on the printing of the second edition*.

Signatures are in Black Letter, except that of A 2, which is in Roman. Leaf M 2 is signed O 2. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words: A 2. wont A 3. troth B I. bet-(ter) C I. where D I. domi-(nion) E i. swolne F I. againe G I. of Hi. (famili-)aritie H. crownes K I. (in-)terpretation (?) L I. Heres M i. I (All in Black Letter, except that of A 2, which is in Roman. That of K I is almost entirely cut off in the copy used, as also in that at Rowfant.)

Copy used: That in the Bodleian Library (Wood, 31. C. (3.))

(2) *Modern Editions*:

1883-4 (Gro.) The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe . . . edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. v, pp. 1-186.

From the copy of edition A in the British Museum.

1892 (Gosse) The Unfortunate Traveller or the Life of Jack Wilton: with an essay on the life and writings of Thomas Nash by Edmund Gosse. London: Printed and issued by Charles Whittingham & Co. at the Chiswick Press, MDCCCXCII.

From edition A. It is not stated by whom, or from what copy of the original, this edition was prepared, but I am informed by the publishers that the work was executed under the supervision of Mr. Gosse. So far as my observation extends, it is a very accurate

reproduction of the first edition, by a long way the most accurate of any reprint of a work of Nashe which is known to me. The spelling and punctuation of the original is retained, only a few obvious misprints, such as those of commas for full stops and the like, being corrected. In the absence of notes of any kind it is impossible to tell whether the very occasional verbal deviations are intentional or not. I should say that I have not noticed any which could not well come within this category.

1903' (The present edition.)

From the copy of edition B in the Bodleian Library, with collations from the copy of A at the British Museum. As stated below, I am very doubtful whether all the differences between the two editions are due to the author, and in a considerable number of cases have felt bound to recur to the readings of the first edition.

It may be mentioned that edition B is very badly printed from worn type on poor paper. Hence one constantly meets with letters that are so imperfect or so blurred that it is quite impossible to be certain of their identity, for instance e is often indistinguishable from c and n from u. It would evidently have been useless to record all these doubtful letters, and I have therefore noted as misprints those cases alone in which the letter used seemed to be certainly or almost certainly a wrong one.

Further, it may be remarked that B frequently omits the hyphen when such a word as 'within' or ; thereby' is divided at the end of a line. The omission is clearly without significance, and I have therefore generally ignored it and printed the word either as one or with a hyphen according as it appeared in the first edition.

Readings marked Q are in the spelling of A, and therefore differ occasionally from that given in the text.

Note on the printing of the second edition (B).

It will be found that a clear understanding of the manner in which the printing of the second edition of *The Unfortunate Traveller* was executed will be of assistance to us in forming an opinion on the relative merits of the two editions, and on the question as to what extent the variations in the second represent changes made by the author.

The book was clearly the work of two printers. This is indicated both by the varying size of the headline and by

the great difference in the workmanship in certain sheets. Further, the number of lines to the inch varies in the two sets of sheets into which the book may, on the ground of the differences just mentioned, be divided, showing that either the body of the type was of a different size or different leads were employed. The face of the type appears also to differ, but, on account of the imperfect execution, especially of one printer's portion, and the greatly worn condition of the type, it is difficult to speak with complete certainty on this point.

The distribution of the work between the two printers, whom we may call X and Y, is as follows. I add in each case the number of lines to the page in each sheet, taking no notice of exceptional pages such as those in which verse is introduced, and one (D 2) in which a single word forms an additional line, in order evidently to bring a paragraph to a conclusion on the page.

Sheet A (39) is the work of X.

Sheets B, C (40) and D (39) are the work of Y.

Sheets E (39) and F, G, H (40) are the work of X.

Sheets I, K (40) are the work of Y.

Sheets L, M (38) are the work of X.

With reference to the number of lines to the page I need only say that the thirty-eight of the last two sheets is due to the fact that in these the first edition, which had thirty-eight throughout, is followed page for page and approximately line for line. The number of lines in other sheets was evidently determined by the amount of matter that the printer wished to get into them. The whole work occupies, as may be seen by reference to the description of the editions, a smaller number of pages in B than in A.

It is obvious that when the execution of a book is shared between two printers, it is most convenient, almost indeed necessary, to divide the copy at the end of a leaf, whether it is in manuscript or in the form of a printed book, and that in the latter case it would be most natural to divide at the end of a sheet. We find that ends of sheets correspond

in two cases in the two editions: thus D^{B1} ends as E^A, and K^B as M^A. In the latter case the correspondence is exact, in the former there is a difference of six words, which in A begin sheet F, but in B end sheet D. They are the closing words of a sentence, and it seems natural to suppose that the Y printer added them to his copy², to save the trouble of ending his portion with a full line. As a matter of fact he has not done so and these words appear in B to end a paragraph, which they were probably not intended to do.

Consideration will, I think, show that the work must have been carried out in the following manner. First X set up sheet A. Then he handed over the copy, as far as the end of E^A, to Y, who set it up, making exactly three sheets of it. In the meantime X started again from F^A, and, while Y was setting up B, C, D^B, executed sheets E, F, G, H^B. They then again divided what remained of the copy, Y continuing from where X had left off and setting up sheets I, K^B, while X completed the last two sheets, L and M.

Note on the Editions:

The second edition of *The Unfortunate Traveller* seems hitherto, strangely enough, to have generally escaped notice, and this in spite of the fact that it bears on the title-page the words 'Newly corrected and augmented.' and that there is a copy in a library no less well known than the Bodleian³.

¹ By this notation I mean sheet D in edition B.

^a I assume here that B was printed throughout from a copy of A. There can be, I think, no doubt that this was actually the case, but the point will be discussed later.

³ The only other copy of this edition at present known to me is in Mr. Locker-Lampson's Library at Rowfant, and unfortunately wants the title-page. The compilers of the catalogue of this library in 1886 noted that the arrangement of the text in this copy differed from that of the copy of the book in the British Museum, but were unaware that there was one in the Bodleian with which, it corresponded. I am informed by Mr. W. W. Greg, who very kindly examined the Rowfant copy for me, that the statement in the catalogue that it contains the dedication to the Earl of Southampton is an error.

It differs from the first edition in the following respects:

(1) The dedication to the Earl of Southampton is omitted.

(2) Two short passages are added (see p. 247, ll. 31—2, and p. 280, ll. 18-20), and there are throughout numerous minor changes in wording. In three instances complete sentences, each of about one line in length, are omitted (see p. 266, ll. 18-9, p. 268, ll. 26-7, and p. 278, ll. 33-4). These latter are probably mere errors, as in every case the sense of the passage suffers considerably by the omission.

(3) There are a number of changes in the punctuation and paragraph-division.

(4) The corrections indicated in the errata of the first edition are all made.

(5) The date at the end is omitted.

In order to decide which of these editions represents the author's final text it is necessary to consider the following points: (1) whether B was printed from a copy of A, or whether the variations between the two editions can be due to their having been set up from different manuscripts; (2) if we decide that B was actually printed from A, whether the differences are due to deliberate correction on the part of the author or some other person; whether they are changes introduced by the printer, or at his request, for his own convenience, or, lastly, whether they are due to printers' errors.

It may be said without hesitation that at least the last two sheets of B were certainly printed from A, for they correspond page for page with the last two of that edition. In the case of the other sheets we have no such direct proof that the same course was followed, but what evidence there is seems to point to this. It would be the usual and natural course; the manner of distribution of the work between the two printers is most easily explained on that assumption, and we have nowhere the slightest evidence of the use of an independent manuscript. Further, we find certain peculiarities in the second edition which seem somewhat more easily to be explained by supposing corrections to have

been made in the first edition (or in the proofs of the second) than by supposing a separate copy to have been before the compositor. These, though individually trifling, seem when taken together to strengthen the case.

On p. 229, l. 34, by the alteration of *on* to *of* in the phrase *if those that were sicke of this maladie slept on it, they neuer wakt more*, an entirely new sense is produced, and this new sense, which is evidently the correct one, absolutely requires that the phrase should form a separate sentence. The fact that it is merely divided from what precedes by a comma, as in A, seems to me a strong reason for concluding that it was printed from A.

On p. 236, l. 10, we have what appears to be a correction of A only partially carried out, the readings being *farre be it my under age argumentes shoulde intrude* A: *farre be it from my vnder-age arguments should intrude* B. I suspect that it was intended also to correct *shoulde* to *to*, but by mistake the second part of the correction was passed over.

On p. 263, l. 2i) we have *wooe women* A: *wooe a women* B. This looks like imperfect correction for *wooe a woman*.

Lastly, on p. 292, ll. 31-3, we have in A the three verbs *swells*, *raues*, and *doates*, all in the indicative mood. In B the first and last of these are altered to the subjunctive, appearing as *swell* and *doate*, but *r-aues* stands as in A. In all these cases and in some others like them, but of less significance, which I cannot here notice, the text of B seems more naturally to be explained as due to correction of A than as being that of an independent manuscript'.

If we then conclude, as I think we must, that B was printed from a copy of A, we have next to consider to

¹ I fully recognize that instances of this nature are far from amounting to conclusive proof, so far indeed that it may seem to some otiose to give them. At the same time, perhaps others will agree with me in thinking that were I, while affirming that B was printed from a corrected copy of A, to be unable to bring forward cases of what appear to be corrections wrongly interpreted or carelessly carried out by the printer, this would of itself be a strong reason for refusing assent to my theory.

what extent the differences between the two editions can be set down to deliberate correction on the part of the author.

A study of the collations given can, I believe, lead to but one conclusion, namely, that a large number of the changes are certainly intentional alterations which can only have been made with the object of improving the style. It is manifestly impossible here to call attention to all of these individually, but I would especially instance the numerous variations on B i' and B a. Another striking example occurs on B 2^v, where A has *Resteth no waie for you to climbe sodainly, but by doing some straunge stratageme, that the like hath not bene heard of heeretofore, and fitly at this instant occasion is ministred.* In B this runs *Resteth no way for you to clime sodenly, but by doing some rare stratageme, the like not before heard of, and fit lie at this time occasion is offered.* The shortening seems to be due to the desire for conciseness which is apparent in a great number of the alterations; the substitution of *rare* for *straunge* supplies a more appropriate and, in the context, more euphonious word; that of *time* for *instant* suggests that the corrector may have noticed the possibility of the latter word being mistakenly read as an adjective, while, lastly, *ministered* was perhaps rejected as, in the circumstances, somewhat pedantic or high-flown.

Besides such changes as these there are, however, a number on K 4 which, I think, may possibly be due to an entirely different cause. As I have already said in describing the edition, B was the work of two printers, whom, to distinguish them, I called X and Y. Now the last two sheets executed by Y, namely I and K, correspond to two sheets and about two and three-quarter pages of A, for the opening words of I in B are slightly more than a quarter of the way down K 3^v in A. He would of course be obliged so to arrange his work as he went on, that when he came to the end of the second sheet these extra two and three-quarter pages, should be all taken up.

On K4, the last page but one of his portion, we find

a number of changes all tending to shorten the text. These readings cannot possibly be corrections ; the text is in no case improved and in one instance becomes almost unintelligible. I suggest therefore that the printer, on coming to the end of K 3^v, may have found that, by some miscalculation, he had still two and a half pages of copy to get into two pages of print (i. e. some five or six lines too much), and that, in order to render this possible, he himself, perhaps with the consent of the author, made the alterations in question¹.

Of other changes there are a certain number for which I can suggest no reason whatever, and there are a few which, while they are apparently meant for corrections, seem to be the work of some person who had not thoroughly considered the sense of the passage which he was altering. Some of these may be due to the vagaries of the compositor, but the book as a whole is not particularly carelessly, though very badly, printed, the number of ordinary misprints not being unusually high for works of this class.

Besides changes in wording we find a great number of differences in punctuation. It has of course been impossible to note all these, and beyond those by which the sense is affected only a few which seemed of more than usual importance have been given. One general tendency in these changes may perhaps be noted, namely, the very frequent running of two sentences into one, especially at the end of a paragraph².

There is further a considerable difference in paragraph-division in the two editions. On the whole perhaps B is superior in this respect, but there is really very little to choose between the two editions, and I have frequently

¹ If it be asked why it is not on the last page of F's work but on the last but one that these shortenings occur, I can only say that he may have found that the rest could be got in without further change. It would obviously be safer, if he thought shortening would be necessary, not to leave it until quite the end.

² Examples are especially numerous in the last two sheets. Others are noted at pp. 219. 6, 251. 33, 293. ii, &c.

thought it best to recur to A, believing as I do that in any case these paragraph-divisions are of no great authority¹.

In B there is somewhat greater regularity in the use of italics and capitals, but neither edition is particularly correct in these points.

To sum up; the second edition is evidently corrected, though in a number of cases the corrections seem hardly improvements and though in a few the readings are manifestly inferior to those of the first. Whether the changes were the work of Nashe himself it is, I think, not possible to say. In the absence of evidence to the contrary, it seems natural to suppose that they were, and though we find in them nothing which especially betrays his hand the two passages added in the second edition seem more likely to have been inserted by the author than by any one else.

Even were the changes throughout for the worse and the second edition as a whole inferior to the first, it would be no proof that Nashe did not himself make them². No one will maintain that *The Unfortunate Traveller* is the first or the last book which, by the author, has been 'amended' to its detriment. The corrections seem for the most part to have been dictated by a desire for greater conciseness and precision of language; a direct mode of expression is substituted for one more roundabout, though sometimes more natural, and a simpler, more strictly correct word takes the

¹ A comparison of the variations in this respect between the two seems indeed to show almost conclusively that they were for the most part due to the printers, and not to correction by the author. There are fifty-one cases of a new paragraph being begun in B, where A runs on: of these forty-seven occur in the sheets printed by the F-printer (B-D, I, K). There are twenty cases of running-on in B, where in A we have a new paragraph: of these sixteen occur in the work of the Jf-printer (E-H). In sheet A and in the two sheets where the first edition is followed page for page there are no changes at all. It seems to me almost impossible that such a strange distribution should be a mere matter of chance.

I should state that, to avoid complication, I have left out of account those cases, seven in number, in which, in one or other of the editions, it seems somewhat doubtful whether a new paragraph was intended.

² So far at least as they are corrections and not corruptions or changes such as those on K 4 which I have proposed to attribute to the printer.

place of one which, while more open to challenge, perhaps conveys an additional or finer shade of meaning. Such changes, I think, might easily be made by a classical scholar whose ideas of correctness were chiefly derived from the more severe Latin authors, and of correction from the way in which a tutor would deal with his pupils' Latin prose. English was at this time in too fluctuant a state to offer models of its own.

This, however, is a mere guess. That Nashe was frequently dissatisfied with the style of his works we know from his frequent complaints that they were written in haste and issued uncorrected, but of how he would, had occasion offered, have corrected them, we have no means of judging. The changes in the second and third editions of *Pierce Penilesse* are for the most part of quite a different nature from these here; the majority are corrections of single words and are rather on grounds of sense than of style.

But fortunately it is not now considered to be the duty of an editor to pick and choose among the variant readings of his author's works those which he himself would prefer in writings of his own, but merely to present those works as he believes the author to have intended them to appear. Whether, from a literary point of view, the first or the second edition of *The Unfortunate Traveller* is the better, is perhaps open to question. But with this I have no concern whatever, at any rate here, for if an editor has reason to suppose that a certain text embodies later corrections than any other, and at the same time has no ground for disbelieving that these corrections, or some of them at least, are the work of the author, he has no choice but to make that text the basis of his reprint. I have therefore whenever possible, though sometimes, I own, not without regret, followed that edition which was said by the publisher to be 'Newly corrected and augmented.'



THE
UNFORTUNATE
TRAVELLER.

Or,

The life of lacke Wilton,

guiatiilitntattdita dumtt.

Tho.Naflic



LONDON.

Printed by T. Scarlet for C. Burby, & are to be sold at
shop adjoining to the Exchange,

1594-

*To the right Honorable Lord Henrie Wriothsley, A a
Earle of South-hampton and Baron
of Tichfeeld.*

5 **I**Ngenuous honorable Lord, I know not what blinde
custome methodicall antiquity hath thrust vpon vs, to
dedicate such books as we publish to one great man or
other; In which respect, least anie man should challenge
these my papers as goods vncustomd, and so extend vppon
them as forfeite to contempt, to the seale of your excellent
10 censure loe here I present them to bee seene and allowed.
Prize them as high or as low as you list: if you set anie price
on them, I hold my labor well satisfide. Long haue I
desired to approue my wit vnto you. My reuerent
duetifull thoughts (euen from their infancie) haue been
15 retayners to your glorie. Now at last I haue enforst an
opportunitie to plead my deuoted minde. All that in this
phantasticall Treatise I can promise, is some reasonable
conueyance of historic, & varietie of mirth. By diuers of
my good frends haue I been dealt with to employ my dul
20 pen in this kinde, it being a cleane different vaine from other
my former courses of writing. How wel or ill I haue done
in it, I am ignorant: (the eye that sees round about it selfe,
sees not into it selfe:) only your Honours applauding en-
couragement hath power to make mee arrogant. Incom-
25 prehensible is the heigth | of your spirit both in heroical A 2^v
resolution and matters of conceit. Vnrepriueably perisheth
that booke whatsoever to wast paper, which on the diamond
rocke of your iudgement disasterly chanceth to be ship-
wrackt. A dere loue and cherisher you are, as well of
30 the loners of Poets, as of Poets themselues. Amongst their
sacred number I dare not ascribe my selfe, though now and

then I speak English: that smal braine I haue to no further vse I conuert, saue to be kinde to my Trends and fatall to my enemies. A new brain, a new wit, a new stile, a new soule will I get mee, to canonize your name to posteritie, if in this my first attempt I be not taxed of pre- 5 sumption. Of your gracious fauor I despaire not, for I am not altogether Fames out-cast. This handfull of leaues I offer to your view, to the leaues on trees I compare, which as they cannot grow of themselues except they haue some branches or boughes to cleaue too, & with whose iuice and 10 sap they be euermore recreated & nourisht; so except these vnpolisht leaues of mine haue some braunch of Nobilitie whereon to depend and cleaue, and with the vigorous nutriment of whose authorized commendation they may be continually fosterd and refresht, neuer wil they 15 grow to the worlds good liking, but forthwith fade and die on the first houre of their birth. Your Lordship is the large spreading branch of renown, from whence these my idle leaues seeke to deriue their whole nourishing: it resteth you either scornfully shake them off, as worm-eaten & 20 worthies, or in pity preserue them and cherish them, for some litle summer frute you hope to finde amongst them.

Your Honors in all humble seruice:

Tho: Nashe.

9 except *Q.*

15 contiually *Q.*

Gentlemen, in my absence (through the Printers oversight, and my bad writing] in the leaues of C. and D. these err ours are ouer-slipt:

5 C. pag. 2. lin. 33. for sweating *read* sneaking. Pag. 3. li. I. for hogges *read* barres. lin. 7. for Calipsus, *read* Rhaesus. P. 4. lin. 34. for Liue *read* I Hue. Pag. 5. li. 14. for vpon his *read* vpon him his. Pag. 7. lin. 13. for drild *read* dyu'd. lin. 22. for colour) *read* collar nor his hat-10band).

D. Pag. i. lin. 2. for blacke m&.'cape. lin. 5. for fastens *read* thirleth. lin. 7. for badge m&.'budge. lin. 8. forshinne *read* chinne. lin. n. for in this begun *read* thinking in. Pag. 3. lin. 33. for increased then, *read* inclosed them. 15 Pag. 5. lin. 8. for threed button, *read* brest like a thred bottom. Pag. 8. lin. 3. for Essa *read* Ossa. lin. 4. for dissolution *read* desolation, lin. 13 betweene also *andbut, read* If you know Christianitie, you know the Fathers of the Church also. lin. 18. for quocunque *read* qua gente.

20 *Other literallfaults there are which I omit.*

Yours T. N.

I The whole of this is omitted in B. 4 Sheets C and Dofed. A correspond with p. ai8, .'. 3, to p. 337, .'. I I, of this edition. 8 read} Gro. : eead Q. 14 increafed Q. 17 also, and but read Q. 18 Farhers Q. 21 This epistle isfollowed in A by the Induction to the Pages and by the work itself, here reprinted from B.



THE
UNFORTV-
nate Traveller.

OR.
The life of lacke Wilrom,
Newly corrected and eng-
mented.

Qui audiant audite dicant.

THO, NASHE.



LONDON,
Imprinted by Thomas Scarlet
for Cuthbert Bmby.

1594

*The Induction to the dapper Mounsier
Pages of the Court.*

A 2

GAllant Squires, haue amongst you : at Mumchaunce
I meane not, for so I might chaunce come to short
5 commons, but at *nouus, noua, nouum*, which is in
English, newes of the maker. A proper fellow Page of
yours called *lack Wilton* by me commends him vnto you,
and hath bequeathed for wast paper here amongst you
certaine pages of his misfortunes. In anie case keepe them
10 preciously as a *priuie* token of his good will towardses you.
If there bee some better than other, he craues you would
honor them in theyr death so much as to drie & kindle
Tobacco with them: for a need he permits you to wrap
veluet pantofles in them also, so they bee not woe begone
15 at the heeles, or weather-beaten, lyke a blacke head with
graie hayres, or mangie at the toes, lyke an Ape about the
mouth. But as you loue good fellowship and ames ace,
rather turne them to stop mustard-pottes, than the Grocers
should haue one patch of them to wrap mace in : a strong
20 hot costly spice it is, which aboue all things he hates. To
anie vse about meat & drinke put them to and spare not,
for they cannot doe theyr cuntry better seruice. Printers
are madde whoorsons, allowe them some of them for nap-
kins, lost a little neerer to the matter & the purpose.
35 *Memorandum*, euerie one of you after the perusing of this
pamphlet is to prouide him a case of-ponyardes, that if
you come in companie with anie man which shall dispraise
it or speak against it, you may straight crie *Sic respondeo*,
and giue him the stockado. It standes not with your
30 honours (I assure ye) to haue a gentleman and a page
abusde in his absence. Secondly, whereas you were | wont A a
to swere men on a pantofle to be true to your puisant order,

you shall swere them on nothing but this Chronicle of the king of Pages hence forward. Thirdly, it shall be lawfull for anie whatsoeuer to play with false dice in a corner on the couer of this foresayd Acts and Monuments. None of the fraternitie of the minorites shall refuse it for a pawne 5 in the times of famine and necessitie. Euerie Stationers stall they passe by, whether by daie or by night, they shall put off theyr hats too, and make a low legge, in regard their grand printed Capitano is there entombd. It shalbe flat treason for anie of this fore-mentioned catalogue of the 10 point trussers once to name him within fortie foote of an alehouse : marry, the tauerne is honorable. Many special graue articles more had I to giue you in charge, which your wisdomes waiting together at the bottom of the great chamber stakes, or sitting in a porch (your parliament house), us may better consider off than I can deliuer: onely let this suffice for a tast to the text, and a bitte to pull on a good wit with, as a rasher on the coles is to pull on a cup of Wine.

Heigh passe, come alofte: euerie man of you take
 your places, and heare *lacke Wil-* 20
ton tell his owne Tale.

2 *shalbe* A, 12 *ale-house*. *Marry* A : alehouse, mary B. *iof* A.

The 'unfortunate Tra,leller.

A 3

A Bout that time that the terror of the world and feauer
quartane of the French, *Henrie* the eight (the
onely true subiect of Chronicles), advanced his
5 standard against the two hundred and fifty towers of *Turney*
and *Turwin*, and had the Emperour and all the nobilitie of
Flanders, Holand, & Brabant as mercenane attendants on
his ful-sayld fortune, I, *lacke Wilton*, (a Gentleman at least,)
was a certain kind of an appendix or page, belonging or
10 appertaining in or vnto the confines of the English court;
where what my credit was, a number of my creditors that
I cosned can testifie: *Coelum petimus stultitia*, which of vs
al is not a sinner? Bee it knowen to as many as will paie
mony inough to peruse my storie, that I folowed the court
15 or the camp, or the campe and the court, when *Turwin* lost
her maidenhead, and opened her gates to more than *lane*
Trosse did. There did I (soft, let me drinke before I go
anie further) raigne sole king of the cans and blacke iackes,
prince of the pigmeis, countie palatine of cleane straw and
ao prouant, and, to conclude, Lord high regent of rashers of
the coles and red herring cobs. *Pauld maiora canatnus*.
Well, to the purpose. What stratagemicall acts and monu-
ments doo you thinke an ingenious infant of my yeeres
might enact? you will say, it were sufficient if he slur a die,
25 pawn his master to the vtmost peny, and minister the oath
of the pantofle arteficially. These are signes of good
education, I must confesse, and arguments of In grace and
vertue to proceed. Oh, but *Aliquid latet quod non patet*,

8 lest A. 12 testifie, Q: testifie. Gro. 14-5 the campe or the court,
or the court & the camp A. 21-2 *canamus*: well A. 23 yeeres]
age A. 26 on the pautoffle A.

theres a further path I must trace: examples confirme;
 list, lordings, to my proceedings. Who so euer is acquainted
 with the state of a campe vnderstandes that in it be many
 quarters, and yet not so many as on *London* bridge. In
 those quarters are many companies: Much companie, much 5
 knauery, as true as that olde adage, Much Curtesie, much
 subtiltie. Those companies, lyke a greate deale of corne,
 do yeeld some chaffe; the corne are cormorants, the chaffe
 are good fellowes, which are quickly blowen to nothing
 wyth bearing a light heart in a lyght purse. Artiongest 10
 this chaffe was I winnowing my wittes to Hue merrily, and
 A 3^v by my | troth so I did: the prince could but command men
 spend their bloud in his seruice, I could make them spend
 al the mony they had for my pleasure. But pouertie in
 the end partes friends; though I was prince of their purses, 15
 & exacted of my vnthrifte subiects as much liquid
 alleageance as any keisar in the world could doe, yet where
 it is not to bee had the king must loose his right: want
 cannot bee withstoode, men can doe no more than they can
 doe: what remained then, but the foxes case must help, 20
 when the lions skin is out at the elbowes?

There was a Lord in the campe, let him be a Lord of
 misrule if you will, for he kept a plaine alehouse without
 welt or gard of anie iuybush, and sold syder and cheese by
 pint and by pound to all that came, (at the verie name of 25
 sider I can but sigh, there is so much of it in renish wine
 now a daies.) Well, *Tendit ad sydera virtus*, thers great
 vertue belongs (I can tel you) to a cup of sider, and very
 good men haue sold it, and at sea it is *Aqua ccelestis*; but
 thats neither here nor there, if it had no other patrone but 30
 this peere of quart pottes to authorize it, it were sufficient.
 This great Lord, this worthie Lord, this noble Lord,
 thought no scorne (Lord, haue mercie vpon vs) to haue his
 great veluet breeches larded with the droppinges of this
 daintie liquor, & yet he was an old seruitor, a cauelier of 35
 an ancient house, as might appeare by the armes of his

ancestors, drawn verie amiably in chalke on the in side of his tent dore.

He and no other was the man I chose out to damne with a lewd monillesse deuce ; for comming to him on a day, as
 5 he was counting his barels and setting the price in chalke on the head of them, I did my dutie very deuoutly, and tolde his *alie* honor I had matters of some secrecy to impart vnto him, if it pleased him to grant me priuate audience. With me, yong *Wilton*, qd. he, mary, and shalt:
 10 bring vs a pint of syder of a fresh tap into the three cups here, wash the pot: so into a backe roome hee lead me, where after he had spitte on his finger, and pickt of two or three moats of his olde moth eaten veluet cap, and spunged and wrong all the rumatike driuell fro his ill fauored goats
 15 beard, he bad me declare my minde, and thereupon hee dranke to mee on the same. I vp with a long circumstance, alias, a cunning shift of the seuenteenes, and discourst vnto him what entire affection I had borne him time out of minde, partly for the high | descent and linage from A 4
 a0 whence hee sprong, and partly for the tender care and prouident respect he had of pore souldiers, that, whereas the vastitie of that place (which afforded them no indifferent supply of drink or of victuals) might humble them to some extremitie, and so weaken their handes, he vouchsafed in
 25 his owne person to be a victualler to the campe (a rare example of magnificence and honorable curtesy), and diligently provided that without farre trauell euerie man might for his money haue syder and cheese his belly full; nor did hee sell his cheese by the way onely, or his syder
 30 by the great, but abast himself with his owne hands to take a shoemakers knife (a homely instrument for such a high personage to touch) and cut it out equally, lyke a true iusticiarie, in little pennyworths that it would doo a man good for to looke vpon. So likewise of his syder, the pore
 35 man might haue his moderate draught of it (as there is a

I ancestors] ancestry A'
 quoth A. 20 sprung A.

6 of euerie one of them A.
 30 hands] A : stands B.

9 qd.]

moderation in all things) as well for his doit or his dandi-
 prat as the rich man for his half souse or his denier. Not
 so much, quoth I, but this Tapsters linnen apron which
 you weare to protect your apparell from the imperfections
 of the spigot, most amply bewrays your lowly minde. I 5
 speake it with teares, too few such noble men haue wee,
 that will drawe drinke in linnen aprons. Why, you are
 euerie childes fellow ; anie man that comes vnder the name
 of a souldier and a good fellowe, you will sit and beare
 companie to the last pot, yea, and you take in as good part 10
 the homely phrase of Mine host, heeres to you, as if one
 saluted you by all the titles of your baronie. These con-
 siderations, I saie, which the world suffers to slip by in the
 channell of forgetfulnes, haue moued me, in ardent zeale of
 your welfare, to forewarne you of some dangers that haue 15
 beset you and your barrels. At the name of dangers hee
 start vp, and bounst with his fist on the boord so hard that
 his tapster ouer-hearing him, cried, anone, anone, sir, by
 and by, and came and made a low legge and askt him
 what he lackt. Hee was readie to haue striken his tapster ao
 for interrupting him in attention of this his so much desired
 relation, but for feare of displeasing mee hee moderated his
 furie, & onely sending for the other fresh pint, wild him looke
 to the barre, & come when he is cald with a deuils name.
 Well, at his earnest importunitie, after I had moistned my 25
 lippes to make my lie run glibbe to his iourneies end, for-
 A 4' ward I went | as followeth. It chanced me the other night,
 amongst other pages, to attend where the King, with his
 Lordes and many chiefe leaders, sate in counsell: there,
 amongst sundrie serious matters that were debated, and 30
 intelligences from the enemy giuen vp, it was priuily
 informed (no villains to these priuie informers) that you,
 euen you that I nowe speake to, had—(O would I had no
 tong to tell the rest; by this drinke it grieues me so I am

4 weare before you, to A. 5 bewraies A : bewray B. minde, I B. 6 such
 humble spirited noble men A. 11 mine Q. 14 forgetfulnes] care-
 leines A. 23 sending him for A' 26 ioueneies B. 28 amongst A.

not able to repeat it.) Nowe was my drunken Lord
 readie to hang himselfe for the ende of the full point, and
 ouer my necke he throwes himself verie lubberly, and
 intreated me, as I was a proper young Gentleman and euer
 5 lookt for pleasure at his handes, soone to rid him out of
 this hell of suspence, and resolue him of the rest: then fell
 hee on his knees, wrong his handes, and I thinke on my
 conscience, wepte out all the syder that he had dronke in a
 weeke before: to moue mee to haue pittie on him, he rose
 10 & put his rustic ring on my finger, gaue mee his greasie
 purse with that single mony that was in it, promised to
 make mee his heire, and a thousand more fauours, if I
 woulde expire the miserie of his vnspeakable tormenting
 vncertaintie. I, beeing by nature inclined to *Mercie* (for
 15 in deede I knewe two or three good wenches of that
 name), bad him harden his eares, and not make his eies
 abortiue before they time, and he should haue the inside of
 my brest turnd outward, heare such a tale as would tempt
 the vtmost strength of lyfe to attend it and not die in the
 20 midst of it. Why (quoth I), my selfe that am but a poore
 childish well-wilier of yours, with the verie thought that a
 man of your deserte and state by a number of pesants and
 varlets shoulde be so iniuriously abused in hugger mugger,
 haue wepte all my vrine vpwarde. The wheele vnder our
 25 citie bridge carries not so much water ouer the citie, as my
 braine hath welled forth gushing streames of sorrow: I haue
 wepte so immoderatly and lauishly that I thought verily
 my palat had bin turned to pissing Conduit in *London*.
 My eyes haue bin dronke, outrageously dronke, wyth giuing
 30 but ordinarie entercourse through their sea-circled Hands
 to my distilling dreriment. What shal I say? that which
 malice hath saide is the meere ouerthrow and murder of
 your daies. Change not your colour, none can slander a
 cleere conscience to it self; receiue al your fraught of
 35 misfortune in at once. |

9 before: to] *Gro.*: before, to *Q.* 20 midstest *A.* 29 outrageously *B.*
 32 murder *A.* 33 your] *A.*: these *B.*

B i It is buzzed in the Kings head that you are a secret friend to the Enemy, and vnder pretence of getting a License to furnish the Campe with syder and such like prouant, you haue furnisht the Enemy, & in emptie barrels sent letters of discouerie and corne innumerable. 5

I might wel haue left here, for by this time his white liuer had mixt it selfe with the white of his eye, and both were turned vpwards, as if they had offered themselues a faire white for death to shoote at. The troth was, I was verie loath mine hoste and I should part with drye lips: wherefore 10 the best meanes that I could imagine to wake hym out of his traunce, was to crie loud in his eare, Hoe, hoste, whats to pay? will no man looke to the reckoning here? And in plaine veritie it tooke expected effect, for with the noyse he started and bustled, lyke a man that had beene scarde 15 with fire out of his sleepe, and ran hastely to his Tapster, and all to belaboured him about the eares, for letting Gentlemen call so long and not looke in to them. Presently he remembred himselfe, and had like to fall into his memento againe, but that I met him halfe waies and askt his Lordship what hee meant to slip his necke out of the collar so sodainly, and, being reuiued, stryke hys Tapster so hastely.

Oh (quoth he), I am bought and sold for dooing my Countrey such good seruice as I haue done. They are 25 afraid of me, because my good deedes haue brought me into such estimation with the Comminaltie. I see, I see, it is not for the lambe to Hue with the wolfe.

The world is well amended (thought I) with your Sidership; such another fortie yeares nap together as *Epeminedes* 30 had, would make you a perfect wise man. Answere me (quoth he), my wise yong *Wilton*, is it true that I am thus vnderhand dead and buried by these bad tongues?

Nay (quoth I), you shall pardon me, for I haue spoken too much alreadie; no definitiue sentence of death shall march 35

10 parte to heauen with A. la Hoe] hough A. 19 fall] haue
fallea A. 23 hastely] rashly A. 27 communally A. 30 *Epeminedes* A.

out of my well meaning lips; they haue but lately suckt milke, and shall they so sodainly change their food and seeke after bloud ?

Oh, but (quoth he) a mans friend is his friend; fill the
5 other pint, Tapster: what said the King? did he beleue it when he heard it? I pray thee say; I swear by my Nobilitie, none in the world shall euer be made priuie that I receiued anie light of this matter by thee.

That firme affiance (quoth I) had I in you before, or else
10 I wold neuer haue gone so farre ouer the shooes, to plucke you out of the myre. Not to make manie words, (since you will needs knowe,) the King saies flatly, you are a myser and a snudge, and he neuer hoped | better of you. Nay, then B i^v.
(quoth he) questionles some Planet that loues not Syder
15 hath conspired against me. Moreouer, which is worse, the King hath vowed to giue *Turwin* one hot breakfast onely with the bungs that he will plucke out of your barrells. I cannot stay at thys time to report each circumstance that passed, but the onely counsell that my long
20 cherished kinde inclination can possibly contriue, is now in your old daies to be liberall: such victualls or prouision as you haue, presently distribute it frankly amongst poore Souldiers; I would let them burst their bellies with Syder and bathe in it, before I would run into my Princes ill
25 opinion for a whole sea of it. The hunter pursuing the Beauer for his stones, hee bites them off, and leaues them behinde for him to gather vp, whereby he Hues quiet. If greedy hunters and hungrie tale-tellers pursue you, it is for a litle pelfe that you haue; cast it behinde you, neglect it,
30 let them haue it, least it breede a farther inconuenience. Credit my aduice, you shall finde it propheticall: and thus haue I discharged the part of a poore frend. With some few like phrases ofceremonie, Your Honors poore suppliant,

6 swear to thee by A. 8 by] from A. 12 kings A : kinge *Gro.*
lyouely.. will B. 28 tale-tellers] tel-tales A. 29 that] which A.
30 lest A. further A. 32 haue I] I haue A. 33 your Q. poore]
om. A.

and so forth, and Farewell, my good youth, I thanke thee and wil remember thee, we parted.

But the next day I thinke we had a doale of syder, syder in bowles, in scuppets, in helmets; and to conclude, if a man wold haue fild his boots full, ther he might haue 5 had it: prouant thrust it selfe into poore souldiers pockets whether they would or no. Wee made fiue peales of shot into the towne together of nothing but spiggots and faucets of discarded emptie barrels: euerie vnder-foot souldior had a distenanted tun, as *Diogenes* had his tub to sleepe in. I 10 my selfe got as manie confiscated Tapsters aprons as made me a Tent as big as anie ordinane Commaunders in the field. But in conclusion, my welbeloued Baron of double beere got him humbly on hys mary-bones to the King, and complained he was old and stricken in yeres, and had neuer 15 an heire to cast at a dogge, wherfore if it might please his Maiestie to take his lands into his hands, and allowe hym some reasonable pension to liue, he shuld be meruailously wel pleased: as for warres, he was weary of them; yet as long as his highnes ventred his owne person, he wtfuld 20 not flinch a foot, but make his wythered bodie a buckler to beare off any blow aduanced against him.

The King, meruailing at this alteration of his syder-merchant (for so he often pleasantly tearmd him), with a litle farther talk bolted out the whole complotment. Then 25 was I pitifully whipt for my holiday lye, though they made themselues merrie with it manie a Winters euening after.

For all this, his good asse-headed honor, mine host, B 2 per-seuered in his former request to the King to accept his lands, & allow him a beadsmanrie or out-brothershippe 30

I farewell *Q.* 3 *New par. A. Run on in B.* 15 neuer] nere *A.*
 18 to liue on, *A.* meruailous *A.* 19 for the warres *A.* them, and yet
A.: them, yet *B.* 20 ventred] shoulde ventured. 22 blow that should be
 aduanced *A.* 23 this strange alteration *A.* 23-4 syder-merchant] great
 marchant of syder *A.* 24 hee woulde often pleasantly tearme him *A.*
 25 further *A.* 26 although *A.* 27 a faire winters euening *A.* 28 *New*
par. A. Run on in B. For all this] Yet notwithstanding *A.* asse-
 headed-honor *B.* 29 former simple request *A.* 29-30 accept of the
 surrender of his landes *A.*

of brachet: which through his vehement instancie tooke effect, and the King Jestingly said, since he would needs haue it so, he would distraine on part of his land for impost of syder, which he was behinde with.

5 This was one of my famous atchieuements, insomuch as I neuer light vpon the like famous Foole: but I haue done a thousand better iests, if they had been boekt in order as they were begotten. It is pittie posteritie should be deprived of such precious Records; & yet there is no
10 remedie: and yet there is too, for when all failes, welfare a good memorie. Gentle Readers (looke you be gentle now since I haue cald you so), as freely as my knauerie was mine owne, it shall be yours to vse in the way of honestie.

Euen in this expedition of *Turwin* (for the King stood
15 not long a thrumming of buttons there) it hapned me fall in (I would it had fain out otherwise for his sake) with an vgly mechanicall Captain. You must thinke in an Armie, where trunchions are in their state-house, it is a flat stab once to name a Captaine without cap in hand. Well, sup-
20 pose he was a Captaine, and had neuer a good cap of his owne, but I was faine to lend him one of my Lords cast veluet caps, and a weather-beaten feather, wherewith he threatned his soldiers a far off, as *Jupiter* is said with the shaking of his haire to make heauen & earth to quake.
35 Suppose out of the parings of a paire of false dice I appalled both him and my selfe manie a time and oft: and surely, not to slander the diuell, if anie man euer deserued the golden dice the King of the *Parthians* sent to *Demetrius*, it was I: I had the right vayne of sucking vp
30 a die twixt the dints of my fingers; not a creuse in my hand but could swallow a quater trey for a neede; in the line of life manie a dead lift did there lurke, but it was nothing towards the maintenance of a familie. This Monsieur Capitano eate vpthecream of my earnings, and *Crede*

i which at length, through A. 3 on] A : one B. 4 behinde hande with him, and neuer payd. A. 6 foole, but Q. 15 a] om. A. fall in] fall out A. 17 mechamchall. ao neuer] nere. A. 27 deuill A. 39 I, IA : L IB.

mih) *res est ingeniosa dare*, any man is a fine fellow as long as he hath any money in his purse. That money is like the Marigold, which opens and shuts with the Sunne : if fortune smileth or one bee in fauour, it floweth ; if the euening of Age comes on, or he falls into disgrace, it fadeth and is not to be found. I was my crafts-master though I was but yong, and could as soone decline *Nominatiuo hie Asinus* as a greater Clarke ; wherefore I thought it not conuenient my Soldado should haue my purs any longer for his drum to play vpon, but I would giue him 10 lacke Drums entertainment and send him packing. [

B 2^V This was my plot : I knewe a peece of seruice of Intelligence which was presently to be done, that required a man with all his fiue senses to effect it, and would overthrow anie foole that should vndertake it : to this seruice 15 did I animate and egge my foresaid costs and charges, alias, Senior veluet-cap, whose head was not encombred with too much forcast ; and comming to him in his cabbin about dinner time, where I found him very deuoutly paring of his nayles for want of other repast, I entertained him with this 20 solemne oration.

Captaine, you perceiue how nere both of vs are driuen, the dice of late are growen as melancholy as a dog, high men and low men both prosper alike, langrets, fullams, and all the whole fellowship of them will not affoord a man 25 his dinner ; some other meanes must be inuented to preuent imminent extremitie. My state, you are not ignorant, depends on trencher seruice ; your aduancement must be deriued from the valour of your arme. In the delaies of Siege, desert hardly gets a day of hearing ; tis gowns must 30 direct and guns enact all the warres that is to be made against walls. Resteth no way for you to clime sodenly, but by doing some rare stratageme, the like not before heard of: and fitlie at this time occasion is offered.

5 fallet A. 7 was] A : were B. 12 Run on in A. 33 rare] strange A. 33-4 stratageme, that the like hath not bene heard of heeretofore, A. 34 time] instant A. offered] ministred A.

There is a feate the King is desirous to haue wrought on some great Man of the Enemies side : marrie, it requireth not so much resolution as discretion to bring it to passe ; and yet resolution inough should be showne in it too, being
 5 so ful of hazardous ieopardie as it is : harke in your eare, thus it is : without more drumbling or pawsing, if you will vndertake it, and worke it through stitch (as you maye, ere the King hath determined which waie to goe about it), I warrant you are made while you Hue, you need not care
 10 which way your staffe falls ; if it proue not so, then cut off my head.

Oh my Auditors, had you seene him how he stretcht out his lims, scratcht his scabd elbowes at this speach; how hee set his cap ouer his ey-browes like a polititian, and then
 15 folded his armes one in another, and nodded with the head, as who would say, let the French beware for they shall finde me a diuell : if (I say) you had seene but halfe the actions that he vsed, of shrucking vp his shoulders, smiling scornfully, playing with his fingers on his buttons, and
 20 biting the lip, you wold haue laught your face and your knees together. The yron being hot, I thought to lay on load, for in anie case I would not haue his humor coole. As before I laid open vnto him the briefe summe of the seruice, so now I began to vrge the honorablenes of it, and what a rare
 25 thing it was to be a right polititian, how much esteemd of Kings & princes, | and how diuerse of meane Parentage B 3 haue come to bee Monarchs by it. Then I discourst of the quallities and properties of him in euery respect, how, like the Woolfe, he must drawe the breath from a man long
 30 before he bee seene, how, like a Hare, he must sleepe with his eyes open, how, as the Eagle in his flying casts dust in the eyes of Crowes and other Fowles, for to blinde them, so hee must cast dust in the eyes of his enemies, delude their sight by one meanes or other, that they diue not into his

4 should be] shalbe A.
 without . . . pawsing : if ?
 18 actions].": action B.

6 is. Without . . . pausing, if A. *Qy. read is,*
 16 would] should A. 17 deuill A.
 29 long] om. A. 31 in flying A.

subtleties: howe hee must be familiar with all and trust none, drinke, carouse, and lecher with him out of whom he hopes to wring any matter, sweare and forswear, rather than be suspected, and, in a word, haue the Art of dissembling at his fingers ends as perfect as any Courtier. 5

Perhaps (quoth I) you may haue some fewe greasie Cauailiers that will seeke to dissuade you from it, and they will not sticke to stand on their three halfe penny honour, swearing and staring that a man were better be a hangman than an Intelligencer, and call him a sneaking Eavesdropper, 10 a scraping hedgecreeper, and a piperly pickethanke; but you must not be discouraged by their talke, for the most part of these beggarly contemners of wit are huge burlybond Butchers like *Ajax*, good for nothing but to strike right downe blowes on a wedge with a cleauing 15 beetle, or stand hammering all day vpon barres of yron. The whelpes of a Beare neuer growe but sleeping, and these Beare-wards hauing bigge lims shall be preferd though they doo nothing. You haue read stories, (He be sworne he neuer lookt in booke in his life,) howe many of the Romaine 20 worthies were there that haue gone as Spialls into their Enemies Campe? *Vlysses*, *Nestor*, *Diomed* went as spies together in the night into the Tents of *Rhxsus*, and intercepted *Dolon*, the spie of the Troians: neuer any discredited the trade of Intelligencers but *ludas*, and he hanged him- 25 selfe. Danger will put wit into any man. *Arckitas* made a wooden Doue to flie; by which proportion I see no reason that the veriest blocke in the worlde shoulde dispayre of any thing. Though nature be contrary inclined, it may be altdred; yet vsually those whom shee denies her ordinary 30 gifts in one thing, shee doubles them in another. That which the Asse wants in wit, hee hath in honesty; who euer sawe him kicke or winch, or vse any iades tricks?

2 drinke carouse A.
A. *Corr. in Errata.*
A. *Corr. in Errata.*
Corr. in Errata.

9 an hangman A.
13 these] those A
21 Spialls] spies A.
38 vorycst B.

10 sneaking] sweating
16 barres] hogges
23 *Rhasus* \ *Calipus* A.

though he Hue an hundred yeares you shall neuer heare
 that he breaks pasture. Amongst men, he that hath not a
 good wit, lightly hath a good yron memory, and he that
 hath neither of both, hath some bones to carry burthens.
 5 Blinde men haue better noses than other | men: the bul^B 3^V
 homes serue him aswell as hands to fight withall: the
 Lyons pawes are as good to him as a pol-axe, to knocke
 downe anye that resist him : the bores tushes serue him in
 better steed than a sword and buckler: what neede the
 10 snaille care for eyes, when hee feeles the way with his two
 homes, as well as if he were as quicke sighted as a decy-
 pherer? There is a fish that hauing no wings supports
 herselfe in the aire with her finnes. Admit that you had
 neither wit nor capacitie, as sure, in my iudgement, there is
 15 none equall vnto you in idiotisme, yet if you haue sim-
 plicitie and secrecie, serpents themselues wil thinke you a
 serpent; for what serpent is there but hydes his sting? and
 yet, whatsoeuer be wanting, a good plausible tongue in such
 a man of imployment can hardly be sparde, which, as the
 20 fore-named serpent with his winding taile fetcheth in those
 that come nere him, so with a rauishing tale it gathers al
 mens harts vnto him: which if he haue not, let him neuer
 looke to ingender by the mouth, as rauens and doues do,
 that is, mount or be great by vndermining. Sir, I am
 25 ascertained that all these imperfections I speak of in you
 haue their naturall resiance. I see in your face, that you
 wer born, with the swallow, to feed flying, to get much
 tresure and honor by trauell. None so fit as you for so
 important an enterprise: our vulgar polititians are but flies
 30 swimming on the streame of subiltie superficially in com-
 parison of your singularitie, their blinde narrow eyes cannot
 pierce into the profundity of hypocrisie; you alone, with
Palamed, can pry into *Vlysses* mad counterfeting, you can
 discern *Achilles* from a chamber maide, though he be

3 Amongst A. 8 resists-. so the Bores A. ii quicke]
 sharpe A. 17 hydeth A. 18 plausible tlluring tong A. 29 vulgar
 reputed polititians A.

deckt with his spindle and distaffe : as *loue* dining with *Licaon* could not bee beguiled with humane fleshe drest like meate, so no humane braine may goe beyond you, none beguile you; you gull all, all feare you, loue you, stoup to you. Therefore, good sir, be ruld by me, stoup your fortune so low as to bequeath your selfe wholly to this busines.

This siluer-sounding tale made such sugred harmonie in his eares, that with the sweete meditation, what a more than myraculous polititian he should be, and what kingly promotion shuld come tumbling on him thereby, he could haue found in his hart to haue packt vp hys pipes and to haue gone to heauen without a bait: yea, hee was more inflamed and raushte with it than a yong man called *Taurimontanus* was with the *Phrigian* melodic, who was so incensed and fired therwith, that he would needs run presently vpon it, and set a Curtizans house on fire that had angered him.

No remedie there was but I must help to furnish him with mony : I did so, as who will not make his enemy a bridge of gold to flie by ? | Verie earnestly he coniurde me to make no man liuing priuie to hys departure, in regard of his place and charge, and on his honor assured me his returne should be verie short and succesfull. I, I, shorter by the necke (thought I); in the meane time let this be thy posie, . ' *Hue in hope to scape the rope.* 2'

Gone he is; God send him good shipping to Wapping, and by this time, if you will, let him be a pitiful poore fellow and vndone for euer : for mine own part, if he had bin mine own brother, I could haue done no more for him than I did, for straight after his back was turnd, I went in, all loue and kindnes to the Marshall generall of the field, & certifide him that such a man was lately fled to the Enemy, & got his place begd for another immediately. What became of him after you shall heare. To the Enemy he went and offred his seruice, rayling egregiously against 31

5 Therefore haue done B. B. 25 [line] Liuc A. Corr. in Errata. 29 haue 33-4 immediately : what B. 35 against] on A.

the King of *England*; he swore, as he was a Gentleman and a souldier, he would be reuenged on him ; and let but the King of *France* follow his counsel, he would driue him from *Turwin* wals yet ere three daies to an end. All these
 5 were good humors, but the tragedie followeth. The French King hearing of such a prating fellow that was come, desired to see him, but yet he feared treson, willing one of his Minions to take vpon him his person, & he wold stand by as a priuate person while he was examined. Why
 10 should I vse anie idle delates ? In was Captaine gogs wounds brought, after hee was throughly searched ; not a louse in his doublet was let passe, but was askt *Queuela*, and chargd to stand in the Kings name ; the molds of his buttons they turnd out, to see if they were not bullets couered ouer
 15 with thred; the cod-peece in his diuels breeches (for they wer then in fashion) they said plainly was a case for a pistol; if he had had euer a hob-naile in his shooes it had handg him, and hee should neuer haue known who had harmd him; but, as lucke was, he had no myte of any
 20 mettall about him, he tooke part with none of the foure Ages, neyther the golden Age, the siluer Age, the brazen, nor the yron Age; onely his purse was aged in emptines, and I think verily a puritane, for it kept it selfe from any pollution of crosses. Standing before the supposed King,
 25 he was askt what he was, and wherefore he came. To which in a glorious bragging humor he answered, that he was a gentleman, a capten commander, a chiefe leader, that came from the King of *England* vpon discontentment. Questiond of the perticular cause, he had not a word to
 30 blesse himselfe with, yet faine he would haue patcht out a polt-foot tale, but (God knowes) it had not one true leg to stand on.

Then began he to smell on the villaine so rammishly

4 three] ten A. 7 desired] was desirous A. willing] wherefore
 he wild A. 8 him] *om. A. Added in Errata.* 9 person] man A.
 whilest A : whild B' 19 no] not a A. 25-6 To the which A. 28 came
 away from A. 29 Questiond particular of the cause of his discontentment,
 hee had A. 31 God he knowes A. 33 *Run on in A.*

34^V that none | there but was ready to rent him in pieces, yet the Minion King kept in his cholar, and propounded vnto him further, what of the King of Englands secrets (so aduantageable) he was priuy to, as might remooue him from the siege of Turwin in three daies. He said diuerse, 5 diuerse matters which askt longer conference, but in good honesty they were lies which he had not yet stamp. Hereat the true King stept forth, and commaunded to lay hands on the Lozell, and that he should be tortured to confesse the truth, for he was a spie and nothing else. 10

He no sooner sawe the wheele and the torments set before him, but he cryde out like a Rascall, and said he was a poore Captaine in the English Campe, suborned by one *lacke Wilton* (a Noble mans Page), and no other, to come and kill the French King in a brauerie and returne, 15 and that he had no other intention in the world.

This confession could not choose but mooue them all to laughter, in that he made it as light a matter to kill their King and come backe, as to goe to Islington and eate a messe of Creame and come home againe, nay, and besides as he protested that he had no other intention, as if that were not inough to hang him.

Adam neuer fell till God made fooles ; all this could not keepe his ioyns from ransacking on the Wheele, for they vowed either to make him a Confessor or a Martyr with a 25 trice: when still he sung all one song, they told the King he was a foole, and that some shrowd head had knauishly wrought on him ; wherefore it should stand with his honour to whip him out of the Campe and send him home. That perswasion tooke place, and soundly was he lasht out of 30 their liberties, and sent home by a Herrald with this message, that so the King his Master hoped to whip home all the English fooles very shortly: answere was returned, that that shortly was a long-lie, and they were shrewd fooles that should driue the French-man out of his King- 35

3 farther A. 25 with] in A. 27 that] om. A. shrewd A.
34 shortly] short lie (*the words divided by a thin space*) A, long lie A.

dome, and make him glad, with Corinthian *Dionisius*, to play the Schoolemaster.

The Herralde being dismiss, our afflicted Intelligencer was calde *coram nobis*: how he sped, iudge you, but something he was adiudged too. The sparrow for his lechery liueth but a yeare, he for his trechery was turnd on the toe, *Plura dolor prohibet*.

Here let me triumph a while, and ruminare a line or two on the excellence of my wit: but I will not breath neither till I haue disfraughted all my knauerie.

Another Switzer Captaine that was farre gone for want of the wench, I lead astray most notoriously, for he being a monstrous vnthrif of battle-axes (as one that cared not in his anger to bid flye out scuttels to flue score of them) and a notable emboweler of quart pots, I came disguised vnto him in the forme of a halfe crowne wench, my gowne and attyre according to the custome then in request. I wis I had my curtsies in cue, or in quart pot rather, for they dyude into the verie entrailes of the dust, and I sympered with my countenance like a porredge pot on the fire when it first begins to seethe. The sobriety of the circumstance is, that after hee had courted mee and all, and giuen me the earnest-penie of impietie, some sixe Crownes at the least for an antipast to iniquitie, I fained an impregnable excuse to be gone, and neuer came at him after.

Yet left I not here, but committed a little more scutcherie. A companie of coystrell Clearkes (who were in band with Sathan, and not of anie Souldiers collar nor hat-band) pincht a number of good mindes to God-ward of their prouant. They would not let a dram of dead-pay ouer-slip them; they would not lend a groat of the weeke to come, to him that had spent his money before this weeke was done. They out-faced the greatest and most magnanimous Seruitors in their sincere and finigraphicall cleane shirts

5 to A. 16 a halfe a crowne A. 19 dyude] drild A. *Corr. in Errata.*
 28 collar nor hat-band] colour A. *Corr. in Errata to collar nor his hat-band.*
 34 ainigraphicall B.

and cuffs. A Lowce (that was anie Gentlemans companion) they thought scorne of; their nere bitten beards must in a deuills name bee dewed euerye day with Rose-water; Hogges could haue nere a haire on their backs, for making them rubbing-brushes to rouse their Crab-lice. 5 They would in no wise permit that the moates in the Sun-beames should be full mouthd beholders of their cleane phinifide apparel; their shooes shined as bright as a slike-stone; their hands troubled and foyled more water with washing, than the Cammell doth, that neuer drinks till the 10 whole streame be troubled. Summarily, neuer anie were so fantasticall the one halfe as they.

My masters, you may conceaue of me what you list, but I thinke confidently I was ordained Gods scourge from aboue for their daintie finicalitie. The houre of their punishment 15 Could no longer be proroged, but vengeance must haue at them at all a ventures. So it was, that the most of these aboue-named goose-quill Braggadoches were mere cowards and crauens, and durst not so much as throwe a pen-full of inke into the Enemies face, if proofe were made: wherefore 20 on the experience of their pusillanimitie I thought to raise the foundation of my roguerie.

What did I now but one day made a false alarum in the C i^v quarter | where they lay, to try how they would stand to their tackling, and with a pittifull out-crie warned them to 25 flie, for there was treason a foote, they were inuironed and beset. Vpon the first watch worde of treason that was giuen, I thinke they betooke them to their heeles verie stoutly, left their penne and inke-hornes and paper behinde them for spoile, resigned their deskes, with the money that 30 was in them, to the mercie of the vanquisher, and in fine, left me and my fellowes (their foole-catchers) Lordes of the field: How wee dealt with them, their disburdened deskes canne best tell, but this I am assured, we fared the better for it a fortnight of fasting dayes after. 35

9 'for foyled read soyled?' Gro. 10 neuer] nere A. 13 Run on
in A. 18 braccadochos A. 22 foundation] A : fountaine B. 23
Run on in A. 29 papers A. 30 them, for spoile resigned B.

I must not place a volume in the precincts of a pamphlet :
 sleepe an houre or two, and dreame that Turney and
 Turwin is wonne, that the King is shipt againe into
 England, and that I am close at harde meate at Windsore
 5 or at Hampton Court. What, will you in your indifferent
 opinions allow me for my trauell no more signiorie ouer
 the Pages than I had before ? yes, whether you will part with
 so much probable friendly suppose or no, He haue it in
 spite of your hearts. For your instruction and godly con-
 10 solation, bee informed, that at that time I was no common
 squire, no vndertrodden torch-bearer ; I had my feather
 in my cap as big as a flag in the fore-top ; my French
 dublet gelte in the bellie as though (like a pig readie to be
 spitted) all my guts had bin pluckt out ; a paire of side
 15 paned hose that hung downe like two scales filled with
 Holland cheeses ; my longe stock that sate close to my
 docke, and smothered not a scab or a leacherous hairie
 sinew on the calfe of the legge ; my rapier pendant like
 a round sticke fastned in the tacklings for skippers the
 20 better to climbe by ; my cape cloake of blacke cloth, ouer-
 spreading my backe like a thorne-backe, or an Elephantes
 eare, that hanges on his shoulders like a countrie huswiues
 banskin, which she thirles hir spindle on, & in consummation
 of my curiositie, my hands without glooues, all a more
 35 French, and a blacke budge edging of a beard on the
 vpper lip, & the like sable auglet of excrements in the rising
 of the ankle of my chinne. I was the first that brought in
 the order of passing into the Court which I deriued from
 the common word *Qui passa* and the Heralds phrase of
 30 armes *Passant*, thinking in sinceritie, he was not a Gentle-
 man, nor his armes currant, who was not first past by the
 Pages. If anie Prentise or other came into the Court that
 was not a Gentleman, I thought it was an indignitie to the

i Run on in A. 5 What will Q. 6 trauell, no Q. 14 **beene A.**
 18 of my legge A. 20 cape] blacke A. *Corr. in Errata*, 23 thirles]
 fastens A. *Corr. in Errata to thirleth.* 24 more] mode Gro. 25 budge]
 badge A. *Corr. in Errata.* 26 the first rising A. 27 chinne] shinne A.
Corr. in Errata. 30 thinking in] in this begun A. *Corr. in Errata.*

preheminance of the Court to include such a one, and could not bee salude except wee gaue him Armes Passant, to make him a Gentleman. |

© 2 Besides, in Spaine, none passe anie farre way but he must be examined what he is, and giue three pence for his passe. 5

In which regard it was considered of by the common table of the cupbearers, what a perilsome thing it was to let anie stranger or out-dweller approach so neare the precincts of the Prince as the greate Chamber, without examining what hee was, and giuing him his passe: whereupon we ro established the like order, but tooke no mony of them as they did ; onely for a signe that he had not past our hands vnexamined, we set a red marke on their eares, and so let them walke as authentically,

I must not discouer what vngodlie dealing we had with 15 the blacke iackes, or how oft I was crowned King of the drunkardes with a Court cuppe ; let mee quietly descend to the waining of my youthfull daies, and tell a little of the sweating sicknes, that made me in a cold sweate take my heeles and runne out of England. 30

This sweating sicknes was a disease that a man then might catch and neuer goe to a hot-house. Manie Masters desire to haue such seruants as would worke till they sweate againe, but in those dayes hee that sweate neuer wrought againe. That Scripture then was not thought so necessarie 25 which sayes, Earne thy liuing with the sweat of thy browes, for then they earnd their dying with the sweat of their browes. It was inough if a fat man did but trusse his points, to turne him ouer the pearch: Mother *Cornelius* tub, why it was like hell, he that came into it neuer came out of it. 30

Cookes that stand continually basting their faces before the fire, were now all cashierd with this sweat into kitchin stufte: their hall fell into the Kings hands for want of one of the trade to vphold it.

4 *Run on in A.* passe] *compasse A.* *Qy. read.'can passe ?* 6 *Run on in A.* 13 *their]* either of his *A.* 14 *them]* him *A.* 15 *Pun on in A.*
17 *dronkards A.* 31 *Run on in A.* 33 *in to A.* 34 *vp hold B.*

Felt makers and Furriers, what the one with the hot steame of their wooll new taken out of the pan, and the other with the contagious heat of their slaughter budge and connie-skinnes, died more thicke than of the pestelence: I haue
 5 seene an old woman at that season, hauing three chins, wipe them all away one after another, as they melted to water, and left hir selfe nothing of a mouth but an vpper chap. Looke how in May or the heat of Summer we lay butter in water for feare it should melt away, so then were men faine
 10 to wet their clothes in water as Diers doo, and hide themselves in welles from the heat of the Sunne.

Then happie was he that was an asse, for nothing will kill an asse but colde, and none dide but with extreame heate. The fishes called Sea-starres, that burne one another
 15 by excessiue heate, were | not so contagious as one man c 2 that had the Sweate was to another. Masons paid nothing for haire to mixe their lyme, nor Glouers to stuffe their balls with, for then they had it for nothing; it dropped off mens heads and beards faster than anie Barber could
 20 shaue it O, if haire breeches had then been in fashion, what a fine world had it beene for Tailers; and so it was a fine world for Tailers neuerthelesse, for he that could make a garment sleightest and thinnest carried it awaie. Cutters, I can tell you, then stood vpon it to haue their Trade
 35 one of the twelue Companies, for who was it then that would not haue his dublet cut to the skin, and his shirt cut into it too, to make it more cold. It was as much as a mans life was worth, ones to name a freeze ierkin; it was hye treason for a fat grosse man to come within fiue miles
 30 of the Court. I heard where they dyde vp all in one Familie, and not a mothers childe escapde, insomuch as they had but an Irish rugge lockt vp in a presse, and not laid vpon anie bed neither. If those that were sicke of this maladie slept of it, they neuer wakde more. Phisitions with

i Run on in A. 16 Mazons B. 23 awaie, Cotters A : awaie:
 Cutters B. 29 hye] om' A. grosse man] A : goose B. 33 neither,
 if (Q• 34 of] on A.

their simples in this case wext simple fellowes, and knew not which way to bestirre them.

Galen might goe shooe the Gander for any good he could doo ; his Secretaries had so long called him Diuine, that now he had lost al his vertue vpon earth. *Hippocrates* might 5 well helpe Almanacke-makers, but here he had not a word to say; a man might sooner catch the sweate with plodding ouer him to no end, than cure the sweate with anie of his impotent principles. *Paracelsus*, with his Spirite of the Butterie and his spirites of Mineralls, could not so much as 10 saye, God amend him, to the matter. *Plus erat in artifice quam arte*, there was more infection in the Phisition himselfe than his arte could cure. This Mortalitie first began amongst old men, for they, taking a pride to haue their breasts loose basted with tedious beards, kept their houses 15 so hot with their hayry excrements, that not so much but their verie walls sweat out salt-peeter with the smothering perplexitie: nay, a number of them had meruailous hot breaths, which sticking in the briers of their bushie beards, could not choose but (as close aire long imprisoned) in- 20 gender corruption.

Wiser was our Brother *Bankes* of these latter daies, who made his iugling horse a Cut, for feare if at anie time hee should foyst, the stinke sticking in his thicke bushie taile might be noysome to his Auditors. Should I tell you how 25 manie Purseuants with red noses, and Sergeants with precious faces, shrunke away in this Sweate, you would not beleue me. Euen as the Salamander with his very sight | C 3 blasteth apples on the trees, so a Purseuant or a Sergeant at this present, with the verie reflexe of his fierie facies, was 30 able to spoyle a man a farre of. In some places of the world there is no shaddowe of the Sunne ; *Diebus illis* if it had been so in *England*, the generation of *Brute* had died all and some. To knit vp this description in a pursnet, so feruent & scorching was the burning aire which inclosed them, 35

i wexe A : were *Gro., Gosse.* 3 Run on in A. 16 their] these A.
22 Run on in A' 35 inclosed them] increased then A' *Corr. in Errata'*

that the most blessed man then aliue would haue thought that God had done fairly by him if hee had turnd him to a Goate, for Goates take breath, not at the mouth or nose onely, but at the eares also.

5 Take breath how they would, I vowd to tarrie no longer among them. As at *Turwin* I was a demy souldier in iest, so now I became a Martialist in earnest. Ouer Sea with my implements I got mee, where hearing the King of *France* and the *Switzers* were together by the eares, I made ro towards them as fast as I could, thinking to thrust my selfe into that Faction that was strongest. It was my good lucke or my ill (I know not which) to come iust to the fighting of the Battell; where I saw a wonderfull spectacle of blood-shed on both sides: here vnweeldie *Switzers* wal-
15 lowing in their gore, like an Oxe in his dung, there the sprightly *French* sprawling and turning on the stained grasse, like a Roach new taken out of the streame: all the ground was strewed as thicke with Battle-axes as the Carpenters yard with chips; the Plaine appeared like a quagmyre,
20 ouerspred as it was with trampled dead bodies. In one place might you behold a heape of dead murdered men ouerwhelmqd with a falling Steede in stead of a toombe stone, in another place a bundell of bodies fettered together in their owne bowells; and as the tyrant Romane Em-
25 perours vsed to tye condemned liuing caytiues face to face to dead corses, so were the halfe liuing here mixt with squeazed carcasses long putrified. Anie man might giue Armes that was an actor in that Battell, for there were more armes and legs scattered in the Field that day than
30 will be gathered vp till Doomes-day: the French King himselfe in this Conflict was much distressed, the braines of his owne men sprinkled in his face, thrice was his Courser slaine vnder him, and thrice was he strucke on the brest with a speare: but in the end, by the helpe of the *Venetians*,
35 the *Heluetians* or *Switzers* were subdude, and he crowned

6 amongst A.
20 was] A: were B.

14 here the vnwieldie A.
21 yeu (!) B. 25 caities A.

17 all all the B.

a Victor, a peace concluded, and the Citie of *Millaine* surrendered vnto him as a pledge of reconciliation.

That Warre thus blowen ouer, and the seuerall Bands dissolved, like a Crowe that still followes aloofe where there is carrion, I flew me ouer to *Munster* in *Germanic*, which 5
 : 3^v an Anabaptisticall Brother, [named *Iohn Leiden*, kept at that instant against the Emperour and the Duke of *Saxonie*. Heere I was in good hope to set vpp my staffe for some reasonable time, deeming that no Citie would driue it to a siedge, except they were able to hold out: and pretely 10
 well had these *Munsterians* held out, for they kept the Emperour and the Duke of *Saxonie* play for the space of a yere ; and longer would haue done, but that Dame Famine came amongst them ; wherevppon they were forst by Messengers to agree vpon a day of Fight, when according to 15
 their Anabaptisticall errour they might al be new christened in their owne blood.

That day come, flourishing entred *Iohn Leiden* the Botcher into the field, with a scarffe made of lystes like a bow-case, a crosse on hys breast like a thred bottome, 20
 a round twilted Taylors cushion buckled like a Tankard-bearers deuice to his shoulders for a target, the pyke whereof was a pack-needle, a tough prentises club for his spear, a great Bruers cow on his backe for a corslet, and on his head for a helmet a huge high shooe with the bottome turnd as vpwards, embossed as full of hob-nayles as euer it might sticke: his men were all base handicrafts, as coblers and curriers and tinkers, whereof some had barres of yron, some hatchets, some coole-staues, some dung-forkes, some spades, some mattockes, some wood-kniues, some addises for their 30
 weapons: he that was best prouided had but a peece of a rustic browne bill brauely fringed with cop-webs to fight for him. Perchance here and there you might see a fellow that had a canker-eaten scull on his head, which serued

i a Victor] victor., 3 *Run on in A.* 12 play] sound plaie A.
 16 al be] be all A, 20 crosse on his threed button, A. *Corr. in Errata.*
 26 vpward A. 32 cobwebbe' A. 33 him: perchance A.

him and his ancestors for a chamber pot two hundred yeeres, and another that had bent a couple of yron dripping pans armour-wise, to fence his backe and his belly; another that had thrust a paire of drie olde bootes as a breast-plate
5 before his belly of his dublet, because he would not be dangerously hurt; an other that had twilted all his trusse full of counters, thinking, if the Enemie should take him, he would mistake them for gold, and so saue his life for his money. Verie deuout Asses they were, for all they were
10 so dunstically set forth, and such as thought they knew as much of Gods minde as richer men: why, inspiration was their ordinarie familiar, and buzd in their eares like a Bee in a boxe euerie hower what newes from heauen, hell, and the land of whipperginnie: displease them who durst, he should
15 haue his mittimus to damnation *ex tempore*; they would vaunt there was not a pease difference betwixt them and the Apostles; they were as poore as they, of as base trades as they, and no more inspired than they, and with God there is no re-|spect of persons; onely herein may seeme C 4
30 some little diuersitie to lurk, that *Peter* wore a sword, and they count it flat hel fire for anie man to weare a dagger; nay, so grounded and grauelled were they in this opinion, that now when they should come to Battell, theres neuer a one of them would bring a blade (no, not an onion blade)
25 about hym, to dye for it. It was not lawfull, said they, for anie man to draw the sword but the Magistrate; and in fidelitie, (which I had welnigh forgot,) *lacke Leiden*, their Magistrate, had the Image or likenes of a peece of a rustle sword, like a lustie lad, by his side: now I remember mee,
30 it was but a foyle neither, and he wore it to shewe that hee should haue the foyle of his Enemies, which might haue been an oracle for his two-hand Interpretation. *Quidplura?* His Battell is pitcht: by pitcht, I doo not meane set in order, for that was farre from their order, onely as Sailers
35 doo pitch their apparell to make it storm prooffe, so had most of them pitcht their patcht clothes to make them

impeareable: a nearer way than to be at the charges of armour by halfe. And in another sort he might be said to haue pitcht the Field, for he had pitcht or rather set vp his rest whether to flie if they were discomfited.

Peace, peace there in the belfrie, service begins: vpon 5 their knees before they ioine fals *lohn Leiden* and his fraternitie verie deuoutly, they pray, they howle, they expostulate with God to grant them victorie, and vse such vnspeakable vehemence a man wold thinke them the onely wel bent men vnder heauen. Wherin let me dilate a litle 10 more grauely than the nature of this historic requires, or wilbe expected of so yong a practitioner in diuinity: that not those that intermissiuely cry, *Lord, open vnto vs Lord, open vnto vs*, enter first into the kingdom; that not the greatest professors haue the greatest portio in grace; that 15 all is not gold that glisters. When Christ said, *the kingdome of heauen must suffer violence.*, hee meant not the violence of long babling praiers, nor the violence of tedious inuectiue Sermons without wit, but the violence of faith, the violence of good works, the violence of patient suffering. The 20 ignorant snatch the kingdome of heauen to themselues with greedines, when we with all our learning sinke into hell.

Where did *Peter* and *Iohn*, in the third of the Acts, finde the lame cripple but in the gate of the temple called beautiful? in the beautifullest gates of our temple, in the fore-front 25 of professors, are many lame cripples, lame in life, lame in good workes, lame in euerie thing; yet will they alwaies sit at the gates of the temple; none be rqore forwarder then they to C 4^v enter into matters of reformation, yet none more | behinde hand to enter into the true Temple of the Lord by the gates 30 of good life.

You may obiect that those which I speake against are

1-2 impeareable. A ... halfe : and A, 3 rather] *om. A.* 4 whither
 A. 5 *Run on in A.* belfrie, service begins, vpon *Q* : belfrie:
 service begins, vpon *Gro.* lo heauen, wherein A. 12 will be A.
 14 kingdome of heauen, A. 17 *violence B.* 18 praiers to no purpose, A.
 20-1 The ignorant arise and snatch A. 22 sinke downe into A. 23
Run on in A. 28 *tha A.* 32 *Run on in A.*

more diligent in reading the Scriptures, more carefull to resort vnto Sermons, more sober in their lookes, more modest in their attire than anie else. But I pray you let me answere you, Doth not Christ say that before the Latter 5 day the Sunne shall be turned into darknesse, and the Moone into bloud? whereof what may the meaning bee, but that the glorious Sunne of the Gospell shall be eclipsed with the dim clowd of dissimulation; that that which is the brightest Planet of saluation shall be a meanes of error and 10 darknes: and the Moone shall be turned into blood, those that shine fairest, make the simplest shewe, seeme most to fauour Religion, shal rent out the bowels of the church, be turned into blood, and all this shall come to passe before the notable day of the Lord, whereof this Age is the Eue?

15 Let me vse a more familiar example, since the heate of a great number outraged so excessiue. Did not the Diuell lead Christ to the pinnacle or highest place of the Temple to tempt him? If he led Christ, he will lead a whole Armie of hypocrites to the top or highest part of the 20 Temple, the highest step of Religion and Holines, to seduce them and subuert them. I say vnto you that which this our tempted Sauour with manie other words besought his Disciples, *Saue your selues from this froward generation. Verily, verily, the seruant is not greater than his master:*

35 Verily, verily, sinfull men are not holier than holy Iesus, their maker. That holy Iesus again repeates this holy sentence, *Remember the words I said vnto you, the seruaunt is not holier nor greater than his Master;* as if he should say, Remember then, imprint in your memorie, your pride 30 and singularitie wyll make you forget them, the effects of them manie yeeres hence will come to passe. *Whosoever will seeke to saue his soule shall loose it:* whosoever seekes by headlong meanes to enter into Heauen and disannull Gods ordinance, shall, with the Gyaunts that thought to

a lookes and modest A.
number hath outraged A.
lead A. 28 nor] or A.

3 else: but A.

17 deuil,. place] part A.
39 then] Qy. read them?

15 Run on in A.

16 led]

scale heauen in contempt of *Iupiter*, be ouerwhelmed with Mount *Ossa* and *Peleon*, and dwell with the diuell in eternall desolation.

Though the High Priests Office was expired when *Paul* said vnto one of them, God rebuke thee, thou painted sepulcher, 5 yet when a stander by reprooued him, saying, Reuilest thou the High Priest ? he repented and askt forgiuenes.

That which I suppose I doe not grant: the lawfulness of the authoritie they oppose themselues against is sufficiently proued : farre | be it my vnder-age arguments should ic intrude themselues as a greene weake prop to support so high a Building: let it suffice, If you know Christ, you know his Father also ; if you know Christianize, you know the Fathers of the Church also. But a great number of you, with *Philip*, haue beene long with Christ, and haue not ic knowen him; haue long professed your selues Christians, and haue not knowen his true Ministers: you follow the French and Scottish fashion and faction, and in all poynts are like the Switzers, *Qui quxrun cum qua Gente cadunt*, that seeke with what Nation they may first miscarrie. 2c

In the dayes of *Nero* there was an odde Fellowe that had found out an exquisite way to make glasse as hammer-prooffe as golde: shall I say that the like experiment he made vpon glasse, wee haue practised on the Gospell? I, confidently will I: Wee haue found out a sleight to 35 hammer it to anie Heresie whatsoever. But those furnaces of Falshood and hammer-heads of Heresie must bee dissolved and broken as his was, or els I feare mee the false glittering glasse of Innouation will bee better esteemed of, than the auncient golde of the Gospell. 30

The fault of faults is this, that your dead borne faith is

a *Ossa*] *Essa* (or *Cssa*) A. *Corr. in Errata*, 3 desolation] dissolution
 A. *Corr. in Errata*, 4 *Run on in A*. 8 *Run on in A*. grant,
 the Q : grant. The Gro. 10 proued, farre A : proued. Farre Gro. bee
 it my A : be it from my B. 12 building, let Q : building. Let Gro.
 13-4 if ... Church also] om. A. *Added in Errata*. 14 also, but A : also;
 but Gro. 17 haue] om. A. 19 *qua Gente*] *quocunque A*. *Corr. in*
Errata, to qua genie. 25 I, confidently will I, we A: I confidently
 will, I: Wee B. 26 whatsoever, but A. 31 *Run on in A*.

begotten by too-too infant Fathers. *Cato*, one of the wisest men in Romane Histories canonised, was not borne till his father was foure score yeres olde : none can be a perfect father of faith and beget men aright vnto God, but those 5 that are aged in experience, haue manie yeres imprinted in their milde conuersation, and haue, with *Zacheus*, solde all their possessions of vanities to enioy the sweet fellowship, not of the humane, but spirituall *Messias*.

Ministers and Pastors, sell away your sects and schismes 10 to the decrepite Churches in contention beyond sea; they haue been so long invred to warre, both about matters of Religion and Regiment, that now they haue no peace of minde but in troubling all other mens peace. Because the pouertie of their Prouinces will allow them no proportion- 15 is able maintenance for higher callings of ecclesiasticall Magistrates, they wold reduce vs to the president of their rebellious persecuted beggerie: much like the sect of Philosophers called Cynikes, who whe they saw they were born to no lands or possessions, nor had any possible meanes to 20 support their estates, but they must Hue despised and in misery, doo what they could, they plotted and consulted with themselues how to make their pouertie better esteemed of than rich | dominion and souereigntie. The vpshot of Di 25 their plotting and consultation was this, that they would Hue to themselues, scorning the very breath or companie of all men ; they profest (according to the rate of their lands) voluntarie pouertie, thin fare & lying hard, contemning and inueighing against all those as brute beasts whatsoever whome the world had giuen anie reputation for riches or 30 prosperitie. *Diogenes* was one of the first and formost of the ring-leaders of this rustic morositie, and he for all his nice dogged disposition and blunt deriding of worldly drosse and the grosse felicitie of fooles, was taken notwithstanding a little after verie fairely a coyning monie in his 35 cell: so fares it vpp and downe with our cinicall reformed

a in] om. A.
21 miserie doe Q.

9 Run on in A.
34 fairely coining A.

20 their desperate estates A.

forraine Churches; they will disgest no grapes of great Bishoprikes forsooth, because they cannot tell how to come by them; they must shape their cotes, good men, according to their cloath, and doe as they may, not as they wold, yet they must giue vs leaue here in England that are their honest neighbours, if wee haue more cloth than they, to make our garment some what larger.

What was the foundation or ground-worke of this dismall declining of Munster, but the banishing of their Bishop, their confiscating and casting lots for Church liuings, as the souldiers cast lottes for Christes garments, and, in short tearmes, their making the house of God a den of theeues? The house of God a number of hungrie Church robbers in these dayes haue made a den of theeues. Theeues spend looselie what they haue gotten lightly; sacriledge is no sure inheritance; *Dionisius* was nere the richer for robbing of *Iupiter* of his golden coate, hee was driuen in the end to play the Schoolemaster at Corinth. The name of Religion, bee it good or bad that is ruinated, God neuer suffers vnreuenged: He say of it as *Quid* said of Eunuchs:

*Quiprimus pueris genitalia membra recidit,
Vulnera quæ fecit debuit ipse faati.*

Who first depriude yong boies of their best part,
With selfe same wounds he gaue he ought to smart.

So would he that first gelt religion or Church-liuings had bin first gelt himselfe or neuer liued; Cardinall *Wolsey* is the man I aim at, *Qui in suas pœnas ingeniosus erat*, first gaue others a light to his | own ouerthrow. How it prospered with him and his instrumentes that after wrought for themselues, Chronicles largely report, though not applie, 30 and some parcell of their punishment yet vnpaid I doe not doubt but will be required of their posteritie.

To goe forward with my storie of the ouerthrow of that vsurper, *Iohn Leiden*: he and all his armie, as I saide before,

i they] A: thy B. 8 Run on in A. 15 got A. 16-7 robbing *Iupiter* A. 28 owne c. w. ouerthrow JB. 29 his] A: their B. 34 *Leiden*, he A; *Leiden* he B.

falling prostrate on their faces and feruently giuen ouer to praier, determined neuer to cease, or leaue soliciting of God, till he had shewed them from heauen some manifest miracle of successe.

- 5 Note that it was a generall receiued tradition both with *lohn Leiden* and all the crue of Cnipperdolings and Muncers, if God at any time at their vehement outcries and clamors did not condescend to their requests, to raile on him and curse him to his face, to dispute with him and argue him of
 10 injustice for not beeing so good as his word with them, and to vrge his manie promises in the Scripture against him : so that they did not serue God simplie, but that he should serue their turnes ; and after that tenure are many content to serue as bondmen to saue the danger of hanging: but
 15 hee that serues God aright, whose vpright conscience hath for his mot, *Amor est mihi causa sequendi*, I serue because I loue, he saies, *Ego te potius, Domine, quam tua dona sequar*, He rather follow thee, O Lord, for thine own sake, than for anie couetous respect of that thou canst doe for mee.
 20 Christ would haue no followers but such as forsooke all and follow him, such as forsake all their owne desires, such as abandon all expectations of reward in this world, such as neglected and contemned their Hues, their wiues and children, in comparison of him, and were content to take vp
 25 their crosse and follow him.

These Anabaptists had not yet forsooke all and followed Christ, they had not forsooke their owne desires of reuenge and innoation, they had not abandoned their expectation of the spoile of their enimies, they regarded their Hues,
 30 they lookt after their wiues and children, they tooke not vp their Crosses of humilitie and followed him, but would crosse him, vpbraid him, and set him at nought, if he assured not by some signe their prayers and supplications. *Deteriora sequuntur*, they followed God as daring him.
 35 God heard their praiers, *Quod petitur pana est*, It was their

5 Run on in A.
 26 Run on in A.

6 lohn] .'. A.
 31 crosse A.

19-20 me, Christ (run on) A.
 34 sequuntur B.

speedie punishment that they prayde for. Lo, according to the summe of their impudent supplications, a signe in the heauens appeard, the glorious signe of the rainebowe, which agreed iust with the signe of their ensigne that was a rainbow likewise. 5

D 2 Wherevpon, assuring themselues of victorie, (*Miseri quod volunt, facile credunt*,' that which wretches would haue they easely beleuee,) with showtes and clamors they presently ranne headlong on they well deserued confusion.

Pittifull and lamentable was their vnpietied and well 10 performed slaughter. To see euen a Beare (which is the most cruellest of all beasts) too-too bloudily ouer-matcht, and deformedly rent in peeces by an vnconscionable number of cures, it would mooue compassion against kinde, and make those that (beholding him at the stake 15 yet vncoapt with) wisht him a sutable death to his vgly shape, now to recall their hard-harted wishes, and moane him suffering as a milde beast, in comparison of the fowle mouthd Mastiues, his butchers: euen such compassion did those ouer-matcht vngracious *Munsterians* obtame of manie 20 indifferent eyes, who now thought them (suffering) to bee sheepe brought innocent to the shambles, when as before they deemed them as a number of wolues vp in armes against the shepherds.

The Emperialls themselues that were their Executioners 25 (like a father that weepes when he beates his childe, yet still weepes and stil beates) not without much ruth and sorrow prosecuted that lamentable massacre ; yet drums and trumpets sounding nothing but stearne reuenge in their eares, made them so eager that their handes had no leasure 30 to aske counsell of their effeminate eyes ; their swordes, theyr pikes, their bills, their bowes, their caleeuers slew, empierced, knockt downe, shot through, and ouerthrew as manie men euerie minute of the battell as there falls eares

6 *Run on in A.* 7 *credunf]* that A : *eredunf]* that B. 8 beleuee.
 With *Q.* 10 *Run on in A.* 21-2 bee as sheepe A. 25 *Run on*
in A. 33 thorough A.

of corne before the sythe at one blow: yet all their weapons so slaying, empiercing, knocking downe, shooting through, ouer-throwing, dissoule-ioyned not halfe so manie as the hailing thunder of the great Ordinance: so ordinarie
 5 at euerie foot-step was the imbrument of yron in bloud, that one could hardly discern heads from bullets, or clottred haire from mangled flesh hung with goare.

This tale must at one time or other giue vp the ghost, and as good now as stay longer; I would gladly rid my
 10 handes of it cleanly, if I could tell how, for what with talking' of coblers, tinkers, roape-makers, botchers, and durt-daubers, the mark is clean out of my Muses mouth, & I am as it were more than duncified twixt diuinity and poetrie. What is there more as touching this tragedie that
 15 you would be resolu'd of? say quickly, for now is my pen on foote againe. How *lohn Leyden* dyed, is that it? He dyde like a dogge, he was hangd & | the halter paid for. D 3
 For his companions, doe they trouble you? I can tell you they troubled some men before, for they were all kild,
 20 & none escapt, no, not so much as one to tell the tale of the rainebow. Heare what it is to be Anabaptists, to be Puritans, to be villaines; you may bee counted illuminate botchers for a while, but your end will bee, Good people, pray for vs.

25 With the tragicall catastrophe of this Munsterian conflict did I cashier the new vocation of my caualiership. There was no more honorable wars in christendome then towards; wherefore, after I had learned to be halfe an houre in bidding a man *boniure* in Germane sunonimas, I trauelled
 30 along the countrie towards England as fast as I could.

What with wagons and bare tentoes hauing attained to Middleborough, (good Lord, see the changing chances of vs knights arrant infants) I met with the right honorable Lord *Henrie Howard*, Earle of Surrey, my late master. lesu,

3 *Grosart* suggests dissolueioyned. 4 of their great A. 11 coblers, & tinkers, & roapemakers, and botchers A. 12 cleane gone out A. 15-6 for now my pen is got vpon his feet again: how A. 16 *John*] !. A. 24 vs] me A. 31 *Run on in A.* 33 knight A. 34 master, lesu Q.

I was perswaded I should not bee more glad to see heauen than I was to see him. O, it was a right noble Lord, liberalitie it selfe (if in this yron age there were any such creature as liberalitie left on the earth), a Prince in content because a Poet without peere. 5

Destinie neuer defames hir selfe but when shee lets an excellent Poet die: if there bee anie sparke of Adams Paraded perfection yet emberd vp in the breastes of mortall men, certainelie God hath bestowed that his perfectest image on Poets. None come so neere to God 10 in wit, none more contemne the world, *vatis auarus non temere est animus*, sayth *Horace*, *versus amat, hoc studet vnum*; Seldom haue you seene anie Poet possessed with auarice, only verses he loues, nothing else he delights in: and as they contemne the world, so contrarilie of the 15 mechanicall world are none more contemned. Despised they are of the worlde, because they are not of the world: their thoughts are exalted aboue the worlde of ignorance and all earthly conceits.

As sweet Angelicall queristers they are continually 20 conuersant in the heauen of Arts: heauen it selfe is but the highest height of knowledge; he that knowes himselfe & all things else, knowes the meanes to be happie: happie, thrice happie, are they whom God hath doubled his spirite vpon, and giuen a double soule vnto to be Poets. 25

My Heroicall Master exceeded in this supernaturall kinde of wit; he entertained no grosse earthly spirite of D 3^v auarice, nor weake wo-|manly spirite of pusillanimitie and feare that are fained to bee of the water, but admirable, airie, and firie spirites, full of freedome, magnanimitie, 30 and bountihood. Let me not speake anie more of his accomplishments, for feare I spend all my spirits in praising him, and leaue my selfe no vigor of wit or effects of a soule to goe forward with my historic.

Hauing thus met him I so much adored, no interpleading 35

i him, O Q. 6 Run on in A. 8 imberd B, 13 vnum. Seldom Q.
36 Run on in A. 35 Run on in A.

was there of opposite occasions, but backe I must returne
and beare halfe stakes with him in the lotterie of trauell.
I was not altogether vnwilling to walke along with such
a good purse-bearer, yet musing what changeable humor
5 had so suddainely seduced him from his natiue soyle to
seeke out needlesse perils in those parts beyond sea, one
night verie boldly I demaunded of him the reason that
moued him thereto.

Ah, quoth he, my little Page, full little canst thou
10 perceiue howe farre Metamorphozed I am from my selfe,
since I last saw thee. There is a little God called Loue,
that will not bee worshipt of anie leaden braines; one that
proclaimes himselfe sole King and Emperour of pearcing
eyes, and cheefe Soueraigne of soft hearts; hee it is that,
15 exercising his Empire in my eyes, hath exorsized and
cleane coniured me from my content.

Thou knowst statelie *Geraldine*, too stately I feare for
mee to doe homage to her statue or shrine; she it is that
is come out of Italie to bewitch all the wise men of
20 England; vpon-Queene *Kathcrine Do,vager* she waites,
that hath a dowrie of beautie sufficient to make hir wooed
of the greatest Kinges in Christendome. Her high exalted
sunne beames haue set the Phenix neast of my breast on fire,
and I my selfe haue brought Arabian spiceries of sweet
25 passions and praises to furnish out the funerall flame of my
follie. Those who were condemned to be smothered to death
by sincking downe into the softe bottome of an high built
bedde of Roses, neuer dide so sweet a death as I shoulde
die, if hir Rose coloured disdaine were my deathes-man.

30 Oh thrice Emperiall Hampton Court, *Cupids* inchaunted
Castle, the place where I first sawe the perfecte omnipotence
of the Almightye expressed in mortalitie, tis thou alone
that, tithing all other men solace in thy pleasant scituation,
affoordest mee nothinge but an excellent begotten sorrow
35 out of the cheefe treasure of all thy recreations. |

3 a long B. 4 puxse-bearer B. 6 those] these A. 17 Run on in A.
25 funetall B. 30 Run on in A.

D 4 Deare *Wilton*, vnderstand that there it was where I first set eie on my more than celestiall *Geraldine*. Seeing her, I admired her; all the whole receptacle of my sight was vnhabited with hir rare worth. Long sute and vncessant protestations got me the grace to be entertained. Did 5 neuer vnlouing seruant so prentiselike obey his neuer pleased Mistris as I did her. My life, my wealth, my friendes had all their destinie depending on hir command.

Vppon a time I was determined to trauell; the fame of Italy, and an especiall affection I had vnto Poetrie, my 10 second Mistris, for which Italy was so famous, had wholly raiisht me vnto it. There was no dehortment from it, but needs thether I would: wherefore, comming to my Mistris as she was then walking with other Ladies of estate in paradise at Hampton Court, I most humbly besought her 15 of fauour, that she would giue mee so much gracious leaue to absent my selfe from her seruice, as to trauell a yeare or two into Italy. She verie discreetly answered me that if my loue were so hot as I had often auouched, I did verie well to applie the plaister of absence vnto it, for ab'e, re, ao as they say, causeth forgetfulnesse: yet neuerthelesse siru, it is Italy, my natiue countrie, you are so desirous to see, ' I am the more willing to make my will yours. .', *pete Italianam*, goe and seeke Italic, with *Aenxas*; but bee more true than *Aenxas*; I hope that kinde wit-cherishing climate 5 will worke no change in so wittie a breast. No Countrif of mine shall it be more, if it conspire with thee in am new loue against mee. One charge I will giue thee, anc' let it bee rather a request than a charge: When thou con; mest to Florence (the faire Cittie from whence I fetcht the¹ pride 30 of my birth), by an open challenge defende my peautie against all commers.

Thou hast that honourable carryage in Arm" that it shall bee no discredite for me to bequeath all thf glorie of mybeautieto thy well gouerned Arme. Faine would, Ibee 35 knowne where I was borne, faine would I haue the knowen

where fame sits in her chiefest Theater. Farewell, forget me not; continued deserts wil eternize me vnto thee, thy wishes shall bee expired when thy trauell shall bee once ended.

- Here did teares step out before words, and intercepted
 5 the course of my kinde conceiued speech, euen as winde is allayed with raine: with heart scalding sighes I confirmed her parting request, and vowed my selfe hers while liuing heate allowed mee to bee mine owne; | *Hinc illæ lachrimx*, D 4
 heere hence proceedeth the whole cause of my peregrination.
 10 Not a little was I delighted with this vnexpected loue storie, especially from a mouth out of which was nought wont to march but sterne precepts of grauetie & modestie. I swear vnto you I thought his companie the better by a thousand crownes, because hee had discarded those nice
 15 tearmes of chastitie and continencie. Now I beseech God loue me so well as I loue a plaine dealing man; earth is earth, flesh is flesh, earth wil to earth, and flesh vnto flesh; fraile earth, fraile flesh, who can keepe you from the worke of your creation?
 20 Dismissing this fruitles annotation *pro et contra*; towards Venice we progest, and tooke Roterdam in our waie, that was cleane out of our waie: there we met with aged learnings chiefe ornament, that abundant and superingenious clarke, *Erasmus*, as also with merrie Sir *Thomas Moore*, our
 25 Countriman, who was come purposelie ouer a little before vs, to visite the said graue father *Erasmus*: what talke, what conference wee had then, it were here superfluous to rehearse, but this I can assure you, *Erasmus* in all his speeches seemed so much to mislike the indiscretion of Princes in
 30 preferring of parasites and fooles, that he decreed with himselfe to swim with the stream, and write a booke forthwith in commendation of follie. Quick witted Sir *Thomas Moore* traueled in a cleane contrarie prouince, for he seeing most common-wealths corrupted by ill custome, & that
 35 principalities were nothing but great piracies, which, gotten by violence and murther, were maintained by priuate
 2 thy full wishes A. 20 *contra*, towards Q. 30 parasite B. 36 by] vy B.

vndermining and bloudshed, that in the cheefest flourishing kingdomes there was no equall or well deided weale one with an other, but a manifest conspiracie of rich men against poore men, procuring their owne vnlawfull commodities vnder the name and interest of the common-wealth: hee 5 concluded with himselfe to lay downe a perfect plot of a common-wealth or gouernment, which he would intitle his *Vtopia*.

So left we them to prosecute their discontented studies, and made our next iourney to Wittenberg, 10

At the verie pointe of our entrance into Wittenberg, we were spectators of a verie solemne scholasticall entertainment of the Duke of Saxonie thether. Whome, because hee was the chiefe Patrone of their Vniuersitie, and had tooke *Luthers* parte in banishing the Masse and all like papal 15 iurisdiction out of their towne, they croucht vnto extremely. |

E i The chiefe ceremonies of their intertainment were these: first, the heads of their vniuersitie (they were great heads of certaintie) met him in their hooded hypocrisie and doctorly accoustraments, *secundum formam statuti*; where by the 20 orator of the vniuersitie, whose pickerdeuant was verie plentifully besprinkled with rose water, a very learned or rather ruthfull oration was deliuered (for it rained all the while) signifieng thus much, that it was all by patch & by peecemeale stolne out of *Tully*, and he must pardon them, 35 though in emptying their phrase bookes, the world emptied his intrales, for they dyd it not in any ostentation of wit (which God knowes they had not) but to shew the extraordinarie good will they bare the Duke (to haue him stand in the raine till he was through wet): a thousand *quemadmo-* 30 *dums* and *quapropters* he came ouer him with; every sentence he concluded with *Esse posse videatur*: through all the nine worthies he ran with praising and comparing him; *Nestors* yeeres he assured him off vnder the broad

9 *Run on in A.* 17 *The . . .] Run on in A. New par. but not set in. B.* 20 *statui B.* by] *A: ont. B.* 26 *world] ayre A.* 28 *God knowes] om. A.* 30 *through A.* wet) a *Q.*

scale of their supplications, and with that crowe troden
verse in Virgil, *Dum iuga mentis aper*, hee packt vp his
pipes and cride *dixi*.

That pageant ouerpast, there rusht vpon him a miserable
5 rablement of Junior graduats, that all cride vppon him
mightily in their gibrige, lyke a companie of beggers, God
saued your grace, God saued your grace, lesus preserue your
Highnesse, though it be but for an houre.

Some three halfe penyworth of Latine here also had he
10 throwen at his face, but it was choise stuffe, I can tell you,
as there is a choise euen amongst ragges gathered vp from
the dunghill. At the townes end met him the burgers and
dunsticall incorporationers of *Wittenberg* in their distin-
guished liuries, their distinguished liuerie faces, I meane,
15 for they were most of them hot liuered dronkards, and had
all the coate colours of sanguine, purple, crimson, copper,
carnation, that were to be had, in their countenances.
Filthie knaues, no cost had they bestowed on the towne for
his welcome, sauing new painted their houghs and bousing
ao houses, which commonly are fairer than their churches, and
ouer their gates set the towne armes carousing a whole
health to the Dukes armes, which sounded gulping after this
sorte, *Vanhotten, slotten, irk bloschen glotten gelderslike*:
what euer the wordes were, the sense was this, Good drinke
25 is a medicine for all diseases.

A bursten belly inkhorne orator called *Vanderhulke*,
they pickt out to present him with an oration, one that had
a sulphurous big | swolne large face, like a Saracen, eyes E i^v
lyke two kentish oysters, a mouth that opened as wide
30 euery time he spake, as one of those old knit trap doores,
a beard as though it had ben made of a birds neast pluckt
in peeces, which consisteth of strawe, haire, and durt mixt
together. He was apparelled in blacke leather new licourd,
& a short gowne without anie gathering in the backe, faced

a monies B' 5 crid out vpon A. 9 New par. A. Run on in B,
ao are built fayrer A. ai-a carousing . . . armes] om. A. 23 Vanhotten
. . . gelderslike} In B these words are in Black Letter of a larger face than the
rest' Roman in A, 26 Vanderhulke]A Vanderkulke B' 31 bin A.

before and behinde with a boistrous beare skin, and a red night-cap on his head. To this purport and effect was this broccing duple beere oration.

Right noble Duke (*ideo nobilis quasi no bilis*, for you haue no bile or colar in you), know that our present in- 5 corporation of Wittenberg, by me the tongue man of their thankfulnes, a townesman by birth, a free Germane by nature, an oratour by arte, and a scriuener by education, in all obedience & chastity, most bountifully bid you welcome to Witenberg: welcome, sayd I? O orificiall rethorike, 10 wipe thy euerlasting mouth, and affoord me a more Indian metaphor than that, for the braue princely blood of a Saxon. Oratorie, vncaske the bard hutch of thy complements, and with the triumphantest troupe in thy treasurie doe trewage vnto him. What impotent speech with his 15 eight partes may not specific, this vnestimable gift, holding his peace, shall as it were (with teares I speak it) do wherby as it may seeme or appeare to manifest or declare, and yet it is, and yet it is not, and yet it may be a diminitiuie oblation meritorious to your high pusillanimitie a^o and indignitie. Why should I goe gadding and fisgigging after firking flantado amfibologies? wit is wit, and good will is good will. With all the wit I haue, I here, according to the premises, offer vp vnto you the cities generall good will, which is a gilded Can, in manner and forme folowing, for 25 you and the heirs of your bodie lawfully begotten to drinke healths in. The scholasticall squitter bookes clout you vp cannopies and foot-clothes of verses. We that are good fellows, and Hue as merry as cup and can, will not verse vpon you as they doe, but must do as we can, and entertaine you 30 if it bee but with a plaine emptie Canne. He hath learning enough that hath learnde to drinke to his first man.

Gentle Duke, without paradox bee it spoken, thy horses at our owne proper costes and charges shall kneed vp to the knees all the while thou art heere in spruce beere and 35

4 *Newpar. A. Run on in B. 5)] after bilis Q. B has (. 6 tougne Z. 9 yon B. 18 appeare, to Q. 18-9 declaic & A : declare : & Gro. 23 will. B.*

lubecke licour. Not a dogge thou bringest with thee but shall bee banketted with rhenish wine and sturgion. On our shoulders we weare no lambe skinne or mi-niuer like E these academikes, yet wee can drinke to the confusion of 5 thy enemies. Good lambs wooll haue we for their lambe skins, and for their miniuer, large minerals in our coffers. Mechanicall men they call vs, and not amisse, for most of vs being *Mdechi*, that is, cuckoldes and whooremasters, fetch our antiquitie from the temple of *Mxcha*, where Ma- 10 hornet was hung vp. Three partes of the worlde, America, Affrike, and Asia, are of this our mechanike religion. *Nero*, when he crid, *O quantus artifexpereo* profest himselfe of our freedome, insomuch as *Artifex* is a citizen or craftes man, as well as *Carnifex* a scholler or hangman. Passe on 15 by leaue into the precincts of our abhomination. Bonie Duke, frolike in our boure, and perswade thy selfe that euen as garlike hath three properties, to make a man winke, drinke, and stinke, so we wil winke on thy imperfections, drinke to thy fauorites, and al thy foes shall 20 stinke before vs. So be it. Farewell.

The Duke laught not a little at this ridiculous oration, but that verie night as great an ironical occasion was ministred, for he was bidden to one of the chiefe schooles to a Comedie handled by scollers. *Acolastus*, the prodigal 25 child, was the name of it, which was so filthily acted, so leathernly set forth, as would haue moued laughter in *Heraclitus*. One, as if he had ben playning a clay floore, stampingly trode the stage so harde with his feete that I thought verily he had resolved to do the Carpenter that 30 set it vp some vtter shame. Another flong his armes lyke cudgels at a peare tree, insomuch as it was mightily dreaded that he wold strike the candles that hung aboue their heades out of their sockettes, and leaue them all darke. Another did nothing but winke and make faces. There 35 was a parasite, and he with clapping his handes and

4-5 of all thy A. 10 was] is A. 13 freedome. Insomuch,: freedome. Insomuch B.

thripping his fingers seemed to dance an antike to and fro. The onely thing they did well was the prodigall child's hunger, most of their schollers being hungerly kept; & surely you would haue sayd they had bin brought vp in hogs academic to learne to eate acornes, if you had scene 5 how sedulously they fell to them. Not a ieast had they to keepe their auditors from sleeping but of swill and draffe; yes, nowe and then the seruant put his hand into the dish before his master, & almost chokt himselfe, eating slouenly and rauenously to cause sport. 10

The next daie they had solempne disputations, where *Luther* and *Carolostadius* scolded leuell coyle. A masse of wordes I wote well they heapte vp agaynst the masse and 1. 2^v the Pope, but | farther particulars of their disputations I remeber not. I thought verily they woulde haue worried 15 one another with wordes, they were so earnest and vehement. *Luther* had the louder voyce, *Carolostadius* went beyond him in beating and bousing with his fists. *Quæ supra nos nihil ad nos*: they vttered nothing to make a man laugh, therefore I will leaue them. Mary, their out- 20 warde iestures would now and then afford a man a morsel of mirth: of those two I meane not so much as of all the other traine of opponents & respondents. One peckt with his fore-finger at euerie halfe sillable hee brought forth, and nodded with his nose like an olde singing man teaching a 25 yong querister to keepe time. Another woulde be sure to wipe his mouth with his handkercher at y^e ende of euerie ful point, and euer when he thought he had cast a figure so curiously as he diued ouer head and eares into his auditors admiration, hee woulde take occasion to stroke vp his 30 haire, and twine vp his mustachios twice or thrice ouer, while they might haue leasure to applaud him. A third wauerd & wagled his head, like a proud horse playing with his bridle, or as I haue scene some fantastical swimmer, at

4 ben A. 7 sleepe A. 18 fists, *Quæ Q.* 19 nos. They *Q.*
 21 now and then would affoorde A. 23 peckte like a crane with A.
 a8 point. And A.

euerie stroke, train his chin side-long ouer his left shoulder.
 A fourth swet and foamed at the mouth for verie anger his
 aduersarie had denied that part of the sillogisme which he
 was not prepared to answere. A fifth spread his armes
 5 like an vscher that goes before to make rome, and thript
 with his finger and his thumbe when he thought he had
 tickled it with a conclusion. A sixt hung downe his
 countenance like a sheepe, and stutted and slauered very
 pittifully when his inuention was stept aside out of the way.
 10 A seuenth gaspt for winde, & groned in his pronounciation
 as if hee were hard bound with some bad argument. Grosse
 plodders they were all, that had some learning and reading,
 but no wit to make vse of it. They imagined the Duke
 tooke the greatest pleasure and contentment vnder heauen
 15 to heare them speake Latine, and as long as they talkt
 nothing but *Tully* he was bound to attend them. A most
 vaine thing it is in many vniuersities at this dale, that they
 count him excellent eloquent, who stealeth not whole
 phrases but whole pages out of *Tully*. If of a number of
 20 shreds of his sentences he can shape an oration, from all
 the world he carries it awaie, although in truth it be no
 more than a fooles coat of many colours. No inuention or
 matter haue they of theyr owne, but tack vp a stile of his
 stale galynafries. The leaden headed Germanes first
 25 began this, and wee Englishmen haue sur-|fitted of their E3
 absurd imitation. I pitie *Nizolius* that had nothing to do
 but picke thrids ends out of an olde ouerworne garment.

This is but by the waie, we must looke back to our
 disputants. One amongst the rest thinking to bee more
 30 conceited than his fellowes, seeing the Duke haue a dog he
 loued well, which sate by him on the tarras, conuerted al
 his oration to him, and not a haire of his taylor but he
 kembd out with comparisons: so to haue courted him if he
 were a bitch had bin verie suspitious. Another commented

3 the] his A. 5 roome A. 10 gaspt and gapt for A. 19 phrases
 but whole pages] A ; pages, but whole phrases B' 33 comparisons. So A.
 34 hitch A'

and descanted on the Dukes staffe, new tipping it with many quaint epithites. Some cast his natiuitie, and promised him hee shoulde not die vntill the day of Iudgement. Omitting further superfluityes of this stampe, in this generall assembly we found intermixed that abundant scholler *Cornelius Agrippa*. At that time he bare the fame to be the greatest coniurer in christendome. *Scoto*, that dyd the iugling tricks before the Queene, neuer came neere him one quarter in magicke reputation. The Doctors of *Wittenberg*, doting on the rumor that went of him, desired him before the Duke and them to doe some thing extraordinarie memorable.

One requested to see pleasant *Plautus*, and that hee would shewe them in what habit he went, and with what countenance he lookt when he ground corne in the mil. Anothei had halfe a months mind to *Quid* and his hooke nose *Erasmus*, who was not wanting in that honorable meeting requested to see *Tully* in that same grace and maiestie he pleaded his oration *pro Roscio Amerino*, affirming that til in person he beheld his importunitie of pleading, hee woulde in no wise bee perswaded that anie man coulde carrie awaye a manifest case with rethorike so strangely. To *Erasmus* petition he easily condescended, & willing the doctors al such an houre to hold their conuocation, and euery one to keepe him in his place without mouing, at the time prefixed in entered *Tullie*, ascended his pleading place, and declaimed verbatim the forenamed oration, but with such astonishing amazement, with such feruent exaltation o spirit, with such soule-stirring iestures, that all his auditoun were readie to install his guiltie client for a God.

Great was the concourse of glorie *Agrippa* drewe to hin wyth this one feate. And in deede hee was so cloyed wit! men which came to beholde him, that he was fayne sooner than he would, to returne to the Emperours cour

3 vntill] till A. 8 trickes here before A. 15 lookt, when A
 16 moneths A. 17 in] to A, 19 *Amerino*. Affirming *Q*. 21 in <
 wise] not A. that] *om.* A. 25 mouing: at *Q*.

from whence he came, and leaue *Wittenberg* before he
 woulde. With him we trauelled along, hairing pur-|chast E 3^v
 his acquaintance a litle before. By the waie as we went,
 my master and I agreed to change names. It was con-
 5 eluded betwixte vs, that I should be the Earle of Surrie,
 and he my man, onely because in his owne person, which
 hee woulde not haue reproched, hee meant to take more
 liberty of behaiour : as for my cariage he knew hee was to
 tune it at a key, either high or low, as he list.

10 To the Emperours court wee came, where our entertain-
 ment was euery way plentiful; carouses we had in whole
 galons in sted of quart pots. Not a health was giuen vs
 but contained well neere a hogshead. The customes of the
 countrie we were eager to bee instructed in, but nothing
 15 wee coulde learne but this, that euer at the Emperours
 coronation there is an oxe roasted with a stag in the belly,
 and that stag in his belly hath a kid, and that kid is stufte
 full of birds. Some courtiers, to wearie out time, would
 tell vs further tales of *Cornelius Agrippa*, and howe when
 20 sir *Thomas Moore*, our countryman, was there, he shewed
 him the whole destructio of Troy in a dreame. How the
 Lord *Cromwell* being the kings Embassador there, in like
 case, in a perspectiue glasse hee set before his eyes king
Henrie the eight with all his Lordes on hunting in his
 35 forrest at Windsore, and when he came into his studie and
 was verie vrgent to be partaker of some rare experiment,
 that he might reporte when he came into England, he wild
 him amongst two thousande great bookes to take downe
 which hee list, and begin to reade one line in anie place,
 30 and without booke he woulde rehearse twentie leaues
 following. *Cromwel* did so, and in many bookes tride
 him, when in euery thing he exceeded his promise and
 conquered his expectation. To *Charles* the fift, then
 Emperour, they reported how he shewed the nine worthies,
 35 *Dauid*) *Salomon*, *Gedeon*, and the rest, in that similitude

8 behaiour, As A : behaiour. As *Gro.*, *Gosse.* 9 tuene B. low,
 or as A. 24 on] *om.* A. 28 amongst A.

and likenes that they liued vpon earth. My master a I, hairing by the high waie side gotten some reasonal familiaritie with him, vpon this accesse of myracles imput to him, resolued to request him somthing in our ow behalves. I, because I was his suborned Lorde and mast desired him to see the liuely image of *Geraldine*, his loi in the glasse, and what at that instant she did and w whome she was talking. He shewed her vs without ai more adoe, sicke weeping on her bed, and resolued all ir deuout religion for the absence of her Lord. At the sig thereof he could in no wise refrain, though he had too vpon him the condition of a seruant, but he must forthw frame this extemporal dity. |

E 4 *ALL souk, no earthly flesh, why dost thou fade ?
All good, no worthlesse drosse, why lookst thou pat
Sickness, how darst thou one so faire inuade ?
Too base infirmitie to worke hir bale.*

*Heauen be distemperd since she griued pines,
Neuer be drie these my sadplaintiue lines.*

*Pearch thou, my spirit, on hir siluer breasts,
And with their paine-redoubled musike-beatings,
Let them tosse thee to world where all toile rests,
Where blisse is subiect to no feares defeatings:
Her praise I tune whose tongue doth tune the sphea
And gets new muses in hir hearers eares.*

*Starres fall to fetch fresh light from hir rich eyes,
Her bright brow driues the Sunne to cloudes beneath,
Hir haire reflex with red strakes paints the skies,
Sweet morne and euening deaw flowes from her breath,
Phcebe rules tides, she my teares tides forth drawe.
In her sicke bed loue sits and maketh lawes.*

*Hir daintie lims tinsill hir si Ike soft sheets,
Hir rose-crownd cheekes eclipse my dazeled sight;*

*O glasse, with too much ioy my thoughts thou greets,
 And yet thou shewest me day but by twy-light.
 He kisse thee for the kindnes I haue felt,
 Hir lips one kisse would vnto Nectar melt.*

5 Though the Emperours court and the extraordinarie
 edyiing companie of *Cornelius Agrippa* might haue bin
 argumentes of waight to haue arested vs a little longer
 there, yet Italy still stuck as a great moate in my masters
 eie; he thought he had trauelled no farther than Wales till
 so he had tooke suruey of that cuntry which was such a
 curious molder of wits.

To cut off blind ambages by the high way side, we made
 a long | stride and got to Venice in short time ; where hauing E 4'
 scarce lookt about vs, a precious supernaturall pandor,
 15 apparelled in all points like a gentleman & hauing halfe a
 dosen seuerall languages in his purse, entertained vs in our
 owne tongue very paraphrastically and eloquently, & maugre
 all other pretended acquaintance, would haue vs in a violent
 kinde of curtesie to be the gwestes of his appointment. His
 20 name was *Petro de campo Frego*, a notable practitioner in
 the pollicie of baudrie. The place whether he brought
 vs was a pernicious curtizas house named *Tabitha* the
 Tempresses, a wench that could set as ciuill a face on it
 as chastities first martyr *Lucrecia*. What will you conceit
 35 to be in any saints house that was there to seeke ? Bookes,
 pictures, beades, crucifixes, why, there was a haberdashers
 shop of the in euerie chaber. I warrant you should not see
 one set of her neckercher peruerted or turned awrie, not
 a piece of a haire displast. On her beds there was not
 30 a wrinkle of any wallowing to be found, her pillows bare
 out as smooth as a groning wiues belly, & yet she was
 a Turke and an infidel, & had more dooings then all her
 neighbours besides. Vs for our money they vsed like
 Emperours. I was master as you heard before, & my
 35 master, the Earle, was but as my chief man whome I made

my companion. So it happened (as iniquitie will out at one time or other) that she, perceiuing my expence had no more vents then it should haue, fel in with my supposed seruant, my man, and gaue him half a promise of manage, if he would help to make me away, that shee and he might 5 enjoy the iewels and wealth that I had.

The indifficultie of the condition thus she explaind vnto him : her house stood vpon vaultes, which in two hundred yeeres together were neuer searcht; who came into her house none tooke notice of; his fellow seruants that knew 10 of his masters abode there shoulde be all dispatcht by him, as from his master, into sundry parts of the citie about busines, and when they returned, aunswere should be made that he lay not their anye more, but had remoued to Padua since their departure, & thither they must follow him. 15 Now (quoth she), if you be disposed to make him away in their absence, you shall haue my house at commaund. Stab, poyson, or shoote him through with a pistol, all is one, into the vault he shalbe throwen when the deed is doone. On my bare honestie it was a craftie queane, for 20 shee had enacted with her self, if he had bin my legitimate seruant, as he was one that serued and supplied my necessities, when he had | murdered me, to haue accused him of the murther, and made all that I had hers (as I carried all my masters wealth, monie, iewels, rings, or bils 25 of exchange, continually about me). He verie subtilly consented to her stratageme at the first motion; kill me hee would, that heauens could not withstand, and a plstoll was the predestinate engine which must deliuer the parting blow. God wot I was a rawe yong squier, and my master 30 dealt iudasly with me, for he tolde me but euerie thing that she and he agreed of. Wherefore I coulde not possibly preuent it, but as a man would saie auoide it. The execution day aspired to his vtmost deuolution, into my chamber came my honorable attendant with his pistoll charged by 35 his side, very suspiciouslie and sullenly: ladie *Tabitha* and

Petro de campo Frego, her pandor, folowed him at the hard heeles.

At their entrance I saluted them all very familiarly and merily, & began to impart vnto the what disquiet dreams
5 had disturbed mee the last night. I dreamt, quoth I, that my man *Brunquell* here (for no better name got he of me) came into my chamber with a pistol charged vnder his arme to kill me, and that he was suborned by you, mistres *Tabitha*, and my verie good friende *Petro de campo Frego*;
10 God send it turne to good, for it hath affrighted mee about measure. As they were readie to enter into a coulourable common place of the deceitfull friuolousnes of dreames, my trustie seruant *Brunquel* stode quiuering and quaking euerye ioynt of him, &, as it was before compacted betweene
15 vs, let his pistoll droppe from him on the sodaine; wherewith I started out of my bed, and drew my rapier, and cryde, Murther, murther, which made good wife *Tabitha* redie to bepis her.

My seruaunt, or my master, which you will, I tooke
20 roughlie by the coller, and threatned to run him through incontinent if he confest not the truth. He, as it were striken with remorse of conscience, (God be with him, for he could counterfeit most daintily,) downe on his knees, askt me forgiuenesse, and impeached *Tabitha* and *Petro de*
35 *campo Frego* as guiltie of subornation. I very mildly and grauely gaue him audience; raile on them I dyd not after his tale was ended, but sayde I would trie what the lawe could doe. Conspiracy by the custome of their countrie was a capitall offence, and what custome or Justice might
30 affoorde they should bee all sure to feele. I could, quoth I, acquite my selfe otherwise, but it is not for a straunger to be his owne caruer in reuenge. Not a word more with *Tabitha*, but die she would before God or the deuill would haue her: shee sounded and reuiued, and then sounded
35 again, and after she reuiued | againe, sighed heauily, spoke F i

3 *Run on in A.*
cride murther *Q.*

5 dreamd *A.*
ao thorough *A.*

9 friend here *Petro A.*
35 againe *c.w.*

16-7

faintly and pittifully, yea, and so pittifully, as if a man had not knowen the pranckes of harlots before, he would haue melted into commiseration. Tears, sighs, and dolefull tuned wordes could not make anie forcible claime to my stonie eares ; it was the glittering crownes that I hungred 5 and thirsted after, & with them for all her mocke holy daie iestures she was faine to come off, before I condescended to anie bargaine of silence. So it fortun'd (fie vppon that vnfortunate worde of Fortune) that this whoore, this queane, this curtizan, this common of ten thousand, so bribing me 10 not to bewray her, had giuen me a great deal of counterfeit gold, which she had receiued of a coyner to make awaie a little before. Amongst the grosse summe of my briberie, I, silly milkesop, mistrusting no deceit, vnder an angell of light tooke what shee gaue me, nere turnd it ouer, for 15 which (O falsehood in faire shewe) my master & I had lyke to haue bin turnd ouer. He that is a knight arrant, exercised in the affaires of Ladies and Gentlewomen, hath more places to send mony to tha the deuill hath to send his spirits to. There was a delicate wench named *Flauia* 20 *Aemilia* lodging in saint Markes street at a goldsmiths, which I would faine haue had to the grand test, to trie whether she were cunning in Alcumie or no. Aie me, she was but a counterfet slip, for she not onely gaue me the slip, but had welnigh made me a slipstring. To her I sent 25 my golde to beg an houre of grace: ah, graceles fornicatres, my hostesse and shee were confederate, who hauing gotten but one peece of my ill golde in their hands, deuised the meanes to make me immortall. I could drinke for anger till my head akt, to thinke howe I was abused. 30 Shall I shame the deuill and speak the truth? To prison was I sent as principal, and my master as accessarie; nor was it to a prison neither, but to the master of the mintes house, who though partlie our iudge, and a most seure

i so pittifully B. 3 into] in A. Tears] A : Tares B. 5 glistering A.
 7 I woulde condescend A. 19 diuell A. 20 named] called A. 21
 saint] S. A. 23 cunning] currant A. 28 in] into A.

vpright iustice in his own nature, extremely seemed to condole our ignorant estate, and without all peradventure a present redresse he had ministred, if certaine of our countrymen, hearing an English Earle was apprehended for
 5 coyning, had not come to visite vs. An ill planet brought them thether, for at the first glance they knew the seruant of my secrecies to be the Earle of Surrie, and I (not worthy to be named I) an outcast of his cuppe or pantofles. Thence, thence sprong the full period of our infelicity.
 10 The master of the mint, our whilom refresher and consolation, now tooke part against vs ; he thought we had a mint in our heads of mischiuous conspiracies against their state. Heauens bare witnes with | vs it was not so, F 2 (heauens will not alwayes come to witnes when they are
 15 cald.)

To a straiter ward were we committed : that which we haue imputatiuely transgressed must be answered. O, the heathen heigh passe and the intrinsecall legerdemaine of our special approued good pandor, *Petro de Campo Frego*.
 20 He, although he dipt in the same dish with vs euerie daie, seeming to labour our cause verie importunately, & had interpreted for vs to the state from the beginning, yet was one of those trecherous brother *Trulies*, and abused vs most darkly. He interpreted to vs with a pestilence, for
 25 wheras we stood obstinately vpon it, we were wrongfully deteined, and that it was naught but a malicious practise of sinfull *Tabithdy* our late hostes, he, by a fine cunny-catching corrupt translation, made vs plainly to confesse, and crie *Miserere*, ere we had need of our necke-verse.

30 Detestable, detestable, that the flesh and the deuill shoulde deale by their factors. lie stand to it, there is not a pandor but hath vowed paganisme. The deuil himselfe is not such a deuil as he, so be he perform his function aright. -He must haue the backe of an asse, the snout of

2 eur ignoraut B' 4 English.?. 8 or his pantofles A. I 2
 head A. 16 *New par. A. Run on in B.* 27 hostesse A. conny-
 catching A. 30 *New par. A. Run on in B, Gro.* 31 factors, lie B.
 33 scuh B.

an elephant, the wit of a foxe, and the teeth of a wolfe; he must faune like a spaniell, crouch like a lew, Here like a sheepbiter. If he be halfe a puritan, and haue scripture continually in his mouth, hee speeds the better. I can tell you it is a trade of great promotion, & let none euer thinke 5 to mount by seruice in forain courts, or creep neere to some magnifiquie Lords, if they be not seene in this science. O, it is the art of arts, and ten thousand times goes beyond the intelligencer. None but a staid graue ciuill man is capable of it; he must haue exquisite courtship in him 10 or else he is not old who, he wants the best point in his tables.

God be mercifull to our pandor (and that were for God to worke a miracle), he was seene in all the seuen Hberali deadly sciences, not a sinne but he was as absolute in as 15 sathan himselfe. Sathan could neuer haue supplanted vs so as hee did. I may saie to you, he planted in vs the first Italionate wit that we had. During the time we lay close and tooke phisick in this castle of contemplation, there was a magnificos wife of good calling sent to beare vs 20 companie. Her husbands name was *Castaldo*, she hight *Diamante*: the cause of her committing was an vngrounded ielous suspition which her doting husband had conceiued of her chastitie. One *Isaac Medicus*, a bergomast, was the man he chose to make him a monster, who being a courtier, 25 and repairing to his house very often, neither for loue of him nor his wife, but only with a drift to borrow mony of a paune of wax and parchment, when he sawe his expectation |
F a deluded, & that *Castaldo* was too charie for him to close with, hee priuily, with purpose of reuenge, gaue out amongst 30 his copesmates that he resorted to *Castaldos* house for no other end but to cuckold him, and doubtfully he talkt that he had and he had not obtained his sute. Rings which he borrowed of a light curtizan that hee vsed to, he would faine to be taken from her fingers, and, in summe, so 35

ii or else [if] he is not old he wants *Gro.* 13 *Newpar. A. Run on in B.*
 20 gent in to A. ai compaue B. 29 deluded c.w. 35 her] A\ his B.

handled the matter, that *Castaldo* exclaimd, Out, whore, strumpet, six penie hackster, away with her to prison.

As glad were we almost as if they had giuen vs libertie, that fortune lent vs such a sweete pue-fellow. A pretie
 5 rounde faced wench was it, with blacke eie browes, a high forehead, a little mouth, and a sharpe nose, as fat and plum euerie part of her as a plouer, a skin as slike and soft as the backe of a swan, it doth me good when I remember her. Like a bird she tript on the grounde, and bare out her belly
 10 as maiesticall as an Estrich. With a licorous rouling eie fixt piercing on the earth, and sometimes scornfully darted on the tone side, she figured forth a high discontented disdaine; much like a prince puffing and storming at the treason of some mightie subiect fled lately out of his power.
 15 Her very countenaunce repiningly wrathfull, and yet cleere and vnwrinkled, would haue confirmed the cleernes of her conscience to the austerest iudge in the worlde. If in anie thing shee were culpable, it was in beeing too melancholy chast, and shewing her selfe as couetous of her beautie as
 30 hir husband was of his bags. Many are honest because they know not howe to bee dishonest: shee thought there was no pleasure in stolne bread, because there was no pleasure in an olde mans bed. It is almost impossible that any woman should be excellently wittie, and not make the
 35 vtmost pennie of her beautie. This age and this cuntrye of ours admits of some miraculous exceptions, but former times are my constant informers. Those that haue quicke motions of wit haue quicke motions in euerie thing: yron onely needs many strokes, only yron wits are not wonne
 30 without a long siege of intreatie. Gold easily bends, the most ingenious mindes are easiest mooued, *Ingenium nobis molle Thalia dedit*, sayth *Psapho* to *Phao*. Who hath no mercifull milde mistres, I will maintaine, hath no wittie but a clownish dull flegmatike puppie to his mistres.
 35 This magnificos wife was a good louing soule that had mettall inough in her to make a good wit of, but being

neuer remoued from vnder her mothers and her husbands
 wing, it was not molded and fashioned as it ought. Causeles
 † 3 distrust is able to driue deceit into a \ simple womans head.
 I durst pawne the credite of a page, which is worth ams ace
 at all times, that she was immaculate honest till she met 5
 with vs in prison. Mary, what temptations she had then,
 when fire and flax were put together, conceit with your
 selues, but hold my master excusable.

Alacke, he was too vertuous to make her vicious; he
 stood vpon religion and conscience, what a hainous thing it 10
 was to subuert Gods ordinance. This was all the iniurie
 he would offer her: sometimes he would imagine her in a
 melancholy humor to bee his *Geraldine*, and court her in
 tearmes correspondent; nay, he would sweare she was his
Geraldine, and take her white hand and wipe his eyes with 15
 it, as though the verie touch of her might staunch his
 anguish. Now would he kneele & kisse the ground as holy
 ground which she vouchsafed to blesse from barrennes by
 her steppes. Who would haue learned to write an excellent
 passion, might haue bin a perfect tragick poet, had he but 20
 attended halfe the extremitie of his lament. Passion vpon
 passion would throng one on anothers necke, he wold praise
 her beyond the moone and starres, and that so sweetly and
 rauishingly as I perswade my self he was more in loue with
 his own curious forming fancie than her face; and truth it 25
 is, many become passionate louers onely to winne praise
 to theyr wits.

He praised, he praied, he desired and besought her to
 pittie him that perisht for her. From this his intranced
 mistaking extasie could no man remoue him. Who loueth 30
 resolutely wil include euery thing vnder the name of his
 loue. From prose hee would leape into verse, and with
 these or such like rimes assault her.

If I must die, O let me choose my death:

Sucke out my soule with kisses, cruell maide,

35

i mothers] A : mother B. 3 simpl c.w. 9 Newpar. A. Run on in B.
 19 hau(?) B. 24 ranishingly B.

- In thy breasts christall bals enbalme my breath,
 Dole it all out in sighs when I am laide.
 Thy lips on mine like cupping glasses claspe,
 Let our tongues meete and striue as they would sting,
 5 Crush out my winde with one strait girting graspe,
 Stabs on my heart keepe time whitest thou doest sing.
 Thy eyes lyke searingyrons burne out mine,
 In thy faire tresses stiffl me outright',
 Like Circes change me to a loathsome swine,
 10 So I may Hue for euer in thy sight.
 Into heauens ioyes none can profoundly see.
 Except that first they meditate on thee. *

Sadly and verily, if my master sayde true, I shoulde if F^{3v}
 I were a wench make many men quickly immortall. What
 15 ist, what ist for a maide fayre and fresh to spend a little lip-
 salue on a hungrie louer? My master beate the bush and
 kepte a coyle and a pratling, but I caught the birde: sim-
 plicitie and plainnesse shall carrie it away in another world.
 God wot he was *Petro Desperato*, when I stepping to her
 20 with a dunstable tale made vp my market. A holy requiem
 to their soules that thinke to wooe a woman with riddles.
 I hadde some cunning plot, you must suppose, to bring this
 about. Hir husbancThad abused her, and it was verie neces-
 sarie she should be reuenged. Seldome doe they prooue
 25 patient martyrs who are punisht vniustly: one waie or other
 they will crie quittance whatsoever it cost them. No other
 apt meanes had this poore shee captiued *Cicely*, to worke
 her hoddie peake husband a proportionable plague for his
 iealousie, but to giue his head his full loading of infamie.
 30 Shee thought shee would make him complaine for some
 thing, that now was so harde bound with an hereticall
 opinion. How I dealt with her, gesse, gentle reader, *subaudi*
 that I was in prison, and she my silly Taylor.

Meanes there was made after a moneths or two durance

5 *craspe B.* 11 *none can] can none A.* 21 wooe women A : wooc
 a women B. 24 reuenged : seldome B. 25 vniustly. One A : vniustly,
 one B. 28 for] to A. 29 loading ,B. infamie A. 33 she was my lailor. A.

by M. *Iohn Russell*, a Gentleman of king *Henrie* the eighth chamber, who then laie lieger at *Venice* for England, that our cause should be fauorably heard. At that time was Monsieur *Petro Aretino* searcher and chiefe Inquisiter to the colledge of curtizans. Diuerse and sundrie waies was 5 this *Aretine* beholding to the king of England, especially for by this foresayd master *Iohn Russell*, a little before, he had sent him a pension of foure hundred crownes yerely during his life. Verie forcibly was he dealt withall, to straine the vtmost of his credit for our deliuerie out of prison. 10 Nothing at his hands we sought, but that the curtizan might bee more narrowly sifted and examined. Such and so extraordinarie was his care and industrie herein, that, within few dayes after, mistres *Tabitka* and her pandor cride *Peccaui, confiteor*, and we were presently discharged, 15 they for example sake executed. Most honorably, after our inlargement, of the state were we vsed, & had sufficient recompence for all our troubles & wrongs.

Before I goe anie further, let me speake a word or two of this *Aretine*. It was one of the wittiest knaues that euer 20 God made. If out of so base a thing as inke there may bee extracted a spirite, hee writ with nought but the spirite of inke, and his stile was the spiritualitie of artes, and nothing else; whereas all others of his age were but the F 4 lay temporaltie of inkehorne tearmes. For indeede | they 25 were meere temporizers, and no better. His pen was sharp pointed lyke a poinyard; no leafe he wrote on but was lyke a burning glasse to set on fire all his readers. With more than musket shot did he charge his quill, where hee meant to inueigh. No houre but hee sent a whole 30 legion of deuils into some heard of swine or other. If *Martiall* had ten Muses (as he saith of himselfe) when he but tasted a cup of wine, he had ten score when he determined to tyrannize: nere a line of his but was able to

4 to] for A. 6 Englnd B. 7 foresaid M. *Russell* A. 8
 hundreth A. 10 ont of prison] om. A. 27 like ponyard A. 29 then
 A. 30 No one houre A.

make a man drunken with admiration. His sight peart
 like lightning into the entrails of all abuses. This I must
 needs saie, that most of his learning hee got by hearing
 the lectures at Florence. It is sufficient that learning he
 5 had, and a conceit exceeding all learning, to quintessence
 euerie thing which hee heard. He was no timorous seruile
 flatterer of the commonwealth wherein he liued. His
 tongue & his inuention were foreborne ; what they thought,
 they would confidently vtter. Princes hee spard not,
 10 that in the least point transgrest. His lyfe he contemned
 in comparison of the libertie of speech. Whereas some
 dull braine maligners of his accuse him of that Treatise,
de tribus impostoribus Mundi, which was neuer contriued
 without a generall counsell of deuils, I am verily perswaded
 15 it was none of his ; and of my minde are a number of the
 most iudicial Italians. One reason is this, because it was
 published fortie yeres after his death, and hee neuer in his
 lyfe time wrote anie thing in Latine. Certainly I haue
 heard that one of *Machiuels* followers and disciples was the
 30 author of that booke, who, to auoyde discredit, filcht it
 forth vnder *Aretines* name, a great while after he had sealed
 vp his eloquent spirit in the graue. Too much gall dyd
 that wormwood of Gibeline wittes put in his inke, who
 ingraued that rubarbe Epitaph on this excellent poets
 25 tombstone. Quite forsaken of all good Angels was he, and
 vtterly giuen ouer to artlesse enuie. Foure vniuersities
 honoured *Aretine* wyth these rich titles, .'. *fiagello de*
principi, II veritiero, II deuino, & Vnico Aretino.

The French king, *Frances* the first, he kept in such awe,
 30 that to chaine his tongue he sent him a huge chaine of
 golde, in the forme of tongues fashioned. Singularly hath
 he commented of the humanitie of Christ. Besides, as
 Moses set forth his Genesis, so hath hee set forth his
 Genesis also, including the contents of the whole Bible. A
 35 notable Treatise hath he compiled, called, .'. *sette Psalmi*

a like] A : om. B. 5 learning B. 7 liued, his B. 17-8 in all his life
 A. 18 time] om. A. 26 to an artlesse A. 29 Newfar. A. Run on in B.

pccenentiarii. All the *Thomasos* haue cause to loue him, because hee hath dilated so magnificently of the lyfe of Saint *Thomas*. There is a good thing that hee hath sette
 F 4 fourth, *La vita della virgine Maria*, \ though it somewhat smell of superstition ; with a number more, which here for 5 tediousnes I suppress. If lasciuious he were, he may answer with *Quid, Vita verecunda est musa iocosa mea est*; My lyfe is chaste though wanton be my verse. Tell mee, who is trauelled in histories, what good poet is, or euer was there, who hath not hadde a lyttle spice of wantonnesse in 10 his dayes ? Euen *Beza* himselfe by your leaue. *Aretine*, as long as the world Hues shalt thou Hue. *Tully, Virgil, Quid, Seneca* were neuer such ornamentes to Italy as thou hast bin. I neuer thought of Italy more religiously than England till I heard of thee. Peace to thy Ghost, 15 and yet me thinkes so indefinite a spirit should haue no peace or intermission of paines, but be penning ditties to the archangels in another world. Puritans, spue forth the venome of your dull inuentions. A toade swells with thicke troubled poison, you swell with poisonous perturbations; 20 your malice hath not a cleere dram of anie inspired disposition.

My principall subiect pluckes me by the elbowe. *Diamante, Castaldos y magnificos* wife, after my enlargement proued to be with child, at which instant there grew 25 an vn-satiabie famine in Venice, wherein, whether it were for meere niggardise, or that *Castaldo* stil eate out his heart with ieaousie, saint *Anne* be our record, he turnd vp the heels verie deuoutly. To master *Aretine* after this, once more verie dutifully I appeald, requested him of fauour, 30 acknowledged former gratuities: he made no more humming or halting, but, in despite of her husbands kinsfolkes, gaue her her *Nunc dimittis*, and so establisht her free of my companie.

8-9 mee who *Q.* 9 is most trauelled *A.* u his]om. *A.* 14 thou-
 hasti? beene *A.* 18-9 Puritans ... inuentioni] *A* : om. *B.* 23-4
 elbowe, *Diamante Q.* 24 *Castaldos B.*

Being out, and fully possest of her husbands goods, she inuested me in the state of a monarch. Because the time of child-birth drew nigh, and she could not remaine in Venice but discredited, shee decreed to trauell whether so
5 euer I would conduct her. To see Italy throughout was my proposed scope, and that waie if she would trauell, haue with her, I had wherewithall to releuee her.

From my master by her ful-hand prouokement I parted without leaue: the state of an Earle he had thrust vpon me
10 before, & now I would not bate him an ace of it. Through all the cities past I by no other name but the yong Earle of Surry; my pomp, my apparel, traine, and expence, was nothing inferior to his, my looks were as loftie, my wordes as magnificall. Memorandum, that Florence being the
15 principall scope of my masters course, missing mee, hee journeyed thether without interruption. By the waie as hee went, hee heard of another Earle of Surry besides himselfe, which caused him make more hast to fetch me in, whom hee little dreamed off had such | arte in my budget, to G i
20 separate the shadow from the bodie. Ouertake me at Florence he did, where, sitting in my pontificalibus with my curtizan at supper, lyke *Anthonie* and *Cleopatra*, when they quafte standing boules of Wine spiced with pearle together, he stole in ere we sent for him, and bad much good it vs,
35 and askt vs whether wee wanted anie gests. If he had askt me whether I would haue hanged my selfe, his question had bin more acceptable. Hee that had then vngartered me might haue pluckt out my heart at my heeles.

My soule which was made to soare vpward, now sought
30 for passage downward; my bloud, as the blushing Sabine maids, surprised on the sodaine by the souldiers of *Romulus*, rannetothe noblest of bloud amongst them for succour, that were in no lesse (if not greater) danger, so did it runne for refuge to the noblest of his bloude about my hart assembled,
35 that stood in more need it selfe of comfort and refuge. A

10 ace] inch A. 15 hee B. 19 of A. 27 beene A. 38 heeles]
hams A. 32 amongst A. 33)] after danger Q.

trembling earthquake or shaking feauer assailed either of vs; and I thinke vnfainedly, if he, seeing our faint heart agonie, had not soone cheered and refreshed vs, the dogs had gone together by the eares vnder the table for our feare-dropped lims. 5

In sted of menacing or afrighting me with his swoorde or his frounes for my superlatiue presumption, he burst out into laughter about Ela, to thinke how brauely napping he had tooke vs, and how notably we were dampt and stroke dead in the neast, with the vnexpected view of his 10 presence.

Ah, quoth he, my noble Lorde, (after his tongue had borrowed a little leaue of his laughter,) is it my lucke to visite you thus vnlookt for? I am sure you will bidde mee welcome, if it bee but for the names sake. It is a wonder to 15 see two English Earles of one house at one time together in Italy. I, hearing him so pleasant, began to gather vp my spirites, and replid as boldly as I durst: Sir, you are welcome, your name which I borrowed I haue not abused; some large summes of monie this my sweet mistres ao *Diamante* hath made me master of, which I knew not how better to imploy for the honor of my country, than by spending it munificently vnder your name. No English-man would I haue renowned for bountie, magnificence, and curtesie but you; vnder your colours all my meritorious workes 35 I was desirous to shroud. Deeme it no insolence to adde increase to your fame. Had I basely and beggarly, wanting abilitie to support anie part of your roialtie, vndertooke the estimation of this high calling, your alleadgement of iniurie had bin the greater, and my defence lesse authorised. It 30 will be thought but a policie of yours thus to send one be- G i^v fore you, who, being a follower | of yours, shall keepe and vpholde the estate and port of an Earle. I haue knowen many Earles my selfe that in their owne persons would go verie plaine, but delighted to haue one that belonged to 35

8 into a laughter A' 9-10 aud stroke B. 14 for, I Q. 17 hearing B.
19 I haue borrowed A. 26-7 Deeme... fame.] A: om. B. 30 ben A.

them (being laden with jewels, apparelled in cloth of golde and al the rich imbroderie that might be) to stand bare headed vnto him ; arguing thus much, that if the greatest men went not more sumptuous, how more great than the
 5 greatest was he that could comand one going so sumptuous. A noble mans glory appeareth in nothing so much as in the pompe of his attendants. What is the glory of the Sunne, but that the Moone and so many millions of starres borrow their lights from him ? If you can reprehend me of
 10 anie one illiberal! licentious action I haue disparaged your name with, heape shame on me prodigally, I beg no pardon or pittie.

Non veniunt in idem pudor & amor, he was loth to detract from one that he loued so. Beholding with his eyes
 15 that I clipte not the wings of his honour, but rather increast them with additions of expence, he intreated me as if I had bin an Embassadour; he gaue mee his hand and swore he had no more heartes but one, and I shoulde haue halfe of it, in that I so inanced his obscured reputation. One thing,
 20 quoth he, my sweet *Iacke*, I will intreate thee, (it shall bee but one,) that though I am well pleased thou shouldest bee the ape of my birthright, (as what noble man hath not his ape & his foole ?) yet that thou be an ape without a clog, not carrie thy curtizan with thee. I tolde him that a king
 35 could doe nothing without his treasurie ; this curtizan was my purs-bearer, my countenance and supporter. My Earle-dome I would sooner resigne than parte with such a specyall benefactor. Resigne it I will how euer, since I am thus challenged of stolne goods by the true owner ; Lo, into my
 30 former state I return agayne ; poore *lack Wilton* and your seruant am I, as I was at the beginning, and BO wil I perseuer to my Hues ending.

That theame was quickly cut off, & other talke entered in place, of what I haue forgot, but talke it was, and talke
 35 let it be, & talke it shall be, for I do not meane here to remember it. Wee supt, we got to bed, rose in the morning,

9 light A. 20 shalbe A. 28 benefactresse A. 36 we rose A.

on my master I waited, & the first thing he did after he was vp, he went and visited the house where his *Geraldine* was borne, at sight whereof hee was so impassioned that in the open street, but for me, he would haue made an oration in prayse of it. Into it we were conducted, and shewed 5
 cache seuerall roome thereto appertaining. O, but when hee came to the chamber where his *Geraldines* cleere Sun-
 G 2 beames first thrust themselues into this | cloud of flesh, and acquainted mortalitie with the purity of Angels, then did his mouth ouerflow with magnificats, his tong thrust the 10
 starres out of heauen, and eclipsed the Sun and Moone with comparisons; *Geraldine* was the soule of heauen, sole daughter and heir to *primus motor*. The alcumie of his eloquence, out of the incomprehensible drossie matter of cloudes and aire, distilled no more quintessence than would 15
 make his *Geraldine* compleat faire. In prayse of the chamber that was so illuminatiuely honored with her radiant conception, he penned this sonet.

Faire roome\ the presence of sweet beauties pride',
The place the Sunne vpon the earth did hold, a0
When Phaeton his chariot did misguide,
The towre where loue rained downe himselfe in golde,
Prostrate, as holy ground He worship thee ;
Our Ladies chappell henceforth be thou namd;
Here first loues Queene put on mortalitie, 25
And with her beautie all the world inflamd.
Heauens chambers harboring fierie cherubines,
Are not with thee in glorie to compare ;
Lightning it is, not light, which in thee shines,
None enter thee but straight intranced are. 30
O, if Elizium be aboue the ground,
Then here it is, where nought but ioy is found.

Many ther poems and epigrams in that chambers patient
 alaVblast, inclosure (which her melting eies long sithence

16 In praise . . .] *New par. A.* 17 illuminatiuely B. 29 Lightning
 ... which] A : Lightning it is no lightning which B.

had softned) were curiously ingraued. Diamonds thought theselues *Dii mundi*, if they might but carue her name on the naked glasse. With the on it did he anatomize these body-wanting mots, *Duke puella malum est. Quod fugit 5 ipse sequor. Amor est mihi causa sequedi. O infoelix ego. Curvidi? curperil? Non patienter amo. Tantupatiatur amari.* After the view of these venereal monuments, he published a proud challenge in the Duke of Florence court against all commers, (whether Christians, Turkes, lewes, or 10 Saracens,) in defence of his *Geraldines* beautie. More mildly was it accepted in that she whom he defended was a towne borne child of that citie, or else the pride of the Italian would haue preuented him ere he should haue come to performe it. The Duke of Florence neuertheless sent 15 for him, and demaunded him of his estate and the reason that drew him thereto, which when hee was aduertised of to the full, hee graunted all Countryes whatsoeuer, as well enemies and outlawes as friends and confederates, | free G 2^v.
 20 that insolent triall were ended.

The right honorable and euer renowned Lord *Henrie Howard*, earle of Surrie, my singular good Lord and master, entered the lists after this order. His armour was all intermixed with lillyes and roses, and the bases thereof 25 bordered with nettles and weeds, signifieng stings, crosses, and ouergrowing incumberances in his loue; his helmet round proportioned lyke a gardners water-pot, from which seemed to issue forth small thrids of water, like citterne strings, that not onely did moisten the lyllyes and roses, 30 but did fructifie as well the nettles and weeds, and made them ouergrow theyr liege Lords. Whereby he did import thus much, that the teares that issued from his braines, as those arteficiall distillations issued from the well counterfeit water-pot on his head, watered and gaue lyfe as well to his 35 mistres disdain (resembled to nettles and weeds) as increase

4 *malum esf A* : *malnest B*.
 Turkes, Canibals, lewes A.

7 venereal] A : generall B. 9
 10)] *om. Q.*

of glorie to her care-causing beauty (comprehended vnder the lillies and roses). The simbole thereto annexed was this, *Ex lacrimis lackrimx*. The trappings of his horse were pounced and bolstered out with rough plumed siluer plush, in full proportion and shape of an Estrich. On the 5 breast of the horse were the fore-parts of this greedie bird aduanced, whence, as his manner is, hee reacht out his long necke to the raines of the bridle, thinking they had bin yron, & styll seemed to gape after the golden bit, and euer as the courser did raise or coruet, to haue swallowed it halfe in. 10 His wings, which he neuer vseth but running, beeing spread full saile, made his lustie stead as proud vnder him as he had bin some other *Pegasus*, & so quiueringly and tenderly were these his broade winges bounde to either side of him, that as he paced vp and downe the tilt-yard in his maiesty 15 ere the knights were entered, they seemed wantonly to fan in his face and make a flickering sound, such as Eagles doe, swiftly pursuing their praie in the ayre. On either of his wings, as the Estrieh hath a sharpe goad or pricke where-with he spurreth himselfe forward in his saile-assisted race, 20 so this arteficiall Estrich, on the inbent knuckle of the pinion of either wing, had embossed christall eyes affixed, wherein wheelewise were circularly ingrafted sharpe pointed diamonds, as rayes from those eyes deriued, that like the rowell of a spur ran deep into his horse sides, and made^{a5} him more eager in his course.

Such a fine dim shine did these christall eies and these round enranked diamonds make through their bolne swelling bowres of feathers as if it had bin a candle in a paper lanterne, G 3 or a gloworme | in a bush by night, glistering through the 30 leaues & briers. The taile of the estrich, being short and thicke, serued verie fitly for a plume to tricke vp his horse taile with, so that euey parte of him was as naturally coapted as might be. The worde to this device **was *Aculeo***

8 beene A. ii spreaded A. 13 beene A. 21 imbent A.
 25 rowels A. 27 *New par. A. Run on in B.* 29 beene A. 32
 for] as A.

alatus, I spread my wings onely spurd with her eyes. The morall of the whole is this, that as the estrich, the most burning sighted bird of all others, insomuch as the female of them hatcheth not her eggs by couering them, but by the
 5 effectual rayes of her eyes, as he, I say, outstrippeth the nimblest trippers of his feathered condition in footmanship, onely spurd on with the needle quickning goad vnder his side, so he, no lesse burning sighted than the estrich, spurde on to the race of honor by the sweet rayes of his mistres
 10 eyes, perswaded himsele he should outstrip all other in running to the goale of glorie, onely animated and incited by hir excellence. And as the estrich will eate yron, swallow anie hard mettall whatsoeuer, so woulde he refuse no iron aduventure, no hard taske whatsoeuer, to sit in the grace of
 15 so fayre a commander. The order of his shielde was this : it was framed lyke a burning glasse, beset rounde with flame coloured feathers, on the outside whereof was his mistres picture adorned as beautifull as arte could portrature ; on the inside a naked sword tyed in a true loue knot; the
 20 mot, *Militat omnis amans*. Signifieng that in a true loue knot his sword was tied to defend and maintaine the features of his mistres.

Next him entered the blacke knight, whose beuer was pointed all torne & bloudie, as though he had new come
 25 from combatting with a Beare; his head piece seemed to bee a little ouen fraught full with smothering flames, for nothing but sulphur and smoake voided out at the clefts of his beuer. His bases were all imbrodred with snakes and adders, ingendered of the aboundaunce of innocent bloud
 30 that was shed. His horses trappinges were throughout bespangled with hunnie spottes, which are no blemishes, but ornaments. On his shield hee bare the Sunne full shining on a diall at his going downe; the word, *sufficit tandem*.

35 After him followed the knight of the Owle, whose armor

6 in] A : and B.
 knot] A : knit B.

13 iron] A : *cm.* B.
 21'2 the high features A.

14 whatsoener B.

19

was a stubd tree ouergrowne with iuie, his helmet fashioned lyke an owle sitting on the top of this iuie; on his bases were wrought all kinde of birdes, as on the grounde, wondering about him; the word, *Ideo mirum quia monstrum*: his horses furniture was framed like a carte, scattering 5 whole sheaues of corne amongst hogs; the word, *Liberalitas liber ali tate per it*. On his shield a Bee intangled in sheepes G 3^v wool; | the mot, *Frontis nulla fides*. The fourth that succeeded was a wel proportioned knight in an armor imitating rust, whose head peece was prefigured lyke 10 flowers growing in a narrowe pot, where they had not anie space to spread their roots or disperse their flourishing. His bases embelisht with open armed hands scatring gold amongst trunchions; the word, *Cur a futuri est*. His horse was harnessed with leaden chaines, hauing the out-side 15 guilt, or at least saffrond in sted of gilt, to decypher a holy or golden pretence of a couetous purpose; the sentence, *Cani capilli mei compedes*: on his target he had a number of crawling wormes kept vnder by a blocke; the faburthen, *Speramus lucent*. The fift was the forsaken knight, whose ao helmet was crowned with nothing but cipresse and willow garlandes: ouer his armour he had *Himens* nuptiall robe, died in a duskie yelowe, and all to be defaced and discoloured with spots and staines. The enigma, *Nos quoque florimus*, as who should say, we haue bin in fashion: 25 his sted was adorned with orange tawnie eies, such as those haue that haue the yellow iandies, that make all things yellow they looke vpon, with this briefe, *Qui inuident egent* those that enuy are hungry. The sixt was the knight of the stormes, whose helmet was rounde molded 30 lyke the moone, and all his armor like waues, whereon the shine of the moone, slightly siluerd, perfectly represented moone-shine in the water; his bases were the bankes or shores that bounded in the streames. The spoke was this,

13 scattering golde A : scatring like gold B. 15 hamished A. 22
 had on *Himens* nuptiall robe A : had *Hiems* nuptiall robe B. 23 *Qy.*
 read all to defaced ? 27 makes *Gro.* 32 sleightly A.

Frustra plus, as much to saye as fruitlesse seruice. On his shield hee set fourth a lion driuen from his praie by a dunghill cock. The word, *Non vi sed voce*, not by violence but by voyce.

5 The seuenth had, lyke the giants that sought to scale heauen in despite of *Iupiter*, a mount ouerwhelming his head and whole bodie; his bases out-laid with armes and legges which the skirtes of that mountaine left vncouered. Vnder this did he characterise a man desirous to climbe to
 10 the heauen of honour, kept vnder with the mountaine of his princes command, and yet had he armes and legs exempted from the suppression of that mountain. The word, *Tu mihi criminis auctor* (alluding to his Princes command), thou art the occasion of my imputed cowardise. His horse
 15 was trapt in the earthie strings of tree rootes, which though theyr increase was stubbed downe to the ground, yet were they not vtterly deaded, but hoped for an after resurrection. The worde, *Spe alor*, I hope for a spring. Vpon his shield he bare a ball, striken downe with a mans hand that it
 20 might mount. The worde, *Ferior vt efferar*, I suffer my selfe to be contemned because I will climbe. The eight had all his | armor throughout engrailed like a crabbed G 4
 brierie hawthorne bush, out of which notwithstanding sprong (as a good child of an il father) fragrant blossomes
 25 of delightfull may flowers, that made (according to the nature of may) a most odoriferous smell. In midst of this his snowie curled top, round wrapped together, on the ascending of his creast sate a solitarie nightingale close engaged, with a thorne at her breast, hauing this mot in
 30 her mouth, *Luctus monumenta manebunt*. At the foot of this bush represented on his bases, laye a number of blacke swolne Toads gasping for winde, and Summer liude grasshoppers gaping after deaw, both which were choakt with excessiue drouth for want of shade. The worde, *Non sine*

4 by his voice A. 5 *New par. A. Run on in B.* 7 bodie. His *Q.*
 8-9 vncouered, vnder B. 21 eighth., 22 armour c.w. 24 sprung A.
 26 midst A. 34 drouth, and for A.

vulnere viresco, I spring not without impedimentes, alluding to the Toads and such lyke, that earst lay sucking at his rootes, but nowe were turnd out, and neere choakt with drought His horse was suted in blacke sandy earth (as adjacent to this bush) which was here and there patched 5 with short burnt grasse, and as thicke inke-dropped with toiling ants and emets as euer it might crall, who, in the full of the summer moone (ruddie garnished on his horses forehead), hoorded vp theyr prouision of graine against winter. The worde, *Victrixfortunx sapientia*, prouidence 10 preuents misfortune. On his shield he set foorth the picture of death doing almes deeds to a number of poore desolate children. The word, *Nemo alius explicat*. No other man takes pittie vpon vs. What his meaning was herein I cannot imagine, except death had done him and 15 his brethren some great good turne in ridding the of some vntoward parent or kinsman that would haue beene their confusion; for else I cannot see howe death shoulde haue bin sayd to doe almes deedes, except hee had deprived them sodainly of their Hues, to deliuer them out of some a0 further miserie; which could not in anie wise be, because they were yet lyuing.

The ninth was the infant knight, who on his armour hadde ennameld a poore young infant put into a shippe without tackling, masts, furniture, or anie thing. This 25 weather-beaten or ill apparelled ship was shadowed on his bases, and the slender compasse of his bodie set forth the right picture of an infant. The waues wherein the ship was tossed were fretted on his steads trappings so mouingly, that euer as he offered to bound or stir, they 30 seemed to bounse and tosse, and sparkle brine out of their hoarie siluer billowes; the mot, *Inopem me copia fecit*, as much to saye as the rich pray makes the theefe. |

G 4v On his shield he expressed an olde goate that made

6 inke dropped Q. 19 beene A.
26 or] and A. 29 fretted] A : fettered B.
34 *New par.* A. *New par. but not set in.* B.

21 bee because A : be cause B.
32 billowes. Their mot A.

a yong tree to wither onely with biting it; the word thereto. *Prime extinguo in æiio*. I am frost-bitten ere I come out of the blade.

It were here too tedious to manifest all the discontented
5 or amorous deuises that were vsed in this turnament: the
shields onely of some fewe I wyl touch, to make short
worke. One bare for his impresse the eyes of yong
swallowes comming againe after they were pluckt out,
with this mot, *Et addit et addimit*, your beautie both
10 bereaues and restores my sight. Another, a syren smiling
when the sea rageth and ships are ouerwhelmed, including
a cruell woman, that laughs, sings, and scornes at her
louers teares and the tempestes of his despayre; the word,
Cuncta peretmt, all my labor is ill imploide. A third,
15 being troubled with a curst, a trecherous, and wanton wife,
vsed this similitude. On his shield he caused to be limmed
Pompeies ordinance for paracides, as namely, a man put
into a sacke with a cocke, a serpent, and an ape, interpret-
ing that his wife was a cocke for her crowing, a serpent for
20 her stinging, and an ape for her vnconstant wantonnes,
with which ill qualities he was so beset, that therby he was
throwen into a sea of grieffe; the word *Extremum malorttm
mulier* the vtmost of euils is a woman, A fourth, who,
being a person of suspected religion, was continually
25 haunted with intellygencers and spies that thought to prae
vpon him for that he had, he could not deuise which waie
to shake them off but by making away that he had. To
obscure this, he vsed no other fansie but a number of
blinde flyes, whose eyes the colde had closed; the word,
30 *Aurum reddit acutissimum*, Gold is the onely phisicke for
the eie-sight. A fifth, whose mistres was fallen into a
consumption and yet woulde condescend to no treatie of
loue, emblazoned for his complaint grapes that withered for
want of pressing. The dittie to the mot, *Quid regna sine*

i it. The A : it, the B. 5 this] that A. turaament. The A.
13 aud scomes B. 13 of of B. 15 wanton wanton A. 21 qualities
shee was Gro' 29 closed] A : inclosed B. 30 Gold] God A.

vsu. I wil rehearse no more, but I haue an hundred other :
 let this bee the vpsshot of those shewes, they were the
 admirablest that euer Florence yelded. To particularize
 their manner of encounter were to describe the whole art
 of tilting. Some had like to haue fallen ouer their horse 5
 neckes and so breake theyr neckes in breaking theyr staues.
 Others ranne at a buckle in sted of a button, and perad-
 uenture whetted theyr speares pointes, idley gliding on
 theyr enemies sides, but did no other harme. Others ranne
 a crosse at their aduersaryes left elbow, yea, and by your 10
 leaue sometimes let not the lists scape scot-free, they were
 so eager. Others, because they woulde be sure not to be
 Hi i vnsaddled with the shocke, when they came to the | speares
 vtmost profe, they threwe it ouer the right shoulder, and
 so tilted backward, for forward they durst not. Another 15
 had a monstrous spite at the pommel of his riuals saddle,
 and thought to haue thrust his speare twixt his legs without
 rasing anie skin, and carried him clean awaie on it as a
 coolestaffe. Another held his speare to his nose, or his
 nose to his speare, as though he had bin discharging his 20
 caliuer, and ranne at the right foote of his fellowes stead.
 Onely the Earle of Surrie, my master, obserued the true
 measures of honour, and made all his encounterers new
 scoure their armor in the dust: so great was his glory
 that day as *Geraldine* was therby eternally glorifid. Neuer 25
 such a bountifull master came amongst the heralds, (not that
 he did inrich them with anie plentifull purse largesse, but
 that by his sterne assaults he tithed them more rich offals
 of bases, of helmets, of armor, than the rent of their offices
 came to in ten yeres before.) 30

What would you haue more? the trumpets proclaimed
 him master of the field, the trumpets proclaimed *Geraldine*
 the exceptionlesse fayrest of women. Euerie one striued
 to magnifie him more than other. The Duke of Florence,

2 those] these (?) A, *Gro.*, *Gosse.* 5-6 their horse neck A. ii some-
 ties B. 20 ben A. his] a A. 22 obsmed B. 24 dust. So A.
 30)] after largesse in l. 27. Q. 33-4 Euerie one . . . other.] A : om. B.

whose name (as my memorie serueth me) was *Paschal de Medicis*, offered him such large proffers to stay with him as it were incredible to report. He would not; his desire was, as he had done in Florence, so to proceed throughout
 5 all the chiefe cities in Italy. If you aske why hee began not this at Venice first; it was because he would let Florence, his mistres natiue citie, haue the maidenhead of his chiuallrie. As he came backe agayne he thought to haue enacted some thing there worthie the Annals of
 10 posteritie, but he was debarred both of that and all his other determinations; for, continuing in feasting and banketting with the Duke of Florence and the Princes of Italy there assembled, post-hast letters came to him from the king his master, to returne as speedily as he could possible into
 15 *England*; wherby his fame was quit cut off by the shins, and there was no repriue but *Bazelus manus*, hee must into England; and I with my curtizan trauelled forward in Italy.

What aduentures happened him after we parted, I am
 20 ignorant, but Florence we both forsooke, and I, hauing a wonderfull ardent inclination to see Rome, the Queen of the world & metropolitane mistres of all other cities, made thether with my bag and baggage as fast as I could.

Attained thether, I was lodged at the house of one
 25 *Iohannes de Imola*, a Roman caualiero. Who, being acquainted with my curtisans deceased doting husband, for his sake vsd vs with all the famili-|aritie that might be. H i^v.
 He shewed vs all the monumentes that were to bee seene, which are as manye as there haue beene Emperours, Con-
 30 sulles, Oratours, Conquerours, famous painters or plaiers in *Rome*. Tyll this daie not a Romane (if he be a right Romane indeed) will kill a rat, but he will haue some registred remembraunce of it.

There was a poore fellowe during my remainder there,

3 were] A : was B. vncredible A. 6 not] A : om. B.
 first. It Q. 10 of] A : on B. 19 *New par.* A. *Run on in B.*
 27-8 be, he B. 34 *Run on in A.*

that, for a newe tricke that hee had inuented of killing *Cymeses* and scorpions, had his mountebanke banner hung vp on a high piller, with an inscription about it longer than the king of Spaines stile. I thought these *Cymesses*, lyke the Cimbrians, hadde beene some straunge Nation 5 hee hadde brought vnder, and they were no more but thinges lyke lice, which aliuie haue the most venimous sting that maye bee, and beeing dead doe stinke out of measure; Saint Austen eompareth heretikes vnto them. The chiefest thing that my eyes delighted in, was the church 10 of the seuen *Sibels*, which is a most miraculous thing; all their prophesies and oracles being there inrolde, as also the beginning and ending of theyr whole catalogue of the heathen Gods, with theyr manner of worship. There are a number of other shrines and statues dedicated to the 15 Emperours, and withall some statues of idolatrie reserued for detestation.

I was at *Pontius Pilates* house and pist against it. The name of the place I remember not, but it is as one goes to Saint Paules Church not farre from the iemmes *Piazza*. 20 There is the prison yet packt vp together (an olde rotten thing) wher the man that was condemned to death, and coulde haue no bodie come to him and succour him but was searcht, was kepte aliuie a long space by sucking his daughters breasts. 35

These are but the shoppe dust of the sights that I sawe, and in truth I did not beholde with anie care hereafter to report, but contented my eie for the present, & so let them passe: should I memorize halfe the miracles which they there tolde mee had beene done about martyrs tombes, or 30 the operations of the earth of the sepulchre and other relikes brought from Ierusalem, I shoulde bee counted the most monstrous Iyer that euer came in print. The ruines of

I trick he A. 2 scorpions B. mountebank A. 7 like sheepe-lice A. most venimous] venomost A. ii seuen] 7. A. thing. All Q. 15 statues also dedicated A. the] their A. 18 *Run on in A.* 18-20 The name . . . *Piazza.*] *cm.* A. 26 *New par. A.* *Run on in B.* 32-3 the monstrous Q: the [most] monstrous *Gro'* 33 The ruines . . .] *New par. A.*

Pompeies theater, reputed one of the nine wonders of the world, *Gregory's* sixth tombe, *Priscillas* grate, or the thousands of pillars rered amongst the rased foundations of olde Rome, it were friuolous to specific, since he that hath
5 but once dronke with a traeller talks of them. Let me be a historiographer of my owne misfortunes, and not H 2
meddle with the continued Trophees of so olde a triumphing Citie.

At my first comming to Rome, I, being a youth of the
10 English cut, ware my haire long, went apparelled in light colours, and imitated foure or fiue sundry nations in my attire at once; which no sooner was noted, but I had all the boies of the citie in a swarme wondering about me.

I hadde not gone a little farther, but certaine officers
15 croste the waie of mee, and demaunded to see my rapier: which when they found (as also my dagger) with his point vnblunted, they wold haue halde me headlong to the Strapado, but that with money I appeased them: and my fault was more pardonable in that I was a stranger, altogether
20 ignorant of their customes.

Note, by the waye, that it is the vse in *Rome* for all men whatsoever to weare their haire short: which they doe not so much for conscience sake, or any religion they place in it, but because the extremitie of the heate is such there
25 that, if they should not doe so, they should not haue a haire left on their heads to stand vpright when they were scard with sprights. And hee is counted no Gentleman amongst them that goes not in blacke: they dresse their iesters and fooles only in fresh colours, and saie variable
30 garments doe argue vnstaiednes and vnconstancie of affections.

The reason of their straight ordinaunce for carrying weapons without points is this: The Bandettos, which are certayne outlawes that lie betwixt *Rome* and *Naples*, and

2 *Gregori B.* y (?) *B.* 4 were heere friuolous *A.* 5 drunke *A.*
14 *Run on in A.* 15 *damauntid B.* 21 *New par. A.* *Run on in B.*
28 amongst *A.* 33 this. The *A.*

besiege the passage, that none can trauell that waie without robbing. Nowe and then, hired for some few crownes, they will steale to *Rome* and do a murther, and betake them to their heeles againe. Disguised as they goe, they are not knowen from strangers; sometimes they will 5 shroude themselues vnder the habite of graue citizens. In this consideration, neither citizen or stranger, gentleman, knight, marques, or anie may weare anie weapon endamageable vpon paine of the Strappado. I bought it out; let others buy experience of mee better cheape. 10

To tell you of the rare pleasures of their gardens, they bathes, theyr vineyardes, theyr galleries, were to write a seconde part of the gorgeous Gallerie of gallant deuices. Why, you should not come into anie mannes house of account, but hee hadde fish-pondes and little orchardes on 15 the toppe of his leads. If by raine or any other meanes
 H 2' those ponds were so full they need to be slust or | let out, euen of their superfluities they made melodious vse, for they had great winde instruments in stead of leaden spoutes, that went duly on consort, onely with this waters 20 rumbling discent. I sawe a summer banketting house belonging to a merchaunt, that was the meruaile of the world, & could not be matcht except God should make another paradise. It was builte round of greene marble like a Theater with-out: within there was a heauen and 25 earth comprehended both vnder one roofe; the heauen was a cleere ouerhanging vault of christall, wherein the Sunne and Moone and each visible Starre had his true similitude, shine, scituation, and motion, and, by what enwrapped arte I cannot conceiue, these sphaeres in their proper orbes 30 obserued their circular wheelinges and turnings, making a certaine kinde of soft angelical murmuring musicke in their often windings & going about; which musick the philosophers say in the true heauen, by reason of the grosenes

2 robbing: Now A. 5 knnwen B. 7 citizen nor stranger A.
 16 his] A : theyr B. 18 superflinities B. 19 leaden] A : laden B.
 20 on] in A. 22 marchant A. 29 scituaton B.

of our senses, we are not capable of. For the earth, it was counterfeited in that liknes that Adam lorded out it before his fall. A wide vast spacious roome it was, such as we would conceit prince Arthurs hall to be, where he feasted
 5 all his knights of the round table together euerie pentecost, The flore was painted with the beautifullest flouers that euer mans eie admired; which so linealy were delineated that he that viewd them a farre off, and had not directly stood poarily ouer them, would haue sworne they had
 10 liued in deede. The wals round about were hedgde with Oliucs and palme trees, and all other odoriferous fruit-bearing plants; which at anie solemne intertainment dropt mirrhe and frankensence. Other trees, that bare no fruit, were set in iust order one against another, & diuided the
 15 roome into a number of shadie lanes, leauing but one ouerspreading pine tree arbor, where wee sate and banketted. On the wel clothed boughs of this conspiracie of pjne trees against the resembled Sun beames, were pearcht as many sortes of shrill breasted birdes as the Summer hath allowed
 20 for singing men in hir siluane chappels. Who though there were bodies without soules, and sweete resembled substances without sense, yet by the mathematicall experimentes Of long siluer pipes secretlye inrinded in the intrailles of the boughs whereon they sate, and vndiscerneable conuaict
 25 vnder their bellies into their small throats sloaping, they whistled and freely carold theyr naturall field note. Neyther went those siluer pipes straight, but, by many edged vnsundred writhings & crankled wanderings a side, strayed from bough to bough into an hundred throats. But into
 30 this siluer pipe so writhed and wandering aside, if anie demand how the wind was breathed; Forsoth \hat{y} tail of the H 3 siluer pipe stretcht it selfe into the mouth of a great paire of belowes, where it was close soldered, and bailde about with yron, it coulede not stirre or haue anie vent betwixt.

2 out it] it out *Gro.*: *Qy.* read ouer it? 15-6" ouer spreading *B.* 20
 there] they *Gro.* 31 breathed. Forsoth *Q.* 33 a bout *B.* 34
 yron, [that] it *Gro.*

Those bellows with the rising and falling of leaden plummetts wounde vp on a wheele, dyd beate vp and downe vncessantly, and so gathered in wind, seruing with one blast all the snarled pipes to and fro of one tree at once. But so closely were all those organizing implements obscured in the corpulent trunks of the trees, that euerie man there present renounst coniectures of art, and sayd it was done by inchantment.

One tree for his fruit bare nothing but in chained chirping birdes, whose throates beeing conduit pipt with squared narrow shels, & charged siring-wise with searching sweet water driuen in by a little wheele for the nonce, that fed it a farre of, made a spirting sound, such as chirping is, in bubbling vpwards through the rough crannies of their closed bills. 15

Vnder tuition of the shade of euerie tree that I haue signified to be in this round hedge, on delightful leuie cloisters, lay a wyld tyranous beast asleepe all prostrate; vnder some, two together, as the Dogge nusling his nose vnder the necke of the Deare, the Wolfe glad to let the Larnbe lye vpon hym to keepe him warme, the Lyon suffering the Asse to cast hys legge ouer him, preferring one honest vnmanly friende before a number of crouch-Ing picke-thanks. No poysonous beast there reposed, (poyson was not before our parent *Adam* transgressed.) 25 There were no sweete-breathing Panthers that would hyde their terrifying heads to betray; no men-imitating *Hyanaes* that chaunged their sexe to seeke after bloud. Wolues as now when they are hungrie eate earth, so then did they feed on earth only, and abstained from innocent flesh. The Vnicorne did not put his horne into the streame to chase away venome before hee dronke, for then there was no suche thing extant in the water or on the earth. Serpents were as harmlesse to mankinde as they are still one to another: the rose had no cankers, the leues no caterpillers, 35

9 chirping A. 16 *New par.* A. *Run on in B.* 27 men imitating Q.
32 dmnke A. then] *om.* A. 33 thing as venome extant A.

the sea no *Syrens*, the earth no vsurers. Goats then bare wooll, as it is recorded in *Sicily* they doo yet. The torride Zone was habitable : only layes loued to steale gold and siluer to build their nests withall, and none cared for 5 couetous clientrie, or runing to the Indies. As the Elephant vnderstands his countrey speach, so euerie beast vnderstood what man spoke. The ant did not hoord vp against winter, for there was no winter, but a perpetuall spring, as *Ouid* sayth. No frosts to make the greene almond tree coun-|ted H 3^v
 10 rash and improuident, in budding soonest of all other; or the mulberie tree a strange polititian, in blooming late and ripening early. The peach tree at the first planting was fruitfull and wholesome, whereas now, till it be transplanted, it is poisonous and hatefull: young plants for their sap had
 15 balme, for their yeolow gumme glistering amber. The euening deawd not water on flowers, but honnie. Such a golden age, such a good age, such an honest age was set forth in this banketting house.

O *Rome*, if thou hast in thee such soul-exalting objects,
 20 what a thing is heauen in comparison of thee, of which *Mercators* globe is a perfecter modell than thou art? Yet this I must saie to the shame of vs protestants; if good workes may merite heauen, they doe them, we talke of them. Whether supersticion or no makes them vnprofitable
 25 seruants, that let pulpits decide; but there you shall haue the brauest ladies, in gownes of beaten golde, washing pilgrimes & poore souldiers feete, and doing nothing, they and their waiting maides, all the yeare long, but making shirts and bands for them against they come by in distresse.
 30 Their hospitals are more lyke noble mens houses than otherwise; so richly furnished, cleane kept, and hot perfumed, that a souldier would thinke it a sufficient recompence for all his trauell and his wounds, to haue such a heauenly retyring place. For the pope and his pontificalibus I will not deale

7 man] men A. 14 had] A : and B. 19 *New par.* A. *Run on*
inB. soul exalting B. 20 thee? Of, B 21 art: yet B. 33
 all] om. A.

with; onely I will dilate vnto you what happened whilist I was in *Rome*.

So it fel out that it being a vehement hot summer when I was a sojourner there, there entered such a hotspurd plague as hath not bin heard of: why, it was but a word 5 and a blowe, Lord haue mercie vpon vs, and he was gone. Within three quarters of a yeere in that one citie there died of it a hundred thousand; looke in *Lanquets* chronicle and you shall finde it To smell of a nosegay that was poisond, and turne your nose to a house that had the plague, it was 10 all one. The clouds, like a number of cormorants that keepe their corne til it stinke and is mustie, kept in their stinking exhalations, till they had almost stifeled all *Romes* inhabitants. Phisitions greedines of golde made them greedie of their destinie. They would come to visit those 15 with whose infirmitie their art had no affinitie; and euen as a man with a fee should be hired to hang himselfe, so would they quietly go home and die presently after they had bin with their patients. All daye and all night long carre-men did nothing but go vp and downe the streets ao with their carts and cry, Haue you anie dead bodies to bury? and had many times out of one house their whole Hooding: one | graue was the sepulchre of seuen score, one bed was the alter wheron whole families were offered.

The wals wer hoard and furd with the moist scorching 25 steame of their desolation. Euen as before a gun is shot off, a stinking smoake funnels out and prepares the way for him, so before any gaue vp the ghost, death araid in a stinking smook stopt his nostrrels and cramd it selfe ful into his mouth that closed vp his fellows eyes, to giue him 30 warning to prepare for his funeral. Some dide sitting at their meat, others as they were asking counsell of the phisition for theyr friends. I sawe at the house where I

i whiles A. 5 been A. 16 infirmities A 19 been A. 21-2
 Haue... bury?] Haue you anie dead to burie, haue you anie dead to burie : A.
 22 bury and B. 23 graue, c.w. 25 *New par. but not set in. A. Run*
on in B' Gro. 29 selfe] A : om. B.

was hosted a maide bring her master warme broth for to comfort him, and shee sinke downe dead her selfe ere he had halfe eate it vp.

During this time of visitation, there was a Spaniard, one
 5 *Esdras* of *Granado*, a notable Bandetto, authorised by the
 pope because he had assisted him in some murthers. This
 villain, colleagued with one *Bartol*, a desperate Italian,
 practised to breake into those riche mens houses in the
 night where the plague had most rained, and if there were
 10 none but the mistres and maide left aliuie, to rauish them
 both, & bring awaie all the wealth they could fasten on.
 In an hundred chiefe citizens houses where the hand of God
 had bene, they put this outrage in vre. Though the women
 so rauished cride out, none durst come neere them, for feare
 15 of catching their deaths by them, and some thought they
 cried out onely with the tyrannic of the maladie. Amongst
 the rest, the house where I lay he inuaded, where al being
 snatcht vp by sicknes but the good wife of the house, a
 noble & chast matrone called *Heraclide*, and her zanie, and
 20 I and my curtizan, hee, knocking at the doore late in the
 night, ranne in to the matrone, and left me and my loue to
 the mercie of his companion. Who finding me in bed (as
 the time requird) ranne at me ful with his rapier, thinking
 I would resist him, but, as good luck was, I escapt him and
 25 betooke me to my pistoll in the window vncharged. He,
 fearing it had beene charged, threatned to runne her through
 if I once offered but to aime at him. Foorth the chamber
 hee dragde her, holding his rapier at her heart, whilst
 I cride out, Saue her, kill me, and He ransome her with a
 30 thousande duckets: but lust preuailed, no prayers woulde
 be heard. Into my chamber I was lockte, and watchmen
 charged (as hee made semblaunce when there was none
 there) to knocke mee downe with theyr halberdes if I stirde
 but a foote downe the stayres. Then threw I my selfe pen-

6 had] *om. A.* 7 villain colleagued *Q.* 12 an] a *A.* 13 bin *A.*
 18 by the sicknesse *A.* 10 *Zanie A.* 29 I stil crid *A.* 32 charged]
A: om. B. 34 Then] So *A: Then B.*

siue againe on my pallate, and darde all the deuiles in hell,
 nowe I was alone, to come and fight with mee one after
 H 4^V another in defence of that detestable rape. I | beat my head
 against the wals & cald them bauds, because they would
 see such a wrong committed, and not fall vppon him. To 5
 returne to *Heraclide* below, whom the vgliest of all bloud
 suckers, *Esdras* of *Granada*, had vnder shrift. First he
 assayled her with rough meanes, and slue hir *Zanie* at hir
 foote, that stept before hir in rescue. Then when all armed
 resist was put to flight, he assaied her with honie speech, & 10
 promised her more iewells and giftes than hee was able to
 pilfer in an hundred yeres after. He discourst vnto her how
 he was countenanced and borne out by the pope, and how
 many execrable murthers with impunitie he had executed
 on them that displeasde him. This is the eight score house 15
 (quoth he) that hath done homage vnto me, & here I will
 preuaile, or I will bee torne in pieces. Ah, quoth *Heraclide*
 (with a hart renting sigh), art thou ordaind to be a worse
 plague to me than ȳ plague it selfe? Haue I escapt
 the hands of God to fal into ȳ hands of man? Heare me, 20
lehouahy & be merciful in ending my miserie. Dispatch
 me incontinent, dissolute homicide, deaths vsurper. Here
 lies my husband stone colde on the dewie floore. If thou
 beest of more power than God to strike me speedily, strike
 home, strike deepe, send me to heauen with my husband. 35
 Aie me, it is the spoil of my honor thou seekest in my
 soules troubled departure; thou art some deuill sent to
 tempt me. Auoid from me, sathan, my soule is my sauours ;
 to him I haue bequeathed it, from him can no man take it.
 lesu, lesu, spare mee vndefiled for thy spouse; lesu, lesu, 30
 neuer faile those that put their trust in thee. With that
 she fell in a sowne, and her eies in their closing seemed to
 spaune forth in their outward sharpe corners new created
 seed pearle, which the world before neuer set eie on. Soone
 he rigorously reuiued her, & tolde her ȳ he had a charter 35

aboute scripture; she must yeld, she should yeld, see who
 durst remoue her out of his hands. Twixt life and death
 thus she faintly replied. How thinkest thou, is there a
 power aboute thy power? if there be, he is here present in
 5 punishment, and on thee will take present punishment if
 thou persistest in thy enterprise. In the time of securitie
 euerie man sinneth, but when death substitutes one
 frend his special baily to arrest another by infection,
 and disparseth his quiuer into ten thousande hands at
 10 once, who is it but lookes about him? A man that
 hath an vneuitable huge stone hanging only by a haire
 ouer his head, which he lokes, euerie Pater noster while,
 to fall and pash him in peeces, will not he be submis-
 siuely sorrowfull for his trans-gressions, refraine himselfe
 15 from the least thought of folly, and purifie his spirit with
 contrition and penitence? Gods hand like a huge stone
 hangs ineui-|tably ouer thy head: what is the plague but 11
 death playing the Prouost Marshall, to execute all those
 that will not be called home by anie other meanes? This
 20 my dere knights bodie is a quiuer of his arrowes, which
 alreadie are shot into thee inuisibly. Euen as the age of
 goats is knowen by the knots on their homes, so thinke the
 anger of God apparantly visioned or showne vnto thee in
 the knitting of my browes. A hundred haue I buried out
 25 of my house, at all whose departures I haue been present:
 a hundreds infection is mixed with my breath: loe, now
 I breath vpon thee, a hundred deaths come vppon thee.
 Repent betimes, imagine there is a hell though not a heauen:
 that hell thy conscience is throughly acquainted with, if
 30 thou hast murdred half so manie as thou vnblushingly
 braggest. As *Meccenas* in the latter end of his daies was
 seuen yeres without sleepe, so these seuen weeks haue I
 tooke no slumber, my eyes haue kept continuall watch
 against the diuell, my enemie: death I deemed my frend
 35 (frends flye from vs in aduersitie), death, the diuell, and all
 the ministring spirits of temptation are watching about
 i she should yeld,] A : om. B. 21 inuisible A. 24 the] A : om. '?.

thee to intrap thy soule (by my abuse) to eternall damnation. It is thy soule thou maist saue, onely by sauing mine honour. Death will haue thy bodie infallibly for breaking into my house, that he had selected for his priuate habitation. If thou euer camst of a woman, or hopest to be 5
 saued by the seed of a woman, pittie a woman. Deares oppressed with dogges, when they cannot take soyle, run to men for succour: to whom should women in theyr disconsolate and desperate estate run but to Men (like the Deare) for succour and sanctuarie? If thou be a man, thou 10
 wilt succour mee, but if thou be a dog and a brute beast, thou wilt spoile mee, defile mee, and teare me: either renounce Gods image, or renounce the wicked mind thou bearest.

These words might haue mooud a compound hart of 15
 yron and adamant, but in his hart they obtained no impression: for he sitting in his chaire of state against the doore all the while that she pleaded, leaning his ouer-hanging gloomie ey-browes on the pommell of his vnsheathed sword, he neuer lookt vp or gaue hir a word: but when he 20
 perceiued she expected his answer of grace or vtter perdition, he start vp and tooke her currishly by the neck, asking how long he should stay for hir Ladiship. Thou telst me (quoth he) of the plague, & the heauie hand of God, and thy hundred infected breaths in one: I tel thee I 35
 haue cast the dice an hundred times for the gallies in *Spaine*, and yet still mist the ill chance. Our order of casting is this, If there be a Generall or Captaine new come home
 [i^v from the warres, & hath some 4. or 500. | crownes ouer-
 plus of the Kings in his hand, and his soldiers all paid, he 30
 makes proclamation that whatsoever two resolute men will goe to dice for it, and win the bridle or lose the saddle, to such a place let them repaire, and it shall be readie for them. Thither go I, and finde another such needie squire

a thy soule only thou maist saue by A. 6 pittie] spare A. 13
 minde that thou A. 23 asking] and askt her A. 29 foure or fiue
 hundred..

resident. The dice run, I win, he is vndone. I winning
 haue the crownes, hee loosing is carried to the Galleyes.
 This is our custome, which a hundred times and more hath
 paid me custome of crownes, when the poore fellowes haue
 5 gone to *Gehenna* had course bread and whipping chere al
 their life after. Now thinkest thou that I who so oft haue
 escaped such a number of hellish dangers, onely depending
 vpon the turning of a fewe prickes, can bee scare-bugd
 with the plague? what plague canst thou name worse than
 10 I haue had? whether diseases, imprisonment, pouertie,
 banishment, I haue past through them all. My owne
 mother gaue I a boxe of the eare too, and brake her necke
 downe a paire of staires, because she would not goe in to
 a Gentleman when I bad her: my sister I sold to an old
 15 Leno, to make his best of her: anie kinswoman that I
 haue, knew I she were not a whore, my selfe would make
 her one: thou art a whore, thou shalt be a whore, in spite
 of religion or precise ceremonies.

Therewith he flew vpon her, and threatned her with his
 20 sword, but it was not that he meant to wound her with.
 He graspt her by the yuorie throat, and shooke her as a
 mastiffe would shake a yong beare, swearing and staring he
 would tcare out her weasand if shee refused. Not content
 with that sauage constraint, he slipt his sacriligius hand
 25 from her lilly lawne skinned necke, and inscarft it in her long
 siluer lockes, which with strugling were vnrould. Back-
 ward he dragd her, euen as a man backwarde would plucke
 a tree downe by the twigs, and then, like a traitor that is
 drawn to execution on a hurdle, he traileth her vp and
 30 down the chamber by those tender vntwisted braids, and
 setting his barbarous foote on her bare snowy breast, bad
 her yeld or haue her winde stampd out. She cride, Stamp,
 stifle me in my haire, hang me vp by it on a beame, and
 so let me die, rather than I should goe to heauen with a
 35 beame in my eye. No, quoth he, nor stampd, nor stifled,

5 *Gehenna*, had *Q*: *Gehenna*, [and] had *Gro*. 8 vpon] on *A*. 12
 to *A*. 13 into *B'* 32 Stamp] stamp *Q*.

nor hanged, nor to heauen shalt thou go, till I haue had my wil of thee; thy busie armes in these silken fetters He infold. Dismissing her haire from his fingers, and pinnioning her elbowes therewithall, she strugled, she wrested, but all was in vaine. So strugling and so resisting, her iewels did 5 sweate, signifying there was poison coming towards her. On the hard boords he threw her, and vsed his knee as an |
 I 2 yron ramme to beat ope the two leaud gate of her chastitie. Her husbands dead bodie he made a pillow to his abhomin-
 nation. Coniecture the rest, my words sticke fast in the 10 myre and are cleane tyred; would I had neuer vndertooke this tragicall tale. Whatsoever is borne, is borne to haue an end. Thus ends my tale: his whorish lust was glutted, his beastly desire satisfied; what in the house of anie worth his carriageable, he put vp, and went his way. 15

Let not your sorrow die, you that haue read the proeme and narration of this eligiacall historic. Shew you haue quick wits in sharp conceipt of compassion. A woman that hath viewed all her children sacrificed before her eyes, & after the first was slaine, wyped the sword with her apron 20 to prepare it for the cleanly murder of the second, and so on forward till it came to the empierring of the seuinteenth of her loynes, will you not giue her great allowance of anguish? This woman, this matrone, this forsaken *Heraclide*, hauing buried fouртеene children in fiue daies, whose 35 eyes she howlingly closed, & caught manie wrinckles with funerall kisses; besides hauing her husband within a day after laid forth as a comfortles corse, a carrionly blocke, that could neither eate with her, speak with her, nor weepe with her; is she not to bee borne withall though her body 30 swell with a Timpany of teares, thogh her speech be as impatient as vnhappy *Hecubas*, thogh her head raues and her braine doate? Deuise with your selues that you see a corse

8 leavd B. 13 an] om. A. endeth A. tale, his Q. whorish] boorish A. 14 satisfied, what A: satisfied: what B. 17 and] A: of the B.
 22 it] om. A: [it] Gro. come B. 27 kisses: besides, hauing Q.
 31 swells,. 33 Qy. read raue? 33 doates A.

rising from his hieere after he is caried to church, & such another suppose *Heraclide* to be, rising from the couch of enforced adulterie.

Her eies wer dim, her cheeks bloodies, her breath
5 smelt earthy, her countnance was gastly. Vp she rose
after she was deflowred, but loath she arose, as a reprobate
soule rising to the day of iudgement. Looking on the tone
side as she rose, she spide her husbands bodie lying vnder her
head: ah, then she bewailed, as *Cephalus* when he had kild
10 *Procris* vnwittingly, or *Oedipus* when ignorantly he had
slaine his father, & known his mother incestuously: this
was her subdued resons discourse.

Haue I Hud to make my husbands bodie the beere to
Carrie mee to hell? had filthy pleasure no other pillow to
15 leane vpon but his spreaded lims? On thy flesh my fault
shall be imprinted at the day of resurrection. O beautie,
the bait ordained to insnare the irreligious: rich men are
robd for their welth, women are dishonested for being too
fair. No blessing is beautie, but a curse: curst be the
20 time that euer I was begotten; curst be the time that my
Mother brought mee foorth to tempt. The serpent in
paradice did no more; the serpent in paradice (is damned I ^{av}
sempiternally: why should not I hold my selfe damned (if
predestinations opinions be true) that am predestinate to
25 this horrible abuse? The hog dieth presently if helooseth
an eye: with the hog haue I wallowed in the myre, I haue lost
my eye of honestie, it is cleane pluckt out with a strong hand
of vnchastitie: what remaineth but I dye? Die I will,
though life be vnwilling: no recompence is there for me
30 to redeeme my compelled offence, but with a rigorous com-
pelled death. Husband, He bee thy wife in Heauen: let
not thy pure deceased spirit despise me when we meet,
because I am tyranously polluted. The diuell, the belier of
our frailtie, and common accuser of mankinde, cannot accuse
35 mee, though hee would, of vnconstrained submitting. If anie

I rassing B. 10 ignorant-4. n his owne father A. incestuously.
This A. 13 livd B. aa in paradce | is B. 33 deceasing A.

guilt be mine, this is my fault, that I did not deforme my face, ere it should so impiouslie allure. Having passioned thus awhile, she hastily ran and lookt hir selfe in hir glasse, to see if her sin were not written on her forehead: with looking shee blusht, though none lookt vpon her but her 5 owne reflected image.

Then began she againe. *Heu quam difficile est crimen non prode vultu;* How hard is it not to bewray a mans fait by his forehead. My selfe doo but behold my selfe, and yet I blush: then, God beholding me, shall not I be ten 10 times more ashamed? The Angels shall hisse at me, the Saints and Martyrs flye from me: yea, God himselfe shall adde to the diuels damnation, because he suffered such a wicked creature to come before him. *Agamemnon*, thou wert an infidell, yet when thou wentst to the *Troian warre*, 15 thou leftst a musitian at home with thy Wife, who by playing the foote *Spondxus* till thy retourne, might keepe her in chastitie. My husband going to warre with the diuell and his enticements, when hee surrendred, left no musition with me, but mourning and melancholy: had he 20 left anie, *as, Ægistus kild Agamemnons Musitian* ere he could be succesfull, so surely would hee haue been kild ere this *ALgistus* surceased. My distressed heart, as the Hart when as hee looseth his homes is astonied, and sorrowfullie runneth to hide himselfe, so be thou afflicted and distressed; 25 hide thy selfe vnder the Almightyes wings of mercie: sue, plead, intreate; grace is neuer denied to them that aske. It may be denied; I maie be a vessell ordained to dishonor.

The onely repeale we haue from Gods vndefinite chas- 30 tisement is to chastise our selues in this world: and I will; nought but death be my pennance, gracious and acceptable maie it be: my hand and my knife shall manumit mee out I 3 of the horrour of minde I endure. Fare-well, life, that hast lent me nothing but sorrowe. Fare-well, | sinne-sowed flesh, 35 that hast more weedes than flowers, more woes than ioies.

33-4 when he A.

39 Run on in A.

31 and so I will A.

Point, pierce, edge, enwidene, I patiently affoorded thee a sheath : spurre forth my soule to mount poste to heauen. lesu, forgiue me, lesu, receiue me.

So (throughlie stabd) fell she downe, and knockt her head against her husbands bodie : wherewith he, not hauing been aired his ful foure and twentie howres, start as out of a dreame: whiles I, thorough a crannie of my vpper chamber vnseeled, had beheld all this sad spectacle. Awaking, he rubbed his head too and fro, and wyiping his eyes with his Jo hand, began to looke about him. Feeling some thing lie heaue on his breast he turned it off, and getting vpon his legs, lighted a candle.

Here beginneth my purgatorie. For hee, good man, comming into the hall with the candle, and spying his wife with hir haire about hir eares, defiled and massacred, and his simple Zanie *Capestrano* runne through, tooke a halberd in his hand, and running from chamber to chamber to serch who in his house was likelie to doo it, at length found me lying on my bed, the doore lockt to me on the out-side, and my rapier vnsheathed in the window : wherewith he straight coniectured it was I, and calling the neighbours hard by, said I had caused my self to be lockt into my chamber after that sort, sent away my Curtizane whom I called my wife, and made clean my rapier, because I would not be suspected.

Vppon this was I laide in prison, should haue been hanged, was brought to the ladder, had made a Ballad for my Farewell in a readines, called *Wiltons wantonnes*, and yet for all that scapde dauncing in a hempen circle. He that hath gone through many perils and returned safe from them, makes but a merriment to dilate them. I had the knot vnder my eare, there was faire plaie, the hangman had one halter, another about my necke was fastned to the gallowes, the riding deuice was almost thrust home, and his

I Point . . .] *New par. but not set in. A.* 7 through A. 16 thorough A.
 20 in] on A. 21 I. And Q. 23 a way B. 26 *Run on in A.*
 27 ballet A. 33 halter, and another A. necke, which was A.

foote on my shoulder to presse me downe, when I made my saint-like confession as you haue heard before, that such and such men at such an howre brake into the house, slew the Zanie, took my Curtizan, lockt me into my chamber, raiisht *Heraclide*, and finallie how she slew her selfe. 5

Present at the execution was there a banisht English Earle, who hearing that a Countrey-man of his was to suffer for such a notable murder, came to heare his confession, and see if he knew him. He had not heard me tell halfe of that I haue recited but he craued audience, and desired the 10 execution might be staid. |

I 3^v Not two daies since it is, Gentlemen and noble *Romanes*, (said he,) since, going to be let blood in a Barbars shop against the infection, all on sodaine in a great tumult and vproare was there brought in one *Bar'toll*, an *Italian*, gree- 15 uously wounded and bloodie. I, seeming to commiserate his harmes, curteously questiond him with what ill debtors he had met, or how or by what casualtie he came to bee so arraid. O, (quoth he,) long haue I liued sworne brothers in sensualitie with one *Esdras* of *Granada*: fiue hundred rapes 20 and murders haue we committed betwixt vs. When our iniquities were growen to the height, and God had determined to counterchecke our amitie, we came to the house of *Johannes de Imola* (whom this yong Gentleman hath named); there did he iustifie all those rapes in manner and 35 forme as the prisoner here hath confest. But loe, an accident after, which neyther he nor this audience is priuie too. *Esdras* of *Granado*, not content to haue raiisht the Matrone *Heraclide* and robd her, after he had betook him from thence to his heeles, lighted on his companion *Bartol* with his Cur- 30 tizan: whose pleasing face he had scarce winkingly glanst on, but he pickt a quarrell with *Bartoll* to haue her from him. On thys quarrell they fought, *Bartoll* was wounded to the death, *Esdras* fled, and the faire dame left to go

6 *New par. but not set in. A.*
greedusly (*broken d*) *B.*
death *B.*

14 on a suddaine *A.*
19 haue I| I haue *A.*

15
30 light *A.*
34

whether she would. This, *Bartoll* in the *Barbars* shop freely acknowledged, as both the *Barbar* and his man and other here present can amply depose.

Deposed they were ; their oaths went for currant ; I was quit by proclamation : to the banisht Earle I came to render thanks, when thus he examined and schoold me.

Countriman, tell me, what is the occasion of thy straying so farre out of *England* to visit this strange Nation ? If it bee languages, thou maist learne them at home ; nought but lasciuiousnesse is to bee learned here. Perhaps, to be better accounted of than other of thy condition, thou ambitiously vndertakest this voyage : these insolent fancies are but *Icarus* feathers, whose wanton waxe, melted against the Sunne, will betray thee into a sea of confusion.

15 The first traeller was *Cain*, and he was called a vagabond runnagate on the face of the earth. Trauaile (like the trauaile wherein smithes put wilde horses when they shoe them) is good for nothing but to tame and bring men vnder.

God had no greater curse to lay vpon the *Israelites*, than by leading them out of their owne countrey to Hue as slaues in a strange land. That which was their curse, we Englishmen count our chiefe blessednes ; hee is no bodie that hath not traueled : wee had rather line as | slaues in another land, crouch and cap, and be seruile to euerie ielous
25 Italians and proud Spaniards humor, where we may neither speak, looke, nor doo anie thing, but what pleaseth them, than Hue as freemen and Lords in our owne Countrey.

He that is a traeller must haue the backe of an asse to beare all, a tung like the taile of a dog to flatter all, the
30 mouth of a hogge to eat what is set before him, the eare of a merchant to heare all and say nothing : and if this be not the highest step of thraldome, there is no libertie or freedome.

It is but a milde kinde of subiection to be the seruant of
35 one master at once : but when thou hast a thousand thou-

i whither A. 4 Run on in A. 6 examind me and A. 15 Run on in A. 19 Run on in A, 28 Run on in A. 34 Run on in A.

sand masters, as the veriest botcher, tinker, or cobbler freeborne will dominere ouer a forreiner, and thinke to bee his better or master in companie; then shalt thou finde there is no such hell as to leaue thy fathers house (thy naturall habitation) to Hue in the land of bondage. 5

If thou doost but lend half a looke to a *Romans* or *Italians* wife, thy porredge shalbe prepared for thee, and cost thee nothing but thy lyfe. Chance some of them breake a bitter iest on thee, and thou retortst it seuerely, or seemest discontented: goe to thy chamber, and prouide 10 a great banquet, for thou shalt be sure to be visited with guests in a mask the next night, when in kindnes and courtship thy throat shall be cut, and the dooers returne vndiscovered. Nothing so long of memorie as a dog; these *Italians* are old dogs, & will carrie an iniurie a whole age 15 in memorie: I haue heard of a boxe on the eare that hath been reuenged thirtie yeare after. The *Neapolitane* carrieth the bloodiest mind, and is the most secret fleering murderer: whereupon it is growen to a common prouerbe, *lie giue him the Neapolitan shrtig*, when one intends to play 20 the villaine and make no boast of it.

The onely precept that a traoueller hath most vse of, and shall finde most ease in, is that of *Epicharchus*, *Vigila, & memor sis ne quid credas*: Beleeue nothing, trust no man; yet seeme thou as thou swallowedst al, suspectedst none, but 25 wert easie to be gulled by euerie one. *Multi fallere docuerunt* (as *Seneca* saith) *dum timentfalli* Manie by showing their ielous suspect of deceit haue made men seek more subtile meanes to deceiue them.

Alas, our Englishmen are the plainest dealing soules that 30 euer God put life in: they are greedie of newes, and loue to bee fed in their humors and heare themselues flattred the best that may be. Euen as *Philemon*, a Comick Poet, died

3-4 there is] theres A. 6 Run on in A. 7 shall bee A. ii
 banquet A. 13 shalbe A. 18 blouidiest wreakfull minde A.
 18-9 murderer. Whereupon A. 20 intends] meanes A' 21 makes A.
 30 Run on in A.

with extreme laughter at the conceit of seeing an asse eate figs ; so haue the *Italians* no such sport as to see | poore I English asses, how soberlie they swallow Spanish figges, deuoure anie hooke baited for them. He is not fit to trauell, 5 that cannot, with the *Candians*, Hue on serpents, make nourishing food euen of poison. Rats and mice ingender by licking one another ; he must licke, he must crouch, he must cog, lye, and prate, that either in the Court or a forren Countrey will ingender and come to preferment. Be 10 his feature what it will, if he be faire spoken he winneth frends: *Non formosus erat, sed erat facundus Vlysses* : *Vlysses*, the long Traueller, was not amiable, but eloquent. Some alledge they trauell to learne wit, but I am of this opinion, that as it is not possible for anie man to learne 15 the Art of Memorie, whereof *Tully*, *Quintillian*, *Seneca*, and *Hermannus Buschius* haue written so manie Bookes, except hee haue a naturall memorie before: so is it not possible for anie man to attain anie great wit by trauell, except he haue the grounds of it rooted in him before. 20 That wit which is thereby to be perfected or made staid, is nothing but *Experientia longa malorum*, the experience of manie euils : The experience that such a man lost his life by this folly, another by that : such a yong Gallant consumed his substaunce on such a Curtizan : these courses of 25 reuenge a Merchant of *Venice* tooke against a Merchant of *Ferrara*; and this poynt of iustice was shewed by the Duke vpon the murtherer. What is here but we may read in bookes, and a great deale more too, without stirring our feete out of a warme Studie ?

30 *Vobis alii ventorum praelia narrent, (saith Ouid,)*
Quasque Scilla infestat, qtlasue Charybdis aquas.
 Let others tell you wonders of the winde,
 How *Scilla* or *Charybdis* is inclinde.
 -vos quod quisque loquetur

35 *Credite.* Beleeue you what they say, but neuer trie.

So let others tell you strange accidents, treasons, poysonings, close packings in *France*, *Spaine*, and *Italy*, it is no harme for you to heare of them, but come not nere them.

What is there in *Fraunce* to bee learned more than in 5
England, but falshood in fellowship, perfect slouerie, to loue no man but for my pleasure, to sweare, Ah par *la mort Dieu* when a mans hammes are scabd. For the idle Traueller, (I meane not for the Souldiour,) I haue knowen some that haue continued there by the space of halfe a 10
dozzen yeares, and when they come home, they haue hid
K i a little wee-irish leane face vnder a broad French hat, kept a terrible coyle with the dust in the streete in their long cloakes of gray paper, and spoke English strangely. Nought els haue they profited by their trauell, saue learnt 15
to distinguish of the true *Burdeaux* Grape, and knowe a cup of neate *Gascoigne* wine from wine of *Orlance*: yea, and peradventure this also, to esteeme of the pox as a pimple, to weare a veluet patch on their face, and walke melancholy with their Armes folded. 20

From *Spaine* what bringeth our Traueller? a scull crownd hat of the fashion of an olde deepe porringer, a diminutiue Aldermans ruffe with short strings like the droppings of a mans nose, a close-bellied dublet comming downe with a peake behinde as farre as the crupper, and 25
cut off before by the brest-bone like a partlet or neckercher, a wide paire of gascoynes which vngatherd wold make a couple of womens ryding kirtles, huge hangers that haue half a cow hide in them, a rapier that is lineally descended from halfe a dozen Dukes at the least. Let his cloake be 30
as long or as short as you will: if long, it is faced with Turkey grogeran raueld; if short, it hath a cape like a Calues tung, and is not so deepe in his whole length, nor hath so much cloath in it, I will iustifie, as only the stand- ing cape of a Dutchmans cloke. I haue not yet tutcht all, 35

i *New par. A.* 5 *Run on in A.* ii yeare A. 14 spoke] A;
speake B.

for he hath in either shoo as much taffatie for his tyings as
 wold serue for an ancient; which serueth him (if you wil
 haue the mysterie of it) of the owne accord for a shoo-rag.
 A soldier & a braggart he is (thats concluded); he ietteth
 5 strouting, dancing on hys toes with his hands vnder his
 sides. If you talk with him, he makes a dishcloth of his
 owne Country in comparison of *Spaine*, but if you vrge him
 more particularly wherin it exceeds, he can giue no in-
 stance but in *Spaine* they haue better bread than any we
 10 haue; when (pore hungrie slaues) they may crumble it
 into water well inough, & make mizers with it, for they
 haue not a good morsell of meate except it be salt piltchers
 to eat with it all the yere long: and, which is more, they
 are poore beggers, and lye in fowle straw euerie night.
 15 *Italy*, the Paradice of the earth and the Epicures heauen,
 how doth it forme our yong master? It makes him to kis his
 hand like an ape, cringe his necke like a starueling, and
 play at hey passe repasse come aloft, when he salutes a
 man. From thence he brings the art of atheisme, the art
 20 of epicurising, the art of whoring, the art of poysoning, the
 art of Sodomitrie. The onely probable good thing they
 haue to keepe vs from vtterly condemning it is that it
 maketh a man an excellent Courtier, a curious carpet
 knight: which is, by interpretation, a fine close leacher, K r
 25 a glorious hipocrite. It is nowe a priuie note amongst the
 better sort of men, when they would set a singular marke
 or brand on a notorious villaine, to say, he hath beene in
Italy.

With the Dane and the Dutchman I will not encounter, for
 30 they are simple honest men, that, with *Danaus* Daughters,
 doe nothing but fill bottomeles tubs, & will be drunke &
 snort in the midst of dinner: he hurts himselfe only that
 goes thither, he cannot lightly be damnd, for the vintners,
 the brewers, the malt-men, and alewiues pray for him.
 35 Pitch and pay, they will pray all day: score & borrow, they

7 Conuntry B. ii mizers] misons A.
 24 interpretationa, fine B. 33 thether A.

15 *Run on in Gro.*

will wish him much sorrow. But lightly a man is nere the better for their prayers, for they commit all deadly sin for the most part of them in mingling their drinke, the vintners in the highest degree.

Why iest I in such a necessarie perswasieue discourse ? 5
I am a banisht exile from my country, though nere linkt in consanguinitie to the best: an Earle borne by birth, but a begger now as thou seest. These manie yeres in *Italy* haue I liued an outlaw. A while I had a liberall pension of the Pope, but that lasted not, for he continued not: one 10 succeeded him in his chaire that cared neither for Englishmen nor his owne countrimen. Then was I driuen to pick vp my crums among the Cardinals, to implore the beneuolence & charitie of al the Dukes of *Italy*, whereby I haue since made a poore shift to Hue, but so Hue as I wish my 15 selfe a thousand times dead.

Cunt patriam amisi, tunc me periisse putato :

When I was banisht, thinke I caught my bane.

The sea is the natiue soile to fishes ; take fishes from the sea, they take no ioy, nor thriue, but perish straight. 20
So likewise the birds remooued from the aire (the abode whereto they were borne), the beasts from the earth, and I from *England*. Can a lamb take delight to be suckled at the breasts of a she wolfe ? I am a lamb nourisht with the milke of wolues, one that, with the *Ethiopians* inhabit- 25 ing ouer against *Meroe*, feed on nothing but scorpions: vse is another nature, yet ten times more contentie were nature, restored to her kingdom from whence she is excluded. Beleeue me, no aire, no bread, no fire, no water doth a man anie good out of his owne countrey. Cold 30 frutes neuer prosper in a hot soyle, nor hot in a cold. Let no man for anie transitorie pleasure sell away the inheritance he hath of breathing in the place where hee was

7 consanguinitie B. 13 amongst A. 19 *New par. Gro.* 27-8 contentie, were nature restored A : contentie were . . . B. 30 doth a man] agree with a man, or dooth him A. 33 he hath of breathing] of breathing he hath A.

borne. Get thee home, my yong lad, laye thy bones
 peaceably in | the sepulcher of thy fathers, waxe olde in K 2
 ouerlookmg thy grounds, be at hand to close the eyes of
 thy kinred. The diuel and I am desperate, he of being
 5 restored to heauen, I of being recalled home.

Here he held his peace and wept. I, glad of any oppor-
 tunitie of a full poynt to part from him, tolde him I tooke
 his counsaile in worth ; what lay in mee to requite in loue
 should not bee lacking. Some businesse that concerned me
 10 highly cald mee away very hastely, but another time I hop'd
 we should meete. Verie hardly he let me goe, but I ear-
 nestly ouerpleading my occasions, at length he dismist
 mee, tolde mee where his lodging was, and charged mee to
 visite him without excuse verie often.

15 Heeres a stir, thought I to my selfe after I was set at
 libertie, that is worse than an vpbraiding lesson after a
 hatching: certainly if I had bethought me like a rascall
 as I was, he should haue had an Auemarie of me for his
 cynike exhortation. God plagud me for deriding such a
 20 graue fatherly aduertiser. List the worst throw of ill luckes.
 Tracing vppe and downe the Cittie to seeke my Curtizan
 till the Euening began to grow verie well in age, it thus
 fortun'd: the Element, as if it had drunke too much in the
 afternoone, powrde downe so profoundly, that I was forst
 35 to creep like one afraid of the watch close vnder the
 pentises, where the cellar doore of a lewes house caled
Zadoch (ouer which in my direct way I did passe) being
 vnbard on the in-side, ouer head and eares I fell into it, as
 a man falls in a shippe from the oreloope into the hold, or
 30 as in an earth-quake the ground should open, and a blinde
 man come feeling pad pad ouer the open Gulph with his
 staffe, should tumble on a sodaine into hell. Hauing
 worne out the anguish of my fal a little with wallowing vp
 & downe, I cast vp myne eyes to see vnder what Continent

4 am] are *Qro.* 9 lacking *B.* 12 ouerpleading *B.* 22 verie] *om. A.*
 thus] *om. A.* 23 fortun'd, the *Q.* dronke *A.* 32 tumble] stumble *A.*
 on sodaine *A.*

I was: and loe, (O destenie,) I saw my Curtizane kissing very louingly with a prentise.

My backe and my sides I had hurt with my fall, but nowe my head sweld and ake worse than both. I was euen gathering winde to come vpon her with a full blast of contumelie, when the lewe (awakde with the noyse of my fall) came hastily busteling downe the staires, and, raising his other tenaunts, attached both the Curtizane and me for breaking his house, and conspiring with his prentise to rob him.

It was then the law in *Rome*, that if anie man had a fellow falne into his hands, either by breaking into his house, or robbing him by the high way, he might chuse whether he would make him his bond-man, or hang him.

K a *Zadoch*, (as all lewes are couetous,) casting with | himselfe he should haue no benefit by casting me off the Ladder, had another pollicie in his heade: he went to one Doctor *Zacharie*, the Popes Phisition, that was a lew and his Countrey-man likewise, and told him he had the finest bargaine for him that might be. It is not concealed from me (saith he) that the time of your accustomed yearely Anatomie is at hand, which it behooues you vnder forfeiture of the foundation of your Colledge very carefully to prouide for. The infection is great, & hardly will you get a sound body to deal vpon: you are my Countryman, therefore I come to you first. Be it knowen vnto you, I haue a yong man at home falne to me for my bond-man, of the age of eighteene, of stature tall, straight limd, of as cleare a complection as any Painters fancie can imagine: goe too, you are an honest man, and one of the scatted children of *Abraham*; you shall haue him for fiue hundred crownes. Let me se him, quoth Doctor *Zacharie*, and I will giue you as much as another. Home he sent for me; pinniond and shackeld I was transported amongst the streete: where passing vnder *Iulianaes*, the Marques of *Mantuaes* wiues, window, that was a lustie *Bona Roba*, one of the

Popes concubines, as shee had her casement halfe open, shee lookt out and spide me. At the first sight she was enamoured with my age and beardles face, that had in it no ill signe of phisiognomie fatall to fetters: after me she sent 5 to know what I was, wherein I had offended, and whether I was going? My conducts resolved them all. Shee hauing receiued this answer, with a lustfull collachrimation lamenting my Iewish Premunire, that bodie and goods I should light into the hands of such a cursed generation, 10 inuented the means of my release.

But first He tell you what betided mee after I was brought to Doctor *Zacharies*. The purblind Doctor put on his spectacles and lookt vpon me: and when he had throughly viewd my face, he caused me to be stript naked, 15 to feele and grope whether each lim wer sound & my skin not infected. Then he pierst my arme to see how my blood ran: which assayes and searchings ended, he gaue *Zadock* his full price and sent him away; then lockt me vp in a darke chamber till the day of anatomie.

20 O, the colde sweating cares which I conceiued after I knewe I should be cut like a French summer dublet. Me thought already the blood began to gush out at my nose: if a flea on the arme had but bit me, I deemed the instrument had prickt me. Wei, well, I may scoffe at a 25 shrowd turne, but theres no such readie way to make a man a true Christian, as to perswade himselfe he is taken vp for an anatomi- He depose I praid then more than I K 3 did in seuen yeare before. Not a drop of sweate trickled downe my breast and my sides, but I dreamt it was a 30 smooth edgd razer tenderly slicing downe my breast and sides. If anie knockt at doore, I supposd it was the Bedle of surgeons hal come for me. In the night I dreamd of nothing but phlebotomie, bloudie fluxes, incarnatiues, running vlcers. I durst not let out a wheale, for feare through 35 it I should bleede to death. For meat in this distance I had plumporredge of purgations ministred me one after

6 goiug B.

29 dreamd A.

30-1 and my sides A.

another to clarify my blood, that it should not lye dodered in the flesh. Nor did he it so much for clarifying Phisicke, as to saue charges. Miserable is that Mouse that Hues in a Phisitions house ; *Tantalus* Hues not so hunger starued in hell, as she doth there. Not the verie crums that 5 fall from his table, but *Zacharie* sweepes together, and of them moulds vp a Manna. Of the ashie parings of his bread, he would make conserue of chippings. Out of bones, after the meate was eaten off, hee would alchumize an oyle, that hee sold for a shilling a dram. His snot and spittle 10 a hundred times hee hath put ouer to his Apothecarie for snow water. Anie spider hee would temper to perfect Mithridate. His rumaticke eies when hee went in the winde, or rose early in a morning, dropt as coole allome water as you would request. He was dame Niggardize 15 sole heire & executor. A number of old books had he, eaten with the moaths and wormes: now all day would not he studie a dodkin, but picke those wormes and moaths out of his Librarie, and of their mixture make a preseruatue against the plague. The licour out of his shooes hee 20 would wring, to make a sacred Balsamum against barrennes.

Spare we him a line or two, and looke backe to *Iuliana*, who, conflicted in her thoughts about me very doubtfully, aduentured to send a messenger to Doctor Zachary in hir name, verie boldly to beg mee of him, and if she might not 25 beg me, to buy me with what summes of money soeuer hee would aske. *Zacharie* lewishly and churlishlie denied both her sutes, and said if there were no more Christians on the earth, he would thrust his incision knife into his throate-bowle immediatly. Which replie she taking at his hands 30 most despitefully, thought to crosse him ouer the shins with as sore an ouerwhart blow ere a month to an end. The Pope (I know not whether at her entreatie or no) within two daies after fell sick ; Doctor *Zacharie* was sent for to

16 A number . . .] *New par. A.* 20 The licour . . .] *New par. but not set in. A. Run on in Gro. Gosse.* 22 Run on in A. 23 doubtfully] debatefully A' 27 denied] withstood A. 32 blow yet ere A. moneth A.

minister vnto him, who, seeing a little danger in his water, gaue him a gentle comfortiue for the stomack, and desired those nere about him to perswade his holines to take some rest, & he doub-|ted not but he would be forthwith K 3^v
 5 well. Who should receiue thys milde phisicke of him but the concubine *luliana*, his vtter enemie? she, being not vn-
 prouided of strong poyson at that instant, in the Popes
 outward chamber so mingled it, that when his Grand-
 sublimity-taster came to relish it, he sunke downe stark
 10 dead on the pauement. Herewith the Pope cald *luliana*,
 and askt her what strong concocted broath she had brought
 him. She kneeled downe on her knees, & said it was such
 as *Zacharie* the lew had deliuered her with hys owne
 hands, and therefore if it misliked his holines she craued
 15 pardon. The Pope, without further sifting into the matter,
 would haue had *Zacharie* and all the lewes in *Rome* put to
 death, but she hung about his knees, and with Crocodile
 tears desired him the sentence might be lenefied, and they
 be all but banisht at the most. For Doctor *Zacharie*, quoth
 20 she, your ten-times vngratefull Phisition, since notwithstanding
 his trecherous intent, he hath much Arte, and manie
 souereigne simples, oyles, gargarismes, and sirups in his
 closet and house that may stand your Mightines in stead,
 I begge all his goods onely for your Beatitudes preseruatiue
 25 and good. This request at the first was sealed with a kisse,
 and the Popes edict without delaye proclaimed throughout
Rome, namely, that all fore-skinne clippers, whether male
 or female, belonging to the old lurie, should depart and
 auoid vpon pain of hanging, within twentie daies after the
 30 date thereof.

luliana (two daies before the proclamation came out) sent
 her seruants to extend vpon *Zacharies* territories, his goods,
 his moouables, his chattels, and his seruants: who per-
 formed their commission to the vtmost title, and left him not
 35 so much as master of an old vrinall case or a candle-boxe.
 It was about sixe a clocke in the euening when those boot-

2 confortatiue A. 16 all lewes A. 19 at most A. 35 old] om. A.

balers entred: into my chamber they rusht, when I sate leaning on my elbow, and my left hand vnder my side, deuising what a kinde of death it might be, to bee let blood till a man die. I cald to minde the assertion of some philosophers, who said the soule was nothing but blood: then thought 5 I, what a thing were this, if I should let my soule fall and breake his necke into a bason. I had but a pimple rose with heate in that parte of the veyne where they vse to pricke, and I fearfully misdeemed it was my soule searching for passage. Fie vpon it, a mans breath to bee let out at a 10 backe doore, what a villanie it is! To die bleeding is all one as if a man should die pissing. Good drinke makes good blood, so that pisse is nothing but blood vnder age.

^K 4 *Seneca and Lucan* were lobcockes to | choose that death of all other: a pig or a hog or any edible brute beast a cooke or 15 a butcher deales vpon dies bleeding. To die with a pricke, wherewith the faintest hearted woman vnder heauen would not be kild; O God, it is infamous.

In this meditation did they seaze vpon me, in my cloke they muffeld me, that no man might know me, nor I see 20 which way I was carried. The first ground I toucht after I was out of *Zacharyes* house was the Countesse *Iulianas* chamber: little did I surmise that fortune reserued me to so faire a death. I made no other reckoning all the while they had me on their sholders, but that I was on hors- 25 backe to heauen, and carried to Church on a beere, excluded for euer for drinking any more ale or beer. *Iuliana* scornfully questiond them thus (as if I had falne into her hands beyond expectation): what proper apple squire is this you bring so suspitiously into my chamber? what hath he done? 30 or where had you him? They answered likewise a far off, that in one of *Zacharies* chambers they found him close prisoner, and thought themselues guiltie of the breach of her Ladiships commaundement if they should haue left him. 0, quoth shee, yee loue to be double diligent, or thought 35

6 anlthie thing A. 8 of] A: if B. 10 at] om. A. 17 faintest hearted] A: faintest hartedst B. 27 Qy. read from drinking? 34 him behinde. A,

peradventure that I, being a lone woman, stood in need of a loue. Bring you me a princok's beardlesse boy (I know not whence he is, nor whether he would) to call my name in suspense? I tell you, you haue abused mee, and I can
 5 hardly brooke it at your hands. You should haue lead him to the magistrate; no commission receiued you of mee but for his goods & his seruants. They besought her to excuse their error, proceeding of dutious zeale, no negligent default. But why should not I conjecture the worst? quoth
 10 she. I tell you troth, I am halfe in a ielozie he is some fantasticke yonkster, who hath hyrde you to dishonor me. It is a likely matter that such a man as *Zacharie* should make a prison of his house. By your leaue, sir gallant, vnder locke and key shall you stay with me, till I haue
 15 enquirde farther of you; you shall be sifted thoroughly ere you and I part. Go, maid, shewe him to the farther chamber at the end of the gallerie that lookes into the garden: you, my trim pandors, I pray gard him thether as you tooke paines to bring him hether: when you haue so
 20 done, see the dores be made fast, and come your way. Heere was a wily wench had her liri-poop without book, she was not to seeke in her knackes and shifts: such are all women, each of them hath a cloke for the raine, and can bleare her husbands eies as she list. Not too much of
 25 this Madam Marques at once; let me dilate a little what *Zadoch* did with my curtizan, after he had sold me to *Zacharie*. Of an ill tree I hope you are not so ill | sighted K 4' in grafting to expect good fruite: hee was a lew, and intreated her like a lew. Vnder shadow of enforcing her
 30 to tell how much money she had of his prentice so to be trayned to his cellar, hee stript her, and scourged her from

I peradventure B. 3 uot B. 8-9 their... default.] their ouerweening error, it proceeded from a zealous care of their dutie, and no negligent default. A. ii fantasticke . . . me.] fantastickall amorous yonkster, who to dishonor me hath hyr'd you to this stratagem. A. 13 house.] house, and deale in matters of state. A. 15 further,. thoroughly A. 16 further,. 21-2 Heere . . . shifts:] A: Here is a wench had hir liri-poop: B. 23 each of them] not one of them but A. 25 let me dilate a little] wele step a little backe, and dilate A. 26 *Zadoch* the lew did A. 28 grafting A.

top to toe tantara. Day by day he digested his meate with leading her the measures. A diamond Delphinicall drie leachour it was.

The ballet of the whipper of late days here in England was but a scoffe in comparison of him. All the Colliers of 5 Romford, who holde their corporation by yarking the blinde beare at Paris garden, were but bunglers to him ; he had the right agilitie of the lash, there were none of them could make the corde come aloft with a twange halfe like him. Marke the ending, marke the ending. The tribe of 10 Iuda is adjudged from Rome to bee trudging, they may no longer bee lodged ther, al the Albumazers, Rabisacks, Gedions, Tebiths, Benhadads, Benrodans, Zedechiaes, Halties of them were banquerouts and turned out of house and home. *Zacherie* came running to *Zadochs* in sacke 15 cloth and ashes presently after his goods were confiscated, and tolde him how he was serued, and what decree was comming out against them all. Descriptions, stand by, here is to bee expressed the furie of Lucifer when he was turnde ouer heauen barre for a wrangler. There is a toad fish, 20 which taken out of the water swels more than one would thinke his skin could hold, and bursts in his face that toucheth him. So swelled *Zadoch*, and was readie to burst out of his skin and shoote his bowels like chaine-shot full at *Zacharies* face for bringing him such balefull tidings ; 25 his eies glared & burnt blew like brimstone and *aqua vitæ* set on fire in an egshell, his verie nose lightned glow-wormes, his teeth crasht and grated together, like the ioynts of a high building cracking and rocking like a cradle, when as a tempest takes her full but against his broad 30 side. He swore, he curst, and saide, these be they that worship that crucifide God of Nazareth, heres the fruits of their new found Gospell; sulphur and gunpouder carry them al quick to Gehenna. I would spend my soule willingly, to haue that triple headed Pope with all his sin- 35 absolved whores and oilegreased priests borne with a blacke

sant on the diuells backes in procession to the pit of perdition. Would I might sink presently into the earth, so I might blow vp this Rome, this whore of *Babilon*, into the aire with my breath. If I must be banisht, if those heathen
 5 dogs will needs rob me of my goods, I will poyson their springs & conduit heades, whence they receiue al their water round about the citie ; He tice all the young children into my house that I can get, and cutting their throates | barrell them vp in poudring beefe tubbes, and so L r
 10 send them to victuall the Popes gallies. Ere the officers come to extend, He bestow an hundred pound on a doale of bread, which He cause to be kneaded with scorpions oyle that will kill more than the plague. He hire them that make their wafers or sacramentary gods, to mingle them
 15 after the same sort, so in the zeale of their superstitious religion shall they languish and droup lyke carrion. If there be euer a blasphemous coniuurer that can call the windes from their brasen caues, and make the cloudes trauell before their time, lie giue him the other hundred
 20 pounds to disturbe the heauens a whole weeke together with thunder and lightning, if it bee for nothing but to sowre all the wines in *Rome*, and turne them to vineger. As long as they haue eyther oyle or wine, this plague feeds but pinglingly vpon them.

25 *Zadoch*) *Zadoch*, sayd Doctor *Zachery* (cutting him off), thou threatnest the aire, whilest we perish here on earth. It is the countesse *Iuliana*, the Marques of Mantuas wife, and no other, that hath plotted our confusion. Aske not how, but insist in my wordes, and assist in reuenge.

30 As how? as how? sayde *Zadoch*, shrugging and shrubbing. More happie than the patriarches were I, if, crushte to death with the greatest torments *Romes* tyrants haue tride, there might be quintesenst out of me one quart of precious poison. I haue a leg with an issue, shall I cut it

I deuills A. 7 ile B. ii an] a A. 13 will] may A. 17
 blasphemous coniuurer B. 18 canes B. 26 whiles A. 26-7
 earth, it B. 28 confusion, aske B. 30 shurgging B. 34 haue] bane B.

off, & from his fount of corruption extract a venome worse than anie serpents ? If thou wilt, He goe to a house that is infected, where catching the plague, and hauing got a running sore vpon me, He come and deliuer her a supplication, and breath vpon her. I knowe my breath stinkes so alredie, that it is within halfe a degree of poison. He paie her home if I perfect it with anie more putrifaction.

No, no, brother *Zadoch*, answered *Zachery*, that is not the way. Canst thou prouide me ere a bond-maide, indued with singular & diuine qualified beautie, whom as a present 10 from our synagogue thou mayst commend vnto her, desiring her to be good and gracious vnto vs ?

I haue, I am for you, quoth *Zadoch*: *Diamante*, come L i^v forth. | Heeres a wench (sayd he) of as cleane a skin as *Siisanna*, shee hath not a wem on her flesh from the soale 15 of the foote to the crowne of the head : how thinke you, master Doctor, will she not serue the turne ?

She will, sayde *Zacharie*; and therefore He tell you what charge I would haue committed to her. But I care not if I disclose it onely to her. Maide (if thou beest a 20 maide), come hether to me; thou must be sent to the countesse of *Mantuaes* about a small peece of seruice, whereby, being now a bond woman, thou shalt purchase freedome and gaine a large dowrie to thy mariage. I know thy master loues thee dearly, though he will not let thee 25 perceiue so much; hee intends after hee is dead to make thee his heir, for he hath no children: please him in that I shall instruct thee and thou art made for euer. So it is, that the pope is farre out of liking with the countesse of *Mantua*, his concubine, and hath put his trust in me, his phis- 30 tion, to haue her quietly and charitably made away. Now, I cannot intend it, for I haue many cures in hande which call vpon me hourly : thou, if thou beest placd with her as her waiting maid or cup-bearer, maist temper poison with hir broth, her meate, her drinke, her oyles, her sirrupes, 35

5 breathe vpon A. strinkes B. 6 poison, He B. 12 YS] A:
her B. 14 Heres c.w. cleane] cleare A.

and neuer bee bewraid. I will not saie whether the pope hath heard of thee, and thou mayst come to bee his lemmen in her place, if thou behaue thy selfe wisely. What, hast thou the heart to go thorough with it or no? *Diamante*,
 5 deliberating wyth her selfe in what hellish seruitude she liued with the lew, & that shee had no likelyhood to be releast of it, but fall from euil to worse if she omitted this opportunitie, resigned her selfe ouer wholly to be disposed and employd as seemed best vnto them. Therupon, without
 10 further consultation, her wardrop was richly rygd, hir tongue smooth filed & new edgd on the whetstone, her drugs deliuered her, and presented she was by *Zadoch*, hir master, to the countesse, together with some other slight new-fangles, as from the whole congregatio, desiring her to
 15 stand their mercifull mistres, and sollicite the pope for them, that through one mans ignoraunt offence were all generally in disgrace with him, and had incurred the cruel sentence of losse of goods and of banishment. |

luliana, liking well the pretie round face of my black L 2
 20 browd *Diamante*, gaue the lew better countenance than otherwise she would haue done, and told him for her owne part she was but a priuate woman, and could promise nothing confidently of his holmes: for though he had suffered himselfe to be ouer-ruled by her in some humors, yet
 25 in this that toucht him so nerely, she knew not how he would be inclinde: but what laie in her, either to pacific or perswade him, they should bee sure off, and so craude his absence.

His backe turnd, she askt *Diamante* what countrie
 30 woman she was, what friends she had, and how shee fell into the hands of that lew? She answered that she was a Magnificos daughter of Venice, stolne when she was young from her friends, and sold to this lew for a bond-woman, who (quoth she) hath vsde me so iewishly and tyrannously,
 35 that for euer I must celebrate the memorie of this daie, wherein I am deliuered from his iurisdiction. Alas (quoth

she, deep sighing), why did I enter into anie mention of my owne misusage? It wil be thought that that which I am now to reueale proceeds of mallice, not truth. Madam, your life is sought by these lews that sue to you. Blush not, nor be troubled in your minde, for with warning I 5 shall arme you against all their intentions. Thus and thus (quoth she) said Doctor *Zachery* vnto me, this poyson he deliuered me. Before I was calde in to them, such & such consultation through the creuse of the doore hard lockt did I heare betwixt them. Denie it if they can, I will iustifie 10 it: onely I beseech you to be fauorable ladie vnto me, and let me not fall againe into the hands of those vipers.

Iuliana said little, but thought vnhappyly; onely she thankt her for detecting it, and vowed though she were her bond-woman to be a mother vnto her. The poison 15 she tooke of her, and set it vp charely on a shelve in her closet, thinking to keepe it for some good purposes: as, for example, when I was consumed and worne to the bones through her abuse, she wold giue me but a dram too much, and pop mee into a priuie. So shee had serued some of 20 her paramors ere that, and if God had not sent *Diamante* to be my redeemer, vndoubtedly I had dronke of the same cup.]

L 2^v In a leafe or two before was I lockt vp: here in this page the foresayd good wife Countesse comes to me; she 25 is no longer a iudge but a client. Howe she came, in what manner of attyre, with what immodest and vncomely wordes she courted me, if I should take vpon me to inlarge, all modest eares would abhorre me. Some inconuenience she brought me too by her harlot-like behavior, of which 30 inough I can neuer repent me.

Let that be forgiuen and forgotten, fleshly delights could not make her slothfull or slumbring in reuenge against *Zadoch*. She set men about him to incense and egge him on in courses of discontentment, and other superuising 35 espialls to plie, follow, and spurre forward those suborning

incensers. Both which playde their partes so, that *Zadoch*, of his owne nature violent, swore by the arke of *lehoua* to set the whole city on fire ere he went out of it. *Zacharie*, after he had furnisht the wench with the poyson, and giuen
 5 her instructions to goe to the deuill, durst not staie one houre for feare of disclosing, but fled to the duke of *Burbon*, that after sackt *Rome*, and ther practised with his bastardship all the mischiefe against the pope & *Rome* that enuy could put into his mind. *Zadoch* was left behind for the
 10 hangman. According to his oath, he prouided balls of wild fire in a readinesse, and laid traines of gunpouder in a hundred seuerall places of the citie to blow it vp, which he had set fire to, & also bandied his balls abroad, if his attendant spies had not taken him with the manner. To
 15 the straightest prison in *Rome* he was dragged, where from top to toe he was clogd with fetters and manacles. *Iuliana* informed the pope of *Zacharies* and his practise: *Zachary* was sought for, but *Non est inuentus*, he was packing long before. Commandement was giuen, that *Zadoch*, whom
 20 they had vnder hand and seale of lock and key, should be executed with al the firy torments that could be found out.

He make short worke, for I am sure I haue wearyed all my readers. To the execution place was he brought, where first and formost he was stript, then on a sharp
 25 yron stake fastened in \hat{y} ground he had his fundament pitcht, which stake ran vp along into the bodie like a spit; vnder his arme-holes | two of lyke sort; a great bon-fire L 3 they made round about him, wherewith his flesh roasted, not burnd: and euer as with the heate his skinne blistred,
 30 the fire was drawen aside, and they basted him with a mixture of Aqua fortis, allum water, and Mercury sublimatum, which smarted to the very soul of him, and searcht him to the marrowe. Then dyd they scourge his backe partes so blistred and basted, with burning whips of red hot wier:
 35 his head they nointed ouer with pitch and tar, and so

5 diuell A. 13 &] as A. 17 *Zacharies'*] A *Zachary B.* 25 he
 had] had he A. 26 the] his A. 28 his B. 30 hím] A : dim B.

inflamed it. To his priuie members they tied streaming fire-workes: the skinne from the crest of the shoulder, as also from his elbowes, his huckle bones, his knees, his ankles, theypluckt and gnawed off with sparkling pincers: his breast and his belly with seale skins they grated ouer, 5 which as fast as they grated and rawed, one stood ouer & laued with smiths syndry water & Aqua vitae: his nailes they halfe raised vp, and then vnder-propt them with sharpe prickes, like a Tailers shop window halfe open on a holy daie: euery one of his fingers they rent vp to the 10 wrist: his toes they brake off by the rootes, and let them still hang by a little skinne. In conclusion, they had a small oyle fire, such as men blow light bubbles of glasse with, and beginning at his feete, they let him lingringly burne vp lim by lim, till his heart was consumed, and then 15 he died. Triumph, women, this was the end of the whipping lew, contriued by a woman, in reuenge of two women, her selfe and her maide.

I haue told you or should tel you in what credit *Diamante* grew with hir mistres. *Iuliana* neuer dreamed but she was 20 an authentically maide: she made her the chiefe of her bed-chamber; she appoynted none but her to look in to me, & serue mee of such necessaryes as I lacked. You must suppose when wee met there was no small reioycing on eyther parte, much like the three brothers that went three 25 seuerall wayes to seeke their fortunes, & at the yeeres end at those three crosse waies met againe, and told one another how they sped: so after wee had bin long asunder seeking our fortunes, wee commented one to another most kindly, what crosse haps had encountred vs. Nere a sixe houres 30 but the Countesse cloyd me with her companie. It grew to
L 3^v this passe, that either I must finde out | some miraculous meanes of escape, or drop awaie in a consumption, as one pinde for lacke of meate: I was clean spent and done, there was no hope of me. 35

a of his shoulder A. 7vite B. 10 holiday A. a2 into A.
23 necessaryes B. 28 been A. 30 Nere] A; Neare B. 32 ont B.

The yere held on his course to doomes day, when Saint *Peters* daie dawned. That day is a day of supreme solemnity in Rome, when the Ambassador of Spaine comes and presents a milke white iennet to the pope, that kneeles
 5 downe vppon his owne accord in token of obeisaunce and humilitie before him, and lets him stride on his back as easie as one strides ouer a blocke: with this iennet is offered a rich purse of a yard length, full of *Peter* pence. No musicke that hath the gifte of vtterance, but sounds all the while:
 10 coapes and costly vestments decke the hoarsest and beggerlyest singing-man, not a clarke or sexten is absent, no, nor a mule nor a foot-cloth belonging to anie Cardinall but attends on the taile of the triumph. The pope himselfe is borne in his pontificalibus thorough the Burgo (which is the
 15 chiefe streete in Rome) to the Embassadors house to dinner, and thether resortes all the assembly: where if a poet should spend all his life time in describing a banquet, he could not feast his auditors halfe so wel with wordes, as he doth his guests with iunkets.

ao To this feast *luliana* addressed her selfe like an angel; in a litter of greene needle worke wrought like an arbour and open on euerie side was she borne by foure men, hidden vnder cloth rough plushed and wouen like eglentine and wodbine. At the foure corners it was topt with foure rounde
 35 christall cages of Nightingales. For foote men, on either side of her went foure virgins clad in lawne, with lutes in their hands, playing. Next before her, two and two in order, a hundred pages in sutes of white cipresse and long horsemens coates of cloth of siluer: who, being all in white,
 30 aduanced euerie one of them her picture, enclosed in a white round screene of feathers, such as is carried ouer greate princesses heads when they ride in summer, to keepe them from the heate of the sun. Before them went a foure score bead women shee mantayned, in greene gownes, scattering
 35 strawing hearbes and floures. After her followed the blinde,

a dawned: that *B.* 4 to] *A.* : fo *B.* 30 her] *A.* : his *B.* 33
 sun, before *B.* 34 maintaind in *Q.* 35 strewing *A.*

the halte, and the lame, sumptuously apparelled like Lords ;
and thus past she on to *S. Peters*.

L 4 *Interea quid agitur domi*, how ist at home all this
while? My curtizan is left my keeper, the keyes are
committed vnto hir, she is mistres *fac totum*. Against 5
our countesse we conspire, packe vp all her iewels, plate,
mony that was extant, and to the water side send them :
to conclude, couragiously rob her, and run away. *Quid*
non auri sacra fames? what defame will not golde salue?
Hee mistooke himselfe that inuented the prouerbe, *Dimi-¹⁰*
candum est pro arts & focis: for it should haue been *pro*
auro & fama: not for altares and fires we must contend,
but for gold and fame.

Oares nor winde could not stirre nor blow faster, than we
toyled out of *Tiber* ; a number of good fellowes would giue '5
size ace and the dice, that with as little toyle they could
leauē Tyburne behinde them. Out of ken we were, ere the
Countesse came from the feast. When she returned and
found her house not so much pestrēd as it was wont, her
chests, her closets, and her cupbords broke open to take 20
aier, and that both I and my keeper was missing; O, then
shee fared like a franticke Bacchinall, she stampt, she
star'd, shee beate her head against the walls, scratcht her
face, bit her fingers, and strewd all the chamber with her
haier. None of her seruants durst stay in her sight, but 25
she beate them out in heapes, and bad them goe seeke,
search they knew not where, and hang themselues, and
neuer looke her in the face more, if they did not hunt vs
out. After her furie had reasonably spent it selfe, her
breast began to swell with the mother, caused by her 30
former fretting & chafing, and she grew verie ill at ease.
Whereuppon shee knockt for one of her maids, and bad
her run into her closet, and fetch her a little glasse that
stood on the vpper shelve, wherein there was *spiritus vini*.
The maid went, & mistaking tooke the glasse of poysen 35

2 Saint A. *Peters B'* 3 *Run on in Gro.* *Intria c.-w.*
6 tewels (*broken t*) B. 26-7 seeke search Q.

which *Diamante* had giu'n her, and she kept in store for me. Comming with it as fast as her legs could carrie her, her misterres at hir returne was in a sownd, and lay for dead on the floore, wherat she shrikt out, and fel a rubbing & chafing her very busily. When that would not serue, she tooke a keye and opened her mouth, and hauing heard that *spiritus Vini* was a thing of mightie operation, able to call a man from death to life, shee tooke the poyson, and verely thinking it | to be *spiritus vini* (such as she was L 4
10 sent for), powrd a large quatitie of it into her throate, and iogd on her backe to digest it. It reuiued her with a verie vengeance, for it kild her outright; onely she awakend & lift vp her hands, but spake nere a worde. Then was the maid in my grandames beanes, and knew not what should
15 become of her: I heard the Pope tooke pittie on her, & because her trespasse was not voluntarie but chance-medly, he assigned hir no other punishment but this, to drinke out the rest of the poison in the glasse that was left, and so go scot-free. Wee, carelesse of these mischances, helde on our
20 flight, and saw no man come after vs but we thought had pursued vs. A theefe, they saie, mistakes euerie bush for a true man; the winde ratled not in any bush by the way as I rode, but I straight drew my rapier. To *Bologna* with a mery gale we poasted, where wee lodged our selues in a
25 blinde streete out of the waie, and kept secret many daies: but when we perceiued we saild in the hauen, that the winde was laid, and no allarum made after vs, we boldly came abroad: & one day hearing of a more desperate murtherer than *Caine* that was to be executed, we followed
30 the multitude, and grutcht not to lend him our eyes at his last parting.

Who shoulde it be but one *Cutwolfe*, a wearish dwarfish writhen facde cobler, brother to *Bartol* the Italian, that was confederate with *Esdras* of *Granado*, and at that time stole
35 away my curtizan, when he raiusht *Heraclide* ?

2 her ,legs B. 3 mistres A. ii digest A. verie]
merrie A. 14 my] her A. 29 murdrer A.

It is not so naturall for me to epitomize his impietie, as to heare him in his owne person speak vpon the wheele where he was to suffer.

Prepare your eares and your teares, for neuer tyll this , thrust I anie tragedie matter vpon you. Strange and 5 wonderfull are Gods iudgements, here shine they in their glory. Chast *Heraclide*, thy blood is laid vp in heauens treasury, not one drop of it was lost, but lent out to vsurie: water powred forth sinkes downe quietly into the earth, but blood spilt on the ground sprinkles vp to the firma- 10 ment Murder is wide-mouthd and will not let God rest till he grant reuenge. Not onely the blood of the slaughtered innocent, but the soul, ascendeth to his throne, and Mi there cries out & exclames for iustice | and recompence. Guiltlesse soules that liue euery houre subiect to violence, 15 and with your despairing feares doe much empaire Gods prouidence, fasten your eies on this spectacle that will adde to your faith. Referre all your oppressions, afflictions, & iniuries to the euen ballanced eie of the Almighty; he it is, that when your patience sleepeth, will be most ex- 20 ceeding mindfull of you.

This is but a glose vpon the text: thus *Cutwolfe* begins his insulting oration.

Men and people that haue made holy day to beholde my pained flesh toil on the wheele, expect not of me a 25 whining penitent slaue, that shal do nothing but cry and say his praiers, and so be crusht in peeces. My bodie is little, but my minde is as great as a gyants: the soule which is in mee is the verie soule of *Iulius Caesar* by reuersion. My name is *Cutwolfe*, neither better nor worse 30 by occupation than a poore Cobler of *Verona*; Coblers are men, and kings are no more. The occasion of my coming hether at this present is to haue a few of my bones broken (as we are all borne to die) for being the death of the Emperour of homicides, *Esdras* of *Granado*. About 35 two yeeres since in the streets of *Rome* he slew the only

30 reuersion, my B.

31 occupation, than A : occupation, but B.

and eldest brother I had, named *Bartott*, in quarrelling about a curtizan. The newes brought to me as I was sitting in my shop vnder a stal, knocking in of tacks, I thinke I raisd vp my bristles, solde pritch-aule, sponge, 5 blacking tub, and punching yron, bought mee rapier and pistoll, and to goe I went. Twentie months together I pursued him, from *Rome* to *Naples*, from *Naples* to *Caiete*, passing ouer the riuier, from *Caiete* to *Syenna*, from *Syenna* to *Florence*¹, from *Florence* to *Parma*, from *Parma* to *Pauia*, 10 from *Pauia* to *Syon*, from *Syon* to *Geneua*, from *Geneua* backe againe towards *Rome*: where in the way it was my chance to meet him in the nicke here at *Bologna*, as I will tell you how. I sawe a great fraie in the streetes as I past along, and many swordes walking, wherevpon drawing 15 neerer, and enquiring who they were, answer was returned me it was that notable *Bandetto*, *Esdras* of *Granado*. O, so I was tickled in the spleene with that word, my hart hopt and danst, my elbowes itcht, my fingers friskt, | I M i^v wist not what should become of my feete, nor knewe what 20 I did for ioy. The fray parted, I thought it not conuenient to single him out (beeing a sturdie knaue) in the street, but to stay till I had got him at more aduantage. To his lodging I dogd him, lay at the dore all night where hee entred, for feare hee should giue me the slip anye way. 25 Betimes in the morning I rung the bel and craued to speke with him: now to his chamber dore I was brought, where knocking, hee rose in his shirt and let me in, and when I was entred, bad me lock the dore and declare my arrant, and so he slipt to bed againe.

30 Marrie this, quoth I, is my arrant. Thy name is *Esdras* of *Granado*, is it not? Most treacherously thou slewst my brother *Bartoll* about two yeres agoe in the streetes of *Rome*: his death am I come to reuenge. In quest of thee euer since, about three thousand miles haue I trauaild. I

ao parted. I A. aa til. I B. 33 dogd] A \ doge B. 26 speake
with him: vp to A : speke, with him now to B. 28 I] he A. 34 a
boue B.

haue begd to maintaine me the better part of the waye,
 onely because I would intermit no time from my pursute in
 going backe for monie. Now haue I got thee naked in my
 power; die thou shalt, though my mother and my grand-
 mother dying did intreate for thee. I haue promist the 5
 diuell thy soule within this houre, breake my word I will not;
 in thy breast I intend to burie a bullet. Stirre not, quinch
 not, make no noyse: for if thou dost it will be worse for thee.

Quoth *Esdras*, what euer thou best at whose mercie I
 lye, spare me, and I wil giue thee as much gold as thou 10
 wilt aske. Put me to anie paines, my life reserued, and I
 willingly will sustaine them: cut off my armes and legs, and
 leaue me as a lazer to some loathsome spittle, where I may
 but Hue a yeare to pray and repent me. For thy brothers
 death the despayre of mind that hath euer since haunted 15
 mee, the guiltie gnawing worme of conscience I feele may
 bee sufficient penance. Thou canst not send me to such
 a hell as alreadie there is in my hart. To dispatch me
 presently is no reuenge, it will soone be forgotten: let me
 dye a lingring death, it will be remembred a great deale 20
 longer. A lingring death maye auaille my soule, but it is
 the illest of illls that can befortune my bodie. For my
 soules health I beg my bodies torment: bee not thou a
 diuell to torment my soule, and send me to eternall
 M a damna-|tion. Thy ouer-hanging sword hides heauen from 25
 my sight, I dare not looke vp, least I embrace my deaths-
 wounde vnwares. I cannot pray to God and plead to thee
 both at once. Ay mee, alreadie I see my life buried in the
 wrinkles of thy browes: say but I shall Hue, though thou
 meanest to kill me. Nothing confounds like to suddaine 30
 terror, it thrusts euerie sense out of office. Poyson wrapt
 vp in sugred pills is but halfe a poyson: the feare of deaths
 lookes are more terrible than his stroake. The whilest
 I viewe death, my faith is deded: where a mans feare is,
 there his heart is. Feare neuer engenders hope: how can 135

I manitaine *B.* 9 best] bee *A.* 33 bodies] *A.* : bodie 27. 26-7
 deaths, wounde *B.* 31 wrapt] *A.* : warpt *B.*

hope that heuens father will saue mee from the hell euer-lasting, when he giues me ouer to the hell of thy furie ?

Heracleide, now thinke I on thy teares sowne in the dust, (thy teares, that my bloudie minde made barraine). In
5 reuenge of thee, God hardens this mans heart against mee: yet I did not slaughter thee, though hundreds else my hand hath brought to the shambles. Gentle sir, learne of mee what it is to clog your conscience with murder, to haue your dreames, your sleepes, your solitarie walkes troubled
10 and disquited with murther: your shaddowe by daie will affright you, you will not see a weapon vnsheathde, but immediatly you will imagine it is predestinate for your destruction.

This murther is a house diuided within it selfe: it sub-
is bornes a mans owne soule to infourme against him: his soule (beeing his accuser) brings foorth his two eyes as witnesses against him; and the least eie wnesse is vn-
refutable. Plucke out my eyes if thou wilt, and depriue my traiterous soule of her two best witnesses. Digge out
20 my blasphemous tongue wyth thy dagger, both tongue and eyes wyll I gladly forgoe, to haue a lyttle more time to thinke on my iourney to heauen.

Deferre a while thy resolution, I am not at peace wyth the world, for euen but yesterdaie I fought, and in my
25 furie threatned further vengeance: had I a face to aske forgiuenesse, I shoulde thinke halfe my sinnes were forgiuen. A hundred deuils haunt mee dayly for my horrible murthers: | the deuilles when I die will bee loth to goe to M^{2v}
hell with mee, for they desired of Christ he would not send
30 them to hel before their time: if they goe not to hell, into thee they will goe, and hideously vex thee for turning them out of their habitation. Wounds I contemne, life I prize light, it is another worlds tranquillitie which makes me so

6 slaughterd B. baud B. 10 disquieted A. murther. Your A.
14 murder A. 17 least | A : last B. 25-6 had I ... forgiuenesse |
had I face to face askt forgiuenesse A. 27 Diuells A. 28 murders A.
diuells A.

timerous; euerlasting damnation, euerlasting howling and lamentation. It is not from death I request thee to deliuer me, but fro this terror of torments eternitie. Thy brothers bodie only I pearst vnadusedly, his soule meant I no harme to at all: my bodie & soule both shalt thou cast awaie 5 quite, if thou doest at this instant what thou maist. Spare me, spare me, I beseech thee; by thy owne soules saluation I desire thee, seeke not my souls vtter perdition: in destroying me, thou destroyest thy self and me.

Eagerly I replid after this long suppliant oration: 10 Though I knew God would neuer haue mercy vpon me except I had mercie on thee, yet of thee no mercy would I haue. Reuenge in our tragedies is continually raised from hell: of hell doe I esteeme better than heauen, if it afford me reuenge. There is no heauen but reuenge. I tel thee, 15 I would not haue vndertoke so much toile to gaine heauen, as I haue done in pursuing thee for reuenge. Diuine reuenge, of which (as of \bar{y} ioies aboue) there is no fulnes or satietie. Looke how my feete are blistered with following thee fro place to place. I haue riuen my throat a^o with ouerstraining it to curse thee. I haue ground my teeth to powder with grating & grinding them together for anger when any hath namde thee. My tongue with vaine threates is bolne, and waxen too big for my mouth: my eyes haue broken their strings with staring and looking 35 ghastly, as I stood deuising how to frame or set my coun- tenance whe I met thee. I haue neere spent my strength in imaginarie acting on stone wals, what I determined to execute on thee: intreate not, a miracle may not repriue thee: villaine, thus march I with my blade into thy bowels. 30

Stay, stay, exclaimed *Esdras* and heare me but one word further. Though neither for God nor man thou carest, but placest thy whole felicitie in murther, yet of thy felicity learn how to make a greater felicitie. Respite me

10 *New par. Gro. Run on in Q.*
 11 is continually] continually is A.
 My A. 29 thee. Entreate A

this] his A.
 18 as one of *Gro.*
 33 murder A.

II vpon] on A.
 24 mouth.

a little from thy | swordes point, and set me about some **M 3**
 execrable enterprise, that may subuert the whole state of
 christendome, and make all mens Cares tingle that heare
 of it. Commaund me to cut all my kindreds throats, to
 5 burne men, women, and children in their beds in millions,
 by firing their Cities at midnight. Be it Pope, Emperour,
 or Turke that displeaseth thee, he shall not breath on the
 earth. For thy sake will I sweare and forswear, re-
 nounce my baptisme, and all the interest I haue in any
 10 other sacrament. Onely let mee liue howe miserable so
 euer, be it in a dungeon amongst toads, serpents, and
 adders, or set vp to the necke in dong. No paines I will
 refuse howe euer proroged, to haue a little respite to purifie
 my spirit: oh, heare me, heare me, & thou canst not be
 15 hardned against mee.

At this his importunitie I paused a little, not as retiring
 fro my wreekfull resolution, but going backe to gather
 more forces of vengeance. With my selfe I deuised how
 to plague him double for his base minde: my thoughtes
 20 traueled in quest of some notable newe Italionisme, whose
 murderous platforme might not onely extend on his bodie,
 but his soul also. The ground worke of it was this: that
 whereas he had promised for my sake to sweare and for-
 swear, and commit *fultan-like* violence on the highest
 25 scales of religion; if he would but this farre satisfie me,
 he should be dismiss from my furie. First and formost, he
 should renounce God and his laws, and vtterly disclaime
 the whole title or interest he had in anie couenant of
 saluation. Next, he should curse him to his face, as lob
 30 was willed by his wife, and write an absolute firme
 obligation of his soule to the deuill, without condition or
 exception. Thirdly and lastly, (hauing done this,) hee
 shoulde pray to God feruently neuer to haue mercie vpon
 him, or pardon him.

I swords c.w. 5 millions B. 10 sacrament, onely.?. 12 dung A.
 18 vengeance, with B. 19 for] A : in B. 25 this] thus A. 31
 diuell A.

Scarce had I propounded these articles vnto him, but he was beginning his blasphemous abiurations. I wonder the earth opened not and Swallowed vs both, hearing the bolde tearmes he blasted forth in contempt of Christianitie: heauen hath thundered when halfe lesse contumelies 5 against it haue bene vttered. Able they were to raise Saintes and martyrs from their graues, and plucke Christ himselfe from the right hand of his father. My ioints
 13^v trembled & quakt | with attending them, my haire stood vpright, & my hart was turned wholly to fire. So affectionatly and zealously dyd hee giue himselfe ouer to infidelity, as if sathan had gotten the vpper hand of our high maker. The veyne in his left hand that is deriued from the hart with no faint blow he pierst, & with the full blood that flowed from it, writ a full obligation of his soule 15 to the deuill: yea, he more earnestly praid vnto God neuer to forgiue his soule, than many Christians do to saue their soules. These fearefull ceremonies brought to an end, I bad him ope his mouth and gape wide. He did so, (as what wil not slaues do for feare?); therewith made I no 20 more ado, but shot him full into the throat with my pistoll: no more spake he after; so did I shoot him that he might neuer speake after, or repent him. His bodie being dead lookt as blacke as a toad: the deuill presently branded it for his owne. This is the fait that hath called me hether; 35 no true Italian but will honor me for it. Reuenge is the glorie of armes, & the highest performance of valure: reuenge is whatsoeuer we call law or iustice. The farther we wade in reuenge, the neerer come we to y throne of the almightie. To his scepter it is properly ascribed; his 30 scepter he lends vnto man, when he lets one man scourge an other. All true Italians imitate me in reuenging constantly and dying valiantly. Hangman, to thy taske, for I

i *New par. Gro. Run on in Q.* 3 opened B. 6 haue] A : hath B.
 13 vyene B. 14 from his heart A. full] om. A. 16 diuell A.
 yea, more earnestly he praid A. 17 forgiue it his soule A. 24
 diuell A.

am readie for the vtmost of thy rigor. Herewith all the people (outrageously incensed) with one conioyned outcrie yelled mainely, Awaie with him, away with him. Executioner, torture him, teare him, or we will teare thee in
5 peeces if thou spare him.

The executioner needed no exhortation herevnto, for of his owne nature was he hackster good inough: olde excellent he was at a bone-ach. At the first chop with his wood-knife would he fish for a mans heart, and fetch it
10 out as easily as a plum from the bottome of a porredge pot. He woulde cracke neckes as fast as a cooke cracks egges: a fidler cannot turne his pin so soone as he would turne a man of the ladder. Brauely did he drum on this *Cutwolfes* bones, not breaking them outright, but, like a
15 sadler knocking in of tacks, iarring on them quaueringly with his hammer a great while together. No ioint about him but with a hatchet he had for the nones he | disioynted M 4 halfe, and then with boyling lead souldered vp the wounds from bleeding: his tongue he puld out, least he should
30 blaspheme in his torment: venimous stinging wormes hee thrust into his eares, to keep his head rauingly occupied: with cankers scrused to peeces hee rubd his mouth and his gums: no lim of his but was lingeringly splinterd in shiuers. In this horror left they him on the wheele as in hell; where,
25 yet liuing, he might beholde his flesh legacied amongst the foules of the aire. Vnsearchable is the booke of our destinies. One murder begetteth another: was neuer yet bloud-shed barren from the beginning of the world to this daie. Mortifiedly abiected and danted was I with this
30 truculent tragedie of *Cutwolfe* and *Esdras*. To such straight life did it thence forward incite me that ere I went out of *Bologna* I married my curtizan, performed many almes deedes; and hasted so fast out of the *Sodom* of *Italy*, that within fortie daies I arriued at the king of *Englands*
35 campe twixt *Ardes* and *Guines* in *France*, where he with

I Herewithall B.
27 destinies, one B.

13 ladder: brauely B.
30 truculent Q.

23 gums. No A.
33 deedes, and B.

great triumphs met and entertained the Emperour and the French king, and feasted many daies. And so as my storie began with the king at *Turnay* and *Turwin*, I thinke meete here to end it with the king at *Ardes* and *Guines*. All the conclusiue epilogue I wil make is this; that if herein I haue 5 pleased anie, it shall animat mee to more paines in this kind.

Otherwise I will sweare vpon an English Chronicle
 neuer to bee out-landish Chronicler more
 while I liue. Farewell as many
 as wish me well.

10

FINIS.

10 well. *lune 27, 1593. A.*

THE TRAGEDIE OF DIDO QVEENE OF CARTHAGE

Entry in the Stationers' Register: None.

Editions: (i) Early:

1594. THE | Tragedie of Dido | *Queene of Carthage:* \
Played by the Children of her | *Maiesties Chappell* \
Written by Chriftopher Marlowe, and | *Thomas Nafh.*
Gent. | Actors | [Names arranged in two columns: left—]
Iupiter. | *Ganimed.* \ *Venus.* \ *Cupid.* \ *Iuno.* \ *Mercurie,* or \
Hermes. \ *Aeneas.* \ [right—] *Afcanius.* \ *Dido.* \ *Anna.* \
Achates. \ *Ilioneus.* \ *Iarbas.* \ *Cloanthes.* \ *Sergesius.* \
[device] j AT LONDON, | Printed, by the Widdowe *Orwin,*
for *Thomas Woodcocke,* and] are to be folde at his fhop, in
Paules Church-yard, at the figne of the blacke Beare.
1594.]

No colophon. Quarto. Not paged.

Collation: A-F⁴, G². (A i) Title, V. blank. A 2 'The
Tragedie of *Dido* *Queene of Carthage?* *Rom. and Ital.* R-T.
The Tragedie of Dido. Signatures in Roman, except that of E 2, which
is signed E 2. Fourth leaves not signed.

Catch-words: A 2. Whose B i. But C I. About
D i. Yet E i. I F I. For G i. But

Copy used: That in the Bodleian Library (Malone, 133). This copy
is mounted in single leaves. The top margins have been shorn and in
some cases part or the whole of the running-title is missing. The
first word of the title, 'THE,' has been partly cut off and is very
roughly completed on the mounting paper. The lower halves of the
letters have also been inked over, in order, apparently, to make them
harmonize better with the continuation.

(2) *Modern editions:*

1825 (Hurst) *The Old English Drama. A Selection of Plays from the Old English Dramatists.* London: Printed for Hurst, Robinson, and Co. ... and Archibald Constable. Vol. ii.

In modern spelling. No indication of the copy used. The name of the editor is not given and I am unable to find out who this was. There are no notes, but an introduction of seven pages, dealing with Nashe, is prefixed to the play. In this collection each play has a separate title-page and is paged separately. According to Lowndes it was first published by Baldwyn, whose name appears on the title-pages of most of the plays. As however the names of Hurst and Robinson appear on that of *Dido*, I use the first of these to designate the edition.

1826 (Rob.) *The Works of Christopher Marlowe.* London: William Pickering. Vol. ii, pp. 333-401.

Modern spelling. This edition also is anonymous, but it is generally ascribed to G. Robinson (see *The Gentleman's Magazine* for January, 1841, p. 45, and *N. & Q.* 4th S. xi, 295). Cunningham, probably by a mere slip of the pen, calls the editor 'Mr. Dickinson' (Marlowe, p. xxii). The edition appears to be very similar to that of the year before. Was that perhaps also the work of Robinson and was he one of the publishers?

1850 (Dyce¹) *The Works of Christopher Marlowe with Notes ... by the Rev. Alexander Dyce.* London: William Pickering. Vol. ii, pp. 361-440.

Modern spelling. Dyce does not say what copy he used.

1858 (Dyce²) *The Works of Christopher Marlowe: with . . . Notes, by the Rev. Alexander Dyce.* A new edition, revised and corrected. London: Edward Moxon. pp. 247-274.

Modern spelling. This is substantially the same as Dyce's earlier edition, but in a few cases he has placed in the text emendations which were only proposed in the footnotes of the other. This edition is identical with that issued later by Routledge in the series of 'The Old Dramatists.'

1870 (Cun.) *The Works of Christopher Marlowe ... Edited .. by Lt. Col. Francis Cunningham.* London: A. J. Crocker Brothers, pp. 173-195.

Modern spelling. Variant readings not generally given, but there are a few notes, textual and other, at the end. This edition seems to have been based rather on that of Robinson than on Dyce's, though much use was no doubt made of the latter, for in the stage-directions, as well as in the division into scenes and in other details of arrangement, the earlier edition seems generally to be preferred.

This edition was afterwards reissued, without date, by Hotten, and later by Chapman and Hall.

1885 (Bui.) *The Works of Christopher Marlowe*, edited by A.H.Bullen ... London : J.C.Nimmo. Vol.ii,pp. 299-376.

Modern spelling. From the copy in the Bodleian Library. The lines are numbered by scenes.

1885 (Gro.) *The Complete Works of Thomas Nashe* ... edited by A. B. Grosart. Vol. vi, pp. 1-79.

In old spelling. From the copy in the Library of the Duke of Devonshire (Kemble Collection). The lines are numbered straight through, but there appears to be some inconsistency in the inclusion and omission of stage-directions and scene-headings. It is not clear whether Grosart had seen Mr. Bullen's edition before printing his text of *Dido*. He certainly had done so however before it was issued, for the Glossarial Index to Nashe, which is contained in the same volume, has numerous references to Mr. Bullen's readings and includes many of his notes. Several of Grosart's conjectures will be found in this Index.

1904. (The present edition.)

From the copy in the Bodleian Library, with collations from Dyce, Cunningham, Mr. Bullen, and Grosart. The readings of the earlier editors are only noticed in connexion with the readings of these. Thus an emendation introduced by Robinson and rejected by Dyce and all later editors would not here be recorded. Every note however implies collation of all editions. Readings which are simple modernizations are of course ignored.

Certain conjectural emendations are given from other sources besides the earlier editions. These, with the abbreviations used to indicate them, are as follows :

Miff.: An article by the Rev. J. Mitford on Robinson's edition of Marlowe, in the *Gentleman's Magazine* for January, 1841.

Coll.: Pencil jottings by J. P. Collier in his copy of Dyce's first edition of Marlowe, now in the British Museum (11771. bbb. 6). It should be remembered that these are merely hasty notes made while reading the play, and were not intended for publication. Some of them,

I think, would have almost certainly been rejected on further consideration. They seemed however of sufficient interest to be recorded.

Deigh.: From *The Old Dramatists' Conjectural Readings on the texts of. . . Marlowe. . .*, By K. Deigkton, 1896. Some of Mr. Deighton's emendations had already been proposed by Mitford and Collier.

On account of the large number of modern editions of this play, and of the majority of them being in modern spelling, it has been necessary to modify to some extent the method of giving collations followed in the prose works. The following additional abbreviations are used :

etc. after the designation of an edition stands for all editions of a later date.

ex. stands for except. Thus *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce* means all editions after and including that of 1825 (i. e. all modern editions), with the exception of the two edited by Dyce.

conj. indicates a reading proposed or suggested by an editor, but not given in his text. Thus *Dyce^x conj.*, *Dyce'* means that the reading in question was given in a note as a conjecture in Dyce's first edition and printed in the text in the second.

S. D. stands for stage-direction. A note in the form 'head S. D. *Exit. Dyce etc.*' means that after the word 'head' in the text Dyce and later editors add the stage-direction *Exit*.

Minor verbal differences in the stage-directions given by various editors are not usually noticed, provided, of course, that the meaning is in no way affected. The form of the direction in the quarto is however always given whenever mine differs from it in more than punctuation.

In footnotes all stage-directions are printed in italics, whatever may be their typographical form in the editions from which they are cited.

Stage-directions and headings of acts and scenes which are entirely omitted in the original edition are here placed within square brackets, but these are not used in the case of additions made to directions already existing in some form or another.

Mr. Bullen and Grosart placed all words added in the text within square brackets. These are omitted in the collation notes. In the prose works I have kept Grosart's brackets in order to make it clear that these insertions were intentional and not errors of the transcriber or of the press. In *Dido*, however, there is no question of mistakes of this nature. Grosart edited the play with unusual care and gives the readings of the quarto in footnotes.

It seems well to mention that when a word is cited from the text in order to note that it is the emendation of an editor, it is not to be understood that the editor necessarily printed it in exactly the same form as that in which it appears here. Account is only taken of the essential correction. Thus the note 'chaunged] *Dyce etc.*: change *Q, Hurst,*

Rob? must not be taken to mean that Dyce printed 'changed,' for, his edition being in modern spelling, he actually printed 'changed.' but merely that he first added the d. Similarly a word in italics here may be in roman in another edition, or hyphens may there have been added in accordance with modern custom which are here omitted.

Passages in quotation marks in the footnotes are from the notes of former editors. They are generally indications of locality, which it has been thought well to place among textual notes on account of their bearing on scene-division.

Except at the head of scenes, stage-directions are referred to by the number of the line preceding them.

The lines are numbered by acts, these being the only divisions in the quarto. References given from Mr. Bullen's edition may easily be found with a little calculation, and I give, at the beginning of each scene, the number of the line in Grosart's edition. Further, as it has been represented to me that a numbering of the lines throughout would be useful, I give this also in square brackets. This numbering is according to the *lines of print in the quarto*, including everything except the title-page, running-titles, and catch-words. It was unfortunately impossible to use Grosart's numbering on account of its irregularity.

The division of the play into acts and scenes :

In the original edition the play is divided into five acts, the first of which has however no heading. If this omission has any significance, which is doubtful, it may mean that the opening 121 lines were intended rather as a sort of prologue or induction than as actually part of the play itself.

Divisions of scenes are not Indicated. The third and fourth acts are however headed respectively 'Actus 3. Scena I.' and 'Actus 4, Scena i. which seems to show that at least these acts were originally divided¹.

With the exception of Dyce, all modern editors have divided the play into scenes. In general their division has

¹ We may suppose that in the manuscript used by the printer the scene-divisions had been struck out, possibly for some reason connected with the representation of the play. Though of a much later date the manuscript of Massinger's *Believe as you List* (Brit. Mus. Egerton, 3828), which is clearly an acting copy, affords an exact parallel. In this manuscript the scene-headings are crossed out in every case except at the beginning of an act, while there, in three out of the five acts, they are allowed to remain.

been the same, but Robinson, followed by Cunningham, made two scenes of Act V, dividing it after line 82, other editors only one. Dyce, while printing each act without a break, noted at places generally corresponding with the beginnings of scenes in other editions the locality in which he considered that the action was supposed to take place. Both he and Mr. Bullen had, however, to suppose changes of locality in the middle of more than one scene, that is, while characters remained on the stage.

The play is indeed one which it is impossible to divide in a perfectly satisfactory manner. One must, I think, suppose that the action was but very vaguely localized in the minds of the authors. Even the changes of place supposed by Dyce and Mr. Bullen at I. 121, II. 70, and II. 315 do not seem all that are required. The opening lines of Act II can only have been spoken in some place from which a view of Carthage could be obtained, presumably the hill overlooking the town from which Vergil makes Aeneas obtain his first sight of it; but even if we neglect the representation of Priam which Aeneas sees immediately afterward, and which *should* be in or upon Juno's temple within a grove in the middle of the town, we must surely suppose that the banquet takes place somewhere within the walls, either at the temple or in Dido's palace. Again, in Act III, Scene iii, we seem to have a similar change of locality while the action is in progress. Both Dyce and Mr. Bullen place the whole of this scene in a wood near Carthage, but to me it seems that the beginning of the scene rather represents the start from Dido's palace. It is impossible to say with certainty that it actually does so, but Dido's words 'I ... goe with thee to hunt.' the fact that she seems to have just come out of her dressing-room and has not yet put on her quiver, and her telling the lords to 'goe before,' all seem to point rather to a start for the hunting-ground than to a meeting there.

Questions such as this will however be more conveniently discussed in connexion with the relation between the play

and the story of Dido as Vergil tells it. I therefore leave whatever else I may have to say on the matter for the note-volume.

If the play is to be divided into scenes at all, the division adopted by Mr. Bullen and Grosart seems, on the whole, the best that can be made. I therefore retain it here, though, for the purpose of numbering, I treat the acts as undivided.

Nasties Elegy on the Death of Marlowe:

It is said that there formerly existed a copy or copies of *Dido* which contained an Elegy by Nashe upon Marlowe. The little that is known about it is well summarized in a note by Malone prefixed to his copy of *Dido* in the Bodleian Library : this note, which I give in full, runs as follows :—

'The tragedy of DIDO is one of the scarcest plays in the English language. There are but two copies known to be extant ; in the possession of Dr. Wright and Mr. Reed.

'Mr. Warton speaks in his *Hist. of Eng. Poet.* (iii. p. 435¹) of an Elegy being prefixed to it on the death of Marlowe ; but no such is found in either of those copies. In answer to my inquiries on this subject he informed me by letter, that a copy of this play was in Osborne's catalogue in the year 1754²; that he then saw it in his shop (together with several of Mr. Oldys's books that Osborne had purchased), & that the elegy in question "on Marlowe's untimely death" was inserted immediately after the title page, that it mentioned a play of Marlowe's entitled *the Duke of Guise* and four others, but whether particularly by *name*, he could not recollect. Unluckily he did not purchase this rare piece, & it is now God knows where.

¹ Ed. of 1774-81. Vol. iv, p. 311, note 6, in Mr. W. C. Hazlitt's edition of 1871.

² Grosart gives this date as 1774. In the original it is either 1734 altered to 1754 or 1754 altered to 1734, probably the former. I have however in vain sought the entry in question in the two volumes of Osborne's catalogue for 1754 and in those of several other years. It would, however, as those who know these catalogues will probably agree, be too daring to assert positively that it is not there. I cannot find any catalogue for 1734, and do not know whether one was ever issued.

¹ Bishop Tanner likewise mentions this elegy in so particular a manner that he must have seen it. " Marlovius (Christopherus), quondam in academia Cantabrigiensi musarum alumnus; postea actor scemcus; deinde poeta dramaticus tragicus, paucis inferior. Scripsit plurimas tragedias, sc. Tamerline—Tragedie of Dido Queen of Carthage. Pr. Come gentle Ganymed. Hanc perfecit & edidit Tho. Nash Lond. 1594. 4to.—Petowius in praefatione ad Secundam partem Herois et Leandri multa in Marlovii commendationem adfert; hoc etiam facit Tho. Nash in *Carmine Elegiaco tragediæ Didonis præfixo in obitum Christoph. Marlovii*) ubi quatuor ejus tragediarum mentionem facit, nee non et alterius *de duce Guisio*"—*Bib. Britan.* 1748.

'I suspect Mr. Warton had no other authority than this for saying that this play was left imperfect by Marlowe, and completed & published by Nashe; for it does not appear from the title page that it was not written in conjunction by him & Marlowe in the lifetime of the former. Perhaps Nashe's Elegy might ascertain this point. Tanner had, I believe, no authority but Philipses, for calling Marlowe an actor.

There was an old Latin play on the subject of Dido, written by John Rightwise, and played before Cardinal Wolsey, & again before Queen Elizabeth in 1564. There is also another Latin Play on this subject—" *Dido*, tragedia nova ex quatuor prioribus (potis[sim]um primo & quarto) libris Aeneidos Virgiliti desumpta, &c. Antverpiae, 1559." '

I think there is no reason to doubt that this elegy did actually exist, and fully expect that it will come to light again some day. At present it seems unfortunately quite impossible to trace it. I can only learn of three copies of *Dido*, and it certainly is not in any one of these. Malone's, of course, does not contain it: that in the Library of the Duke of Devonshire was used by Grosart in preparing his edition, so the elegy cannot exist in this either: lastly, in answer to my inquiries, the Librarian at Bridgewater House very kindly examined the copy there for me and

informs me that it contains nothing of this nature¹. The existence of a fourth copy is mentioned in Mr. Hazlitt's *Handbook*, but I can learn nothing of its whereabouts².

It is greatly to be regretted that we know so little of this perhaps important piece: we cannot be certain whether it was printed or in manuscript, in Latin or in English, for Warton's description of it as being 'on Marlowe's untimely death' seems hardly likely to have been the actual title. If it was printed, it was probably a late addition to the book, a single leaf inserted after the title-page. Otherwise, unless it is more than one page in length, we should expect to find it on the verso of the title, which in known copies is blank, and this Warton's words hardly allow us to suppose. Finally, it is possible that there were two editions of *Dido*, one containing the Elegy, and one without it; but this seems unlikely.

¹ He also tells me that the copy in question corresponds exactly with a description which I sent him of that at the Bodleian. As this description included several instances of misprints, there can I think be no doubt that the copies belong to the same edition.

² In *N. & Q.* 6th S. ix. 508 Dr. B. Nicholson asked for news of other copies of *Dido*, especially of any which contained the elegy in question. He failed however to obtain a reply.

THE Tragcdie of **Dido**

Queene of Cartbage:

Played by the Children of her
Maiesties Chappell.

Written by Chriftopher Marlowe, and
Thomas Nafh. Gent.

Actors

<i>Jupiter.</i>	<i>Ascanius.</i>
<i>Ganimed.</i>	<i>Dido.</i>
<i>Venus.</i>	<i>Anna.</i>
<i>Cupid.</i>	<i>Achates.</i>
<i>Iano.</i>	<i>Ilioneus.</i>
<i>Mercurie, or</i>	<i>Iarbas.</i>
<i>Hermes.</i>	<i>Cloambes.</i>
<i>Æneas.</i>	<i>Sergestus.</i>



AT LONDON,

Printed, by the Widtlowe *Orwin*, for *Thomas Wadcaeke*, and
are to be flode at his fhop, in Paules Church-yard. at
the figne of the blacke Beare. 1594.

The Tragedie of *Dido* Queene
of *Carthage*.

A 1

[Actus i. Scena i.]

*Here the Curtaines draw; there is discovered Iupiter dandling
Ganimed vpon his knee, and Mercury
lying asleepe.*

Iup. .Come, gentle *Ganimed*, and play with me;
.I loue thee well, say *Iuno* what she will.

Gan. I am much better for your worthies loue,
That will not shield me from her shrewish blowes:
5 To day, when as I filld into your cups, [10]
And held the cloath of pleasance whiles you dranke,
She reacht me such a rap for that I spilde,
As made the bloud run downe about mine eares.

Iup. What? dares she strike the darling of my thoughts?
By *Saturnes* soule, and this earth threatning haire,
That, shaken thrise, makes Natures buildings quake,
I vow, if she but once frowne on thee more,
To hang her, meteor like, twixt heauen and earth,
And bind her, hand and foote, with golden cordes,
15 As once I did for harming *Hercules*. [20]

Gan. Might I but see that pretie sport a-foote,
O, how would I with *Helens* brother laugh,
And bring the Gods to wonder at the game:
Sweet *Iupiter*, if ere I pleasee thine eye,
30 Or seemed faire, walde in with *Egles* wings,

Actus i. Scena i.] *om. Q*: In *Q* and *Dyce* the play is divided into acts, but
not into scenes. All other eds. divide into both. (See Introductory Note.)
S.D. Mercury] *Hermes Dyce, Cun., Bul.* i Line 4 *Gro.* 10 haire]
Dyce etc.: aire *Q, Hurst, Rob.* 16 a foote *Q*.

Grace my immortall beautie with this boone,
And I will spend my time in thy bright armes.

lup. What ist, sweet wagge, I should deny thy youth ? |

A 2^V Whose face reflects such pleasure to mine eyes,
As I, exhal'd with thy fire darting beames, [30] 25

Haue oft driuen backe the horses of the night,
When as they would haue hal'd thee from my sight:

Sit on my knee, and call for thy content,
Controule proud Fate, and cut the thred of time :
Why, are not all the Gods at thy commaund, 30

And heauen and earth the bounds of thy delight?

Vulcan shall daunce to make thee laughing sport,
And my nine Daughters sing when thou art sad;
From *lunos* bird Ile pluck her spotted pride,
To make thee fannes wherewith to coole thy face; [40] 35

And *Venus* Swannes shall shed their siluer downe,
To sweeten out the slumbers of thy bed :

Hermes no more shall shew the world his wings,
If that thy fancie in his feathers dwell,
But, as this one, Ile teare them all from him, 40

[*Plucks a feather from Mercury's wings*]

Doe thou but say, their colour pleaseth me :
Hold here, my little loue, these linked gems, [*Givesjewels.*]

My *luno* ware vpon her marriage day,
Put thou about thy necke, my owne sweet heart,
And tricke thy armes and shoulders with my theft. [50] 45

Gan. I would haue a iewell for mine eare,
And a fine brouch to put in my hat,
And then He hugge with you an hundred times.

lup. And shall haue, *Ganimed*, if thou wilt be my loue.

Enter Venus.

Venus. I, this is it, you can sit toying there, 50
And playing with that female wanton boy,

30 Why are *Q.* 32 laughing-sport *Dyce, BuL* 40 S.D. *Plucks . . .*
Hermes' wings. Dyce, Cun. BuL : om. Q: Plucks one out Gro. 42 loue;
these *Dyce, Bui.* s.D. *Givesjewels.'* } *Dyce, Cun. BuL : om. Q: Giving*
them Gro. 46 have too a *Dyce conj.* 47 in] into *Hurst etc. ex. Dya.*
49 shalt *Hurst etc. ex. But.*

- Whiles my *ALneas* wanders on the Seas,
 And rests a pray to euery billowes pride.
luno, false *luno*, in her Chariots pompe, [60]
- 55 Drawne through the heauens by Steedes of *Boreas* brood,
 Made *Hebe* to direct her ayrie wheelles
 Into the windie countrie of the clowdes;
 Where finding *Æolus*, intrencht with stormes, |
 And guarded with a thousand grislie ghosts, **A 3**
- 60 She humbly did beseech him for our bane,
 And charg'd him drowne my sonne with all his traine.
 Then gan the windes breake ope their brazen doores,
 And all *Æolia* to be vp in armes:
 Poore *Troy* must now be sackt vpon the Sea, [70]
- 65 And *Neptunes* waues be enuious men of warre ;
Epeus horse, to *Ætnas* hill transformd,
 Prepared stands to wracke their wooden wallles ;
 And *Æolus*, like *Agamemnon*, sounds
 The surges, his fierce souldiers, to the spoyle:
- 70 See how the night, *Vfysse-like*, comes forth,
 And intercepts the day, as *Dolon* erst:
 Ay, me ! the Starres surprisde, like *Rhesus* Steedes,
 Are drawne by darknes forth *Astræus* tents.
 What shall I doe to saue thee, my sweet boy? [80]
- 75 When as the waues doe threat our Chrystall world,
 And *Proteus*, raising hils of flouds on high,
 Entends ere long to sport him in the skie.
 False *Jupiter*, rewardst thou vertue so?
 What ? is not pietie exempt from woe ?
- 80 Then dye, *Æneas*, in thine innocence,
 Since that religion hath no recompence.
lup. Content thee, *Cytherea*, in thy care,
 Since thy *Æneas* wandring fate is firme,
 Whose wearie lims shall shortly make repose, [90]
- 85 In those faire wallles I promist him of yore:
 But first in bloud must his good fortune bud,

59 ghosts] gusts *Coll. conj.*67 wreck *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce Gro.*72 Ay] Ah *Hurst, Rob., Cun. (and generally in similar cases).*

Before he be the Lord of *Turnus* towne,
 Or force her smile, that hetherto hath frownd:
 Three winters shall he with the *Rutiles* warre,
 And in the end subdue them with his sword, 90
 And full three Sommers likewise shall he waste,
 In manning those fierce barbarian mindes;
 Which once performd, poore *Troy*, so long suppress,
 From forth her ashes shall aduance her head, [100]
 And flourish once againe, that erst was dead: | 95

A 3^y But bright *Ascaniis*, beauties better worke,
 Who with the Sunne deuides one radiant shape,
 Shall build his throne amidst those starrie towers
 That earth-borne *Atlas*, groning, vnderprops:
 No bounds but heauen shall bound his Emperie, 100
 Whose azured gates enchased with his name,
 Shall make the morning hast her gray vprise,
 To feede her eyes with his engrauen fame.
 Thus in stoute *Hectors* race three hundred yeares [no]
 The Romane Scepter royall shall remaine, 105
 Till that a Princesse priest, conceau'd by *Mars*,
 Shall yeeld to dignitie a dubble birth,
 Who will eternish *Troy* in their attempts.

Venus. How may I credite these thy flattering termes,
 When yet both sea and sands beset their ships, no
 And *Phoebus*, as in stygian pooles, refraines
 To taint his tresses in the *Tyrrhen* maine?

Iup. I will take order for that presently:
Hermes's, awake, and haste to *Neptunes* realme, [120]
 Whereas the Wind-god, warring now with Fate, 115
 Besiege the ofspring of our kingly loynes,
 Charge him from me to turne his stormie powers,
 And fetter them in *Vulcans* sturdie brasse,
 That durst thus proudly wrong our kinsmans peace.

[Exit Mercury.]

100 bounds, but heauen, shall *Hurst etc.* 115 wind-gods *Cun.*
 116 Besieges th' offspring *Dyce, Bui.* : Besieges the ... *Gro.* 119 S.D.
 Exit *Hermes. Dycc, Cun., Bui.: om. Q and others.*

120 *Venus*, farewell; thy sonne shall be our care;
Come, *Ganimed*, we must about this geare.

Exeunt Iupiter cum Ganimed.

Venus. Disquiet Seas, lay downe your swelling lookes,
And court *Æneas* with your calmie cheere, [130]
Whose beautious burden well might make you proude,
125 Had not the heauens, conceau'd with hel-borne clowdes,
Vaild his resplendant glorie from your view;
For my sake, pitie him, *Oceanus*,
That erst-while issued from thy watrie loynes,
And had my being from thy bubling froth:
130 *Triton*, I know, hath filld his trumpe with *Troy*,
And therefore will take pitie on his toyle, |
And call both *Thetis* ana *Cymothoe* A 4
To succour him in this extremitie. [140]

*Enter Æneas, with Ascanius, Achates, and
one or two more.*

What? doe I see my sonne now come on shoare?
135 *Venus*, how art thou compast with content,
The while thine eyes attract their sought-for ioyes:
Great *Iupiter*, still honourd maist thou be,
For this so friendly ayde in time of neede.
Here in this bush disguised will I stand,
140 Whiles my *Æneas* spends himselfe in plaints,
And heauen and earth with his vnrest acquaints. [150]
Æn. You sonnes of care, companions of my course,
Priams misfortune followes vs by sea,
And *Helens* rape doth haunt ye at the heeles.
145 How many dangers haue we ouer past?
Both barking *Scilla*, and the sounding Rocks,

121 S.D. *Ganimed.*] 'On their going out, we are to suppose that the scene is changed to a wood on the sea-shore.' *Dyce* (referring to III. 325-9), *Bui.* 133 *Cymothoe*] *But.*, *Gro.* \ *Cimodoæ Q.*: *Cimodoce Hurst, Rob.*, *Dyce*, *Cun.* 133 S.D. *Enter.* ...] *Enter Æneas with Ascanius, with one or two more. Q.*: *Achates added by Hurst etc.*: *Enter Æneas, Ascanius, Achates, and others. Dyce, Bui* 134 What! do *Hurst, Rob.*: What, do *Dyce, Gro.* \ What do I see? my *Dyce conj.*, *Cun.*, *Bui.* 136 sought for *Q.* 144 ye] *Dyce, Cun.*, *Grô.*; thee *Q.*; us *Hurst, Rob.*, *Bui.*: *Qy. read that (Y-read as y) t*

The *Cyclops* shelues, and grim *Ceraunias* seate,
 Haue you oregone, and yet remaine aliuē?
 Pluck vp your hearts, since fate still rests our friend,
 And chaunging heauens may those good daies returne, 150
 Which *Pergama* did vaunt in all her pride. [160]

Acha. Braue Prince of *Troy*, thou onely art our God,
 That by thy vertues freest vs from annoy,
 And makes our hopes suruiue to coming ioyes:
 Doe thou but smile, and clowdie heauen will cleare, 155
 Whose night and day descendeth from thy browes:
 Though we be now in extreame miserie,
 And rest the map of weatherbeaten woe,
 Yet shall the aged Sunne shed forth his haire.
 To make vs Hue vnto our former heate, 160
 And euery beast the forrest doth send forth [170]
 Bequeath her young ones to our scanted foode.

Asea. Father, I faint; good father, giue me meate. |

A 4^v *Æn.* Alas, sweet boy, thou must be still a while,
 Till we haue fire to dresse the meate we kild: 165
 Gentle *Achates*, reach the Tinder boxe,
 That we may make a fire to warme vs with,
 And rost our new found victuals on this shoare.

Venus. See what strange arts necessitie findes out;
 How neere, my sweet *Æneas*, art thou driuen! 170

Æn. Hold; take this candle and goe light a fire;[i80]
 You shall haue leaues and windfall bowes enow
 Neere to these woods, to rost your meate withall:
Ascanius, goe and drie thy drenched lims,
 Whiles I with my *Achates* roaue abroad, 175
 To know what coast the winde hath driuen vs on,
 Or whether men or beasts inhabite it.

Acha. The ayre is pleasant, and the soyle most fit
 For Cities, and societies supports:

147 *Ceranius Q. Gro.* 153 annoys *Dyce conj.* (for the sake of rime).
 154 mak'st *Hurst etc. ex. Bui.* coming] *Dyce etc.:* cunning *Q. Hurst, Rob.*
 159 aged . . . shed] *azur'd . . . spread Coll. conj.* haire] *Mitf. conj.*
Dyce etc.: aire *Q.* 170 driuen! *S.D. Aside. Dyce, Cun., Bui.* 175 roaue]
 roam *Hurst, Rob., Cun.* 177 it. *s.D. Exeunt Ascanius and others. Dyce, Bui.*

180 Yet much I maruell that I cannot finde
 No steps of men imprinted in the earth. [190]

Venus. Now is the time for me to play my part:

Hoe, yong men, saw you as you came

Any of all my Sisters wandring here,

185 Hauing a quiuer girded to her side,
 And cloathed in a spotted Leopards skin?

Æn. I neither saw nor heard of any such:

But what may I, faire Virgin, call your name?

Whose lookes set forth no mortall forme to view,

190 Nor speech bewraies ought humaine in thy birth;
 Thou art a Goddesse that delud'st our eyes, [200]

And shrowdes thy beautie in this borrowd shape:

But whether thou the Sunnes bright Sister be,

Or one of chast *Dianas* fellow Nimphs,

195 Lieve happie in the height of all content,
 And lighten our extreames with this one boone,
 As to instruct vs vnder what good heauen
 We breathe as now, and what this world is calde,
 On which by tempests furie we are cast: |

200 Tell vs, O, tell vs, that are ignorant; B i

And this right hand shall make thy Altars crack [210]

With mountaine heapes of milke white Sacrifize.

Venus. Such honour, stranger, doe I not affect:

It is the vse for Turen maides to weare

205 Their bowe and quiuer in this modest sort,
 And suite themselues in purple for the nonce,
 That they may trip more lightly ore the lawndes,
 And ouertake the tusked Bore in chase.

But for the land whereof thou doest enquire,

210 It is the punick kingdome rich and strong,
 Adioyning on *Agenors* stately towne, [220]

The kingly seate of Southerne *Libia*,

Whereas Sidonian *Dido* rules as Queene.

But what are you that aske of me these things?

182 part: S.D. *Asidt. Dyce, Cun., Bui.* 183 came] came along *Dyce conj.,*
Cun. 192 shroud'st *Hurst etc. ex. Bui.* 198 as] us *Coll. conj. Gro.*

Whence may you come, or whither will you goe? 215

Æn. Of *Troy* am I, *Aineas* is my name,
 Who, driuen by warre from forth my natiue world,
 Put sailes to sea to seeke out *Italy*;
 And my diuine descent from sceptred *Ioue*:
 With twise twelue Phrigian ships I plowed the deepe, 220
 And made that way my mother *Venus* led: [230]

But of them all scarce seuen doe anchor safe,
 And they so wrackt and weltred by the waues,
 As eury tide tilts twixt their oken sides ;
 And all of them, vnburdened of their loade, 225
 Are ballassed with billowes watrie weight.

But haples I, God wot, poore and vnknowne,
 Doe trace these Libian deserts all despisde,
 Exild forth *Europe* and wide *Asia* both,
 And haue not any couerture but heauen. 230

Venus. Fortune hath fauord thee, what ere thou be,
 In sending thee vnto this curteous Coast: [241]

A Gods name on, and hast thee to the Court,
 Where *Dido* will receiue ye with her smiles:
 And for thy ships which thou supposest lost, 235
 Not one of them hath perisht in the storme, [

B i But are ariued safe not farre from hence :

And so I leaue thee to thy fortunes lot,
 Wishing good lucke vnto thy wandring steps. *Exit.*

jEn. *Achates*, tis my mother that is fled ; 240
 I know her by the mouings of her feete: [250]

Stay, gentle *Venus*, flye not from thy sonne ;
 Too cruell, why wilt thou forsake me thus?
 Or in these shades deceiu'st mine eye so oft?
 Why talke we not together hand in hand, 245

And tell our griefes in more familiar termes?
 But thou art gone, and leau'st me here alone,
 To dull the ayre with my discoursie moane. *Exeunt.*

223 wreck'd *Dyce*, *Bul.* 244 shades] shapes *Cun. conj.* deceive
Cun. eyes *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 245 talke] walk *Cun.* 248 s.D.
Exeunt.] Hurst etc. ex. Bui.: Exit. Q: om. Bui.

[Scena 2.]

Enter Iarbas, followed by Illioneus, Cloanthus and Sergestus.

Illio. Follow, ye Troians, follow this braue Lord,
250 And plaine to him the summe of your distresse. [260]

Iar. Why, what are you, or wherefore doe you sewe ?

Illio. Wretches of *Troy*, enuied of the windes,
That craue such fauour at your honors feete,
As poore distressed miserie may pleade:
255 Saue, saue, O, saue our ships from cruell fire,
That doe complaine the wounds of thousand waues;
And spare our Hues, whom euery spite pursues.
We come not, we, to wrong your Libian Gods,
Or steale your houshold lares from their shrines:
260 Our hands are not prepar'd to lawles spoyle, [270]

Nor armed to offend in any kind :
Such force is farre from our vnweaponed thoughts,
Whose fading weale, of victorie forsooke,
Forbids all hope to harbour neere our hearts.

265 *far.* But tell me, Troians, Troians if you be,
Vnto what fruitfull quarters were ye bound,
Before that *Boreas* buckled with your sailes ?

Cloan. There is a place, *Hesperia* term'd by vs,
An ancient Empire, famoused for armes,
270 And fertile in faire *Ceres* furrowed wealth, | [280]
Which now we call *Italia*, of his name B 2
That in such peace long time did rule the same:
Thither made we;

When suddenly gloomie *Orion* rose,
275 And led our ships into the shallow sands,
Whereas the Southerne winde with brackish breath
Disperst them all amongst the wrackfull Rockes :
From thence a fewe of vs escapt to land;

Scena 2.] *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce:* om. *Q:* 'Scene, within the walls of Carthage.'
Dyce: 'Carthage' *Bui.:* *Qy.* Before the walls of Carthage, or same as last
scene. ? s.D. *Enter . . .* *Hurst etc.:* . . . *Sergestus and others. Dyce, BuL:*
Enter Illioneus, and Cloanthes. Q. 249 Line 253 *Gro.* 277 wreckful
Hurst etc. ex. Dyce, *Gro.*

The rest, we feare, are foulded in the flouds.

Enter. Braue men at armes, abandon fruitles feares, [290] 280
~~st~~ Since Carthage knowes to entertaine distresse.

Serg. I, but the barbarous sort doe threat our ships,
 And will not let vs lodge vpon the sands :
 In multitudes they swarme vnto the shoare,
 And from the first earth interdict our feete. 285

lar. My selfe will see they shall not trouble ye ;
 Your men and you shall banquet in our Court,
 And euery Troian be as welcome here,
 As *Iupiter* to sillie *Baucis* house:
 Come in with me, He bring you to my Queene, [300] 290
 Who shall confirme my words with further deedes.

Serg. Thankes, gentle Lord, for such vnlookt for grace;
 Might we but once more see *Aeneas* face,
 Then would we hope to quite such friendly turnes,
 As shall surpasse the wonder of our speech. 295

Actus 2. [Scena i.]

Enter Aeneas, Achates, and Ascanius.

Æn. Where am I now? these should be Carthage
 walles.

Acha. Why stands my sweete *Aeneas* thus amaze?

Æn. O my *Achates*, Theban *Niobe*, [310]
 Who for her sonnes death wept out life and breath,
 And, drie with grieffe, was turnd into a stone, 5
 Had not such passions in her head as I.
 Me thinks that towne there should be *Troy*, yon *Idas* hill,

289 *Baucis*} *Hurst etc.* : *Vausis Q.* 290 you] ye *BuL* 295 shall] all
Dyce' conj. : *Qy. read still?* *Scena i.] Hurst etc. ex. Dyce : om. Q.*
S.D. Enter...] *Enter Aeneas, Achates, Ascanius, and others. Dyce, Bui.* 'Scene,
Juno's temple at Carthage.' Bui. : The reference to the servitors in l. 70
 'shows that the scene was in the hall of Dido's palace, and before it, as seems
 also shown by the statue, which *Aeneas* takes to be that of *Priam*, *Aeneas* being
 first in the foreground. Neither is there any necessity for *Dyce's* supposition
 [cf. l. 70 note] of a change of scene in the middle of a scene.' *Gro.* (p. 238).
 i Line 301 *Gro.* 7 Methinks that should be *Troy*; yon, *Ida's hill*, *Miff*,
conj. that towne . . .] *As new line, Dyce, Cun., Bui.*

There *Zanthus* streame, because here's *Priamus*,
And when I know it is not, then I dye.

B 2^v

10 *Acha.* And in this humor is *Achates* to:

I cannot choose but fall vpon my knees,
And kisse his hand : O, where is *Hecuba* ?

Here she was wont to sit, but, sauing ayre, [320]
Is nothing here ; and what is this but stone ?

15 *Æn* O, yet this stone doth make *ALneas* weepe ;

And would my prayers (as *Pigmaliions* did)
Could giue it life, that vnder his conduct

We might saile backe to *Troy*, and be reuengde
On these hard harted Grecians, which reioyce

20 That nothing now is left of *Priamus*:

O, *Priamus* is left, and this is he;

Come, come abourd, pursue the hatefull Greekes.

Acha. What meanes , *Æneas*? [330,

Æn *Achates*, though mine eyes say this is stone,

25 Yet thinkes my minde that this is *Priamus*:

And when my griued heart sighes and sayes no,

Then would it leape out to giue *Priam* life:

O, were I not at all, so thou mightst be.

Achates, see, King *Priam* wags his hand;

30 He is aliuie, *Troy* is not ouercome.

Acha. Thy mind, *Æneas*, that would haue it so,

Deludes thy eye sight; *Priamus* is dead.

Æn Ah, *Troy* is sackt, and *Priamus* is dead ; [340]

And why should poore *Æneas* be aliuie?

35 *Asca.* Sweete father, leaue to weepe, this is not he:

For, were it *Priam*, he would smile on me.

Acha. *Æneas*, see, here coipe the Citizens:

Leaue to lament, lest they laugh at our feares.

Enter Cloanthus, Sergestus, Illioneus and others.

Æn. Lords of this towne, or whatsoever stile

8 *Priamus*' S.D. pointing to a statue Gro. 10 *Ach. Q.* 31 *Ack. Q.*
37 comes *Cun.* 38 feares] tears *Coll.*, *Bui. conj.* S.D. and others.]
Dyce (referring to 1. 58), *Bui.*, *Gro.*: om. *Q.* : and the others. *Cun.*

- Belongs vnto your name, vouchsafe of ruth 40
 To tell vs who inhabits this faire towne,
 What kind of people, and who gouernes them : | [350]
- B 3 For we are strangers driuen on this shore,
 And scarcely know within what Clime we are.
Illio. I heare *Æneas* voyce, but see him not, 45
 For none of these can be our Generall.
Acha. Like *Illioneus* speakes this Noble man,
 But *Illioneus* goes not in such robes.
Serg. You are *Achates*, or I am deciu'd.
Acha. *Æneas*, see *Sergestus* or his ghost. 5°
Illio. He names *Æneas* ; let vs kisse his feete.
Clean. It is our Captain, see *Ascanius*. [360]
Serg. Liue long *Æneas* and *Ascanius*.
 I *Æn.* *Achates*, speake, for I am ouerioyed.
 -3 *Acha.* O *Illioneus*, art thou yet aliuē? 55
Illio. Blest be the time I see *Achates* face.
Cloan. Why turnes *Æneas* from his trustie friends ?
Æn. *Sergestus*, *Illioneus*, and the rest,
 Your sight amazde me : O, what destinies
 Haue brought my sweete companions in such plight ? 60
 O, tell me, for I long to be resolu'd.
Illio. Louely *Æneas*, these are Carthage walles, [370]
 And here Queene *Dido* weares th' imperiall Crowne,
 Who for *Troyes* sake hath entertaind vs all,
 And clad vs in these wealthie robes we weare. 65
 Oft hath she askt vs vnder whom we seru'd,
 And when we told her, she would weepe for grieffe,
 Thinking the sea had swallowed vp thy ships ;
 And now she sees thee, how will she reioyce!
Serg. See, where her seruitors passe through the
 hall, 70
 Bearing a banket; *Dido* is not farre.

49 am] *Dyce etc.*: om. *Q*, *Hurst*, *Rob.* 50 see, *Sergestus*, or *Dyce*, *Bui.*
 51 names] *Hurst etc.*: meanes *Q*. 52 see, *Ascanius Dyce*. 66 hath]
 has *Cun.* 70 hall] 'Here, or at any rate, a little after, a change of scene
 is supposed,—to the hall of *Dido's* palace.' *Dyce*, *Bui.*

Illio. Looke where she comes: *,Æeas*, view her well.

Æn. Well may I view her, but she sees not me. [381]

Enter Dido, Anna, and Iarbas, traine.

Dido. What stranger art thou that doest eye me thus?

75 *Æn.* Sometime I was a Troian, mightie Queene;

But *Troy* is not: what shall I say I am? |

Illio. Renowmed *Dido*, tis our Generall,

B 3^v

Warlike *Æneas*.

Dido. Warlike *Æneas*, and in these base robes?

80 Goe fetch the garment which *Sicheus* ware:

Braue Prince, welcome to Carthage and to me,

Both happie that *Æneas* is our guest :

[390]

Sit in this chaire and banquet with a Queene ;

Æneas is *Æneas*, were he clad

85 In weedes as bad as euer *Irus* ware.

,Æn. This is no seate for one thats comfortles :

May it please your grace to let *Æneas* waite ;

For though my birth be great, my fortunes meane,

Too meane to be companion to a Queene.

90 *Dido.* Thy fortune may be greater then thy birth :

Sit downe, *,Æeas*, sit in *Didos* place,

And if this be thy sonne, as I suppose,

[400]

Here let him sit: be merrie, louely child.

Æn. This place beseemes me not; O, pardon me.

95 *Dido.* He haue it so, *,Æneas*, be content.

Asca. Madame, you shall be my mother.

Dido. And so I will, sweete child : be merrie, man,

Heres to thy better fortune and good Carres. [*Drinks.*]

Æn. In all humilitie, I thanke your grace.

100 *Dido.* Remember who thou art, speake like thy selfe ;

Humilitie belongs to common grooms.

72 view] *Hurst etc.*: viewd *Q.* 73 S.D. *Enter . . .*] *Dyce, Bui.* : *Enter Dido and her traine. Q, Hurst, Rob. Cun.* : . . . with *Iarbas. Gro.* 78
 Warlike *Æneas.*-| As separate line, *Dyce, Bui.* Run on to preceding line, *Q, Hurst, Rob., Cun. Gro.* : warlike *Q.* 80 ware : S.D. *Exit an Attendant who brings in the garment', which Æeas puts on. Dyce, Bui.* 98 S.D.
Drinks.] Dyce etc.

Æn. And who so miserable as *Æneas* is? [410]

Dido. Lyes it in *Didos* hands to make thee blest,
Then be assured thou art not miserable.

Æn. O *Priamus*, O *Troy*, oh *Hecuba* 105

Dido. May I entreate thee to discourse at large,
And truely to, how *Troy* was ouercome ?

For many tales goe of that Cities fall,

And scarcely doe agree vpon one poynt :

Some say *Antenor* did betray the towne, no

Others report twas *Sinons* periurie :

But all in this, that *Troy* is ouercome, [420]

And *Priam* dead ; yet how, we heare no newes.

Æn. A wofull tale bids *Dido* to vnfould, |

B 4 Whose memorie, like pale deaths stony mace, 115

Beates forth my senses from this troubled soule,

And makes *Æneas* sinke at *Didos* feete.

Dido. What, faints *Æneas* to remember *Troy*,

In whose defence he fought so valiantly ?

Look vp, and speake. 120

Æ. Then speake, *Æneas*, with *Achilles* tongue;

And *Dido*, and you Carthaginian Peeres, [430]

Hear me ; but yet with *Mirmidons* harsh eares,

Daily inur'd to broyles and Massacres,

Lest you be mou'd too much with my sad tale. 125

The Grecian souldiers, tired with ten yeares warre,

Began to crye, let vs vnto our ships,

Troy is inuincible, why stay we here ?

With whose outcryes *Atrides* being apal'd,

Summoned the Captaines to his princely tent : 130

Who, looking on the scarres we Troians gaue,

Seeing the number of their men decreast, [440]

And the remainder weake and out of heart,

Gaue vp their voyces to dislodge the Campe,

And so in troopes all marcht to *Tenedos* ; 135

Where, when they came, *Vlysses* on the sand

Assayd with honey words to turne them backe :

- And as he spoke, to further his entent,
 The windes did driue huge billowe's to the shoare,
 140 And heauen was darkned with tempestuous clowdes:
 Then he alleag'd the Gods would haue them stay,
 And prophecied *Troy* should be ouercome: [450]
 And therewithall he calde false *Sinon* forth,
 A man compact of craft and periurie,
 145 Whose ticing tongue was made of *Hermes* pipe,
 To force an hundred watchfull eyes to sleepe:
 And him, *Epeus* hauing made the horse,
 With sacrificing wreathes vpon his head,
Vlysses sent to our vnhappie towne :
 150 Who, groueling in the mire of *Zanthus* bankes,
 His hands bound at his backe, and both his eyes |
 Turnd vp to heauen, as one resolu'd to dye, [460] B.4
 Our Phrigian shepherds haled within the gates,
 And brought vnto the Court of *Priamus*;
 155 To whom he vsed action so pitifull,
 Lookes so remorsefull, vowes so forcible,
 As therewithall the old man ouercome,
 Kist him, imbrast him, and vnloosde his bands,
 And then: O *Dido*, pardon me.
 160 *Dido*. Nay, leaue not here ; resolute me of the rest.
Æn O, th' inchaunting words of that base slaue
 Made him to thinke *Epeus* pine-tree Horse [470]
 A sacrificize t'appease *Mineruas* wrath :
 The rather for that one *Laocoon*,
 165 Breaking a speare vpon his hollow breast,
 Was with two winged Serpents stung to death.
 Whereat agast, we were commanded straight,
 With reuerence to draw it into *Troy*.
 In which vnhappie worke was I employd;
 170 These hands did helpe to hale it to the gates,
 Through which it could not enter, twas so huge.
 O, had it neuer entred, *Troy* had stood. [480]
 But *Priamus*, impatient of delay,

153 shepherds] *Hurst etc.*: shepherd *Q.* 161 th'] the *Hurst etc. ex. BuL*

Inforst a wide breach in that rampierd wall,
 Which thousand batteVing Rams could neuer pierce, 175
 And so came in this fatall instrument:
 At whose accursed feete, as ouerioyed,
 We banquetted, till, ouercome with wine,
 Some surfetted, and others soundly slept.
 Which *Sinon* viewing, causde the Greekish spyes 180
 To hast to *Tenedos* and tell the Campe:
 Then he vnlockt the Horse, and suddenly [490]
 From out his entrailes, *Neoptolemus*,
 Setting his speare vpon the ground, leapt forth,
 And after him a thousand Grecians more, 185
 In whose sterne faces shin'd the quenchles fire,
 That after burnt the pride of *Asia*.
 By this the Campe was come vnto the walles, |
 C i And through the breach did march into the streetes,
 Where, meeting with the rest, kill, kill, they cryed. 190
 Frighted with this confused noyse, I rose,
 And, looking from a turret, might behold [500]
 Yong infants swimming in their parents bloud,
 Headles carkasses piled vp in heapes,
 Virgins halfe dead, dragged by their golden haire, '95
 And with maine force flung on a ring of pikes,
 Old men with swords thrust through their aged sides,
 Kneeling for mercie to a Greekish lad,
 Who with steele Pol-axes dasht out their braines.
 Then buckled I mine armour, drew my sword, 200
 And thinking to goe downe, came *Hectors* ghost,
 With ashie visage, blewish sulphure eyes, [510]
 His armes torne from his shoulders, and his breast
 Furrowd with wounds, and, that which made me weepe,
 Thongs at his heeles, by which *Achilles* horse 205
 Drew him in triumph through the Greekish Campe,
 Burst from the earth, crying, *Aeneas*, flye,
 Troy is a-fire, the Grecians haue the towne.

Dido. O *Hector*, who weepes not to heare thy name ?

201-2 ghost: With *Gro*.

208 a fire *Q*.

- 210 *Æn.* Yet flung I forth, and, desperate of my life,
 Ran in the thickest throngs, and with this sword
 Sent many of their sauadge ghosts to hell. [520]
 At last came *Pirrhus*, fell and full of ire,
 His harnesse dropping bloud, and on his speare
 215 The mangled head of *Priams* yongest sonne ;
 And, after him, his band of Mirmidons,
 With balles of wilde fire in their murdering pawes,
 Which made the funerall flame that burnt faire *Troy* :
 All which hemd me about, crying, this is he.
- 220 *Dido.* Ah, how could poore *Æneas* scape their hands?
 , *En.* My mother *Venus*, iealous of my health,
 Conuaid me from their crooked nets and bands ; [530]
 So I escapt the furious *Pirrhus* wrath :
 Who then ran to the pallace of the King,
- 225 And at *Ioues* Altar finding *Priamus*, \
 About whose withered necke hung *Hecuba*, C i^v
 Foulding his hand in hers, and ioyntly both
 Beating their breasts, and falling on the ground,
 He, with his faulchions poynt raisde vp at once,
 230 And with *Megeras* eyes, stared in their face,
 Threatning a thousand deaths at euery glaunce.
 To whom the aged King thus, trembling, spoke: [540]
Achilles sonne, remember what I was,
 Father of fiftie sonnes, but they are slaine ;
 235 Lord of my fortune, but my fortunes turnd ;
 King of this Citie, but my *Troy* is fired ;
 And now am neither father, Lord, nor King:
 Yet who so wretched but desires to Hue ?
 O, let me liue, great *Neoptolemus*.
- 240 Not mou'd at all, but smiling at his teares,
 This butcher, whil'st his hands were yet held vp,
 Treading vpon his breast, strooke off his hands. [550]
Dido. O, end, *Æneas*, I can heare no more.
Æn. At which the franticke Queene leapt on his face,
 245 And in his eyelids hanging by the nayles,
 A little while prolonged her husbands life:

At last the souldiers puld her by the heeles,
 And swong her howling in the emptie ayre,
 Which sent an eccho to the wounded King:
 Whereat he lifted vp his bedred lims,
 And would haue grappeld with *Achilles* sonne,
 Forgetting both his want of strength and hands ; [560]
 Which he disdainig, whiskt his sword about,
 And with the wind thereof the King fell downe:
 Then from the nauell to the throat at once
 He ript old *Priam* ; at whose latter gaspe
loues marble statue gan to bend the brow,
 As lothing *Pirrhus* for this wicked act:
 Yet he, vndaunted, tooke his fathers flagge
 And dipt it in the old Kings chill cold bloud,
 And then in triumph ran into the streetes, [569]
 Through which he could not passe for slaughtred men: |

C 2 So, leaning on his sword, he stood stone still,
 Viewing the fire wherewith rich *I lion* burnt.
 By this, I got my father on my backe,
 This yong boy in mine armes, and by the hand
 Led faire *Creusa*, my beloued wife ;
 When thou, *Achates*, with thy sword mad'st way,
 And we were round inuiron'd with the Greekes:
 O, there I lost my wife: and had not we
 Fought manfully, I had not told this tale :
 Yet manhood would not serue; of force we fled ; [580]
 And as we went vnto our ships, thou knowest
 We sawe *Cassandra* sprauling in the streetes,
 Whom *Ajax* rauisht in *Dianas* Fane,
 Her cheekes swolne with sighes, her haire all rent:
 Whom I tooke vp to beare vnto our ships ;
 But suddenly the Grecians followed vs,
 And I, alas, was forst to let her lye.
 Then got we to our ships, and, being abourd,

254 wind] *Coll. con.*: (*Hist. Eng. Dr. P.* iii, 47), *Dyce etc.* : wound *Q.*
 273 know'st *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* : knowest s.D. to *Achates* *Gro.* 275 Fane]
Hurst etc. : Fawne *Q.*

Polixena cried out, *Æneas*, stay,
The Greekes pursue me ; stay, and take me in. [590]

Moued with her voyce, I lept into the sea,
Thinking to beare her on my backe about :
285 For all our ships were launcht into the deepe,
And, as I swomme, she, standing on the shoare,
Was by the cruell Mirmidons surprizd,
And after by that *Pirrhus* sacrificzde.

Dido. I dye with melting ruth ; *Æneas*, leaue.

290 *Anna*. O, what became of aged *Hecubat*
lar. How got *Æneas* to the fleete againe ? [599]

Dido. But how scapt *Helen*, she that causde this warre ?

Æn. *Achates*, speake ; sorrow hath tired me quite.

Acha. What happened to the Queene we cannot shewe ;
295 We heare they led her captiue into Greece:

As for *Æneas*, he swomme quickly backe ;

And *Helena* betraied *Deiphobus*,

Her Louer, after *Alexander* dyed,

And so was reconciled to *Menelaus*. \

300 *Dido*. O, had that ticing strumpet nere been borne! C 2 v

Troian, thy ruthfull tale hath made me sad :

Come, let us thinke vpon some pleasing sport, [610]

To rid me from these melancholly thoughts.

Exeunt omnes.

*Enter Venus and Cupid at another doore, Venus takes
Ascanius by the sleeue.*

Venus. Faire child, stay thou with *Didos* waiting maide,
305 He giue thee Sugar-almonds, sweete Conserues,

A siluer girdle, and a golden purse,

And this yong Prince shall be thy playfellow.

288 And, after that, by *Dyce*¹ conj., *Dyce*², *BuL*, *Gro*. (omitting commas).
297 *Deiphobus*] *Hurst* etc. \ *Duphobus*(?) *Q*. (The reading of the *Q* is given
as 'Dnphobus' by *Gro*. It is difficult to say with certainty which it
actually is.) 303 S.D. *Exeunt omnes*.] *Exeunt* all except *Ascanius*, whom

Venus, entering with *Cupid* at another door, takes by the sleeue as he is going off.
Dyce, *Bui*. S.D. *Enter* . . .] *Enter Venus* at another doore, and takes
Ascanius by the sleeue. *Q*: *Enter Venus* and *Cupid*, *Venus* takes *Ascanius*
by the sleeue. *Hurst*, *Rob.*, *Cun*. *Enter Venus*, with *Cupid*, a' . . . *Gro*.
Combined with the exit-direction, as above, *Dyce*, *Bui*.

Asca. Are you Queene *Didos* sonne?

Cupid. I, and my mother gaue me this fine bow. [620]

Asca. Shall I haue such a quiuer and a bow? 310

Venus. Such bow, such quiuer, and such golden shafts,
Will *Dido* giue to sweete *Ascanius*:

For *Didos* sake I take thee in my armes,

And sticke these spangled feathers in thy hat;

Eate Comfites in mine armes, and I will sing. [*Sings.*] 315

Now is he fast asleepe, and in this groue

Amongst greene brakes He lay *Ascanius*,

And strewed him with sweete smelling Violets,

Blushing Roses, purple *Hyacinthe* : [630]

These milke white Doues shall be his Centronels; 320

Who, if that any seeke to doe him hurt,

Will quickly flye to *Cythereas* fist.

Now *Citpid*, turne thee to *Ascanitts* shape,

And goe to *Dido*, who, in stead of him,

Will set thee on her lap, and play with thee: 325

Then touch her white breast with this arrow head,

That she may dote vpon *Æeas* loue;

And by that meanes repaire his broken ships,

Victuall his Souldiers, giue him wealthie gifts, [640]

And he at last depart to *Italy*, 330

Or els in *Carthage* make his kingly throne. [

C 3 *Ciupid.* I will, faire mother, and so play my part

As euery touch shall wound Queene *Didos* heart.

Venus. Sleepe, my sweete nephew, in these cooling shades,
Free from the murmure of these running streames, 335

The crye of beasts, the ratling of the windes,

Or whisking of these leaues; all shall be still,

And nothing interrupt thy quiet sleepe,

Till I returne, and take thee hence againe. *Exeunt.* [650]

315 S.D. *Sings.* *I Dyce, Bui., Gro. : om. Q and others.* 'After the song, the scene is supposed to be changed to a grove.' *Dyce* : 'We must suppose that Venus had borne the sleeping Ascanius to Cythera or Cyprus.' *Bui.* 319 With blushing *Mitf. conj., Cun.* hyacinths *Dyce, Cun.* 322 *Cythereas*] *Hurst etc.. Cithaidas Q.* 333 heart. s.D. *Exit. Dyce, Cun., Bui.* 339 S.D. *Exeunt.*] *Hurst, Rob., Gro.: Exit. Q, Dyce, Cun., Bui.*

Actus 3. Scena i.

Enter Cupid solus, as Ascanius.

Cupid, Now, *Cupid*, cause the Carthaginian Queene
To be inamour'd of thy brothers lookes :
Conuey this golden arrowe in thy sleeue,
Lest she imagine thou art *Venus* sonne:
5 And when she strokes thee softly on the head,
Then shall I touch her breast and conquer her.

Enter Iarbas, Anna, and Dido.

Iar. How long, faire *Dido*, shall I pine for thee? [660]
Tis not enough that thou doest graunt me loue,
But that I may enioy what I desire:
10 That loue is childish which consists In words.

Dido. *Iarbas*, know that thou of all my wooers
(And yet haue I had many mightier Kings)
Hast had the greatest fauours I could giue :
I feare me, *Dido* hath been counted light,
15 In being too familiar with *Iarbas*-.
Albeit the Gods doe know, no wanton thought
Had euer residence in *Didos* breast. [670]

Iar. But *Dido* is the fauour I request.

Dido. Feare not, *Iarbas*; *Dido* may be thine.
20 *Anna.* Looke, sister, how *Eneas* little sonne
Playes with your garments and imbraceth you.

Cupid. No, *Dido* will not take me in her armes; |
I shall not be her sonne, she loues me not. C 3*

Dido. Weepe not, sweet boy, thou shalt be *Didos* sonne;
25 Sit in my lap, and let me heare thee sing. [*Cupid sings*,\
No more, my child, now talke another while,
And tell me, where learnst thou this pretie song? [680]

S.D. *Enter*. . .] *Gro* : *Enter Cupid solus*. *Q* : *Enter Cupid*. *Hurst, Rob.*,
Cun. : *Enter Cupid as Ascanus*. *Dyce, BuL* . . . Scene, a hall in *Dido's* palace.
Dyce : . . . a room in . . . *Bui.* . . . i Line 640 *Gro.* . . . 6 S.D. *Enter*
Dido, Anna, and Iarbas. *Dyce, BuL* *Iar bus Q* (and so throughout the play).
25 S.D. *Cupid sings*.] *Hurst etc.* . . . 27 tell me where . . . song. *Hurst etc.* :
. . . song? *Q.* . . . learn'dst *Dyce, Cun., Bui.*

Cupid. My cosin *Helen* taught it me in *Troy*.

Dido. How louely is *Ascanius* when he smiles !

Cupid. Will *Dido* let me hang about her necke? 3°

Dido. I, wagge, and giue thee leauē to kisse her to.

Cupid. What will you giue me? now He haue this Fanne.

Dido. Take it, *Ascanius*•, for thy fathers sake.

lar. Come, *Dido*, leauē *Ascanius*; let vs walke.

Dido. Goe thou away; *Ascanius* shall stay. 35

lar. Vngentle Queene, is this thy loue to me?

Dido. O, stay, *larbas*, and He goe with thee. [690]

Cupid. And if my mother goe, He follow her.

Dido. Why staiest thou here? thou art no loue of mine.

lar. *larbas*) dye, seeing she abandons thee. 40

Dido. No, liue, *larbas* ; what hast thou deseru'd,

That I should say thou art no loue of mine?

Something thou hast deseru'd : away, I say,

Depart from *Carthage*; come not in my sight.

lar. Am I not King of rich *Getulia* ? 45

Dido. *larbas*, pardon me, and stay a while.

Cupid. Mother, looke here. [700]

Dido. What telst thou me of rich *Getiliat*

Am not I Queene of *Libial* then depart.

lar. I goe to feed the humour of my Loue, 50

Yet not from *Carthage* for a thousand worlds.

Dido. *larbas*.

lar. Doth *Dido* call me backe ?

Dido. No, but I charge thee neuer looke on me.

lar. Then pull out both mine eyes, or let me dye.

Exit larb.

Anna. Wherefore doth *Dido* bid *larbas* goe ? 55

Dido. Because his lothsome sight offends mine eye, [710]

And in my thoughts is shrin'd another loue:

O *Anna*, didst thou know how sweet loue were, |

32 me now? Dyce, *Bui.* 38 And] An Dyce., *Bui.* 50 goe, to *Gro.*
 54 SLD Etki Dyce, *Bui.* 56 eye C 55] Dyce, *Cun.* 57 loue] Dyce, *Cun.*,
Bul.: loue *Q.*, *Hurs.*, *Rob.*, *Gro.*

Full soone wouldst thou abiure this single life. c 4

60 *Anna*. Poore soule, I know too well the sower of loue:

O, that *larbas* could but fancie me !

Dido. Is not *Æneas* faire and beautifull?

Anna. Yes, and *larbas* foule and fauourles.

Dido. Is he not eloquent in all his speech?

65 *Anna*. Yes, and *larbas* rude and rusticall.

Dido. Name not *larbas* ; but, sweete *Anna*, say, [720]
Is not *Æneas* worthie *Didos* loue ?

Anna. O sister, were you Empresse of the world,
Æneas well deserues to be your loue :

70 So louely is he that, where ere he goes,

The people swarme to gaze him in the face.

Dido. But tell them, none shall gaze on him but I,
Lest their grosse eye-beames taint my louers cheekes:

Anna, good sister *Anna*, goe for him,

75 Lest with these sweete thoughts I melt cleane away.

Anna. Then, sister, youle abiure *larbas* loue? [730]

Dido. Yet must I heare that lothsome name againe ?

Runne for *Æneas*, or He flye to him. *Exit Anna*.

Cupid. You shall not hurt my father when he comes.

80 *Dido*. No, for thy sake, He loue thy father well.

O dull conceipted *Dido*, that till now

Didst neuer thinke *Æneas* beautifull:

But now, for quittance of this ouersight,

He make me bracelets of his golden haire;

85 His glistering eyes shall be my looking glasse;

His lips an altar, where lie offer vp [740]

As many kisses as the Sea hath sands:

In stead of musicke I will heare him speake ;

His lookes shall be my only Librarie ;

90 And thou, *Æneas*, *Didos* treasure,

In whose faire bosome I will locke more wealth

Then twentie thousand Indiaes can affoord :

O, here he comes ; loue, loue, giue *Dido* leaue

To be more modest then her thoughts admit,

95 Lest I be made a wonder to the world. |

*Enter Achates, Sergestus, Illioneus, Cloanthus,
and Æneas last!]*

C 4^v *Achates*, how doth *Carthage* please your Lord? [750]

Acha. That will *Æneas* shewe your maiestie.

Dido. *Æneas*, art thou there?

Æn. I vnderstand your highnesse sent for me.

Dido. No, but now thou art here, tell me in sooth 100

In what might *Dido* highly pleasure thee.

Æn. So much haue I receiu'd at *Didos* hands,

As, without blushing, I can aske no more:

Yet, Queene of *Affricke*, are my ships vnrigd,

My Sailes all rent in sunder with the winde, 105

My Oares broken, and my Tackling lost, [760]

Yea, all my Nauie split with Rockes and Shelfes :

Nor Sterne nor Anchor haue our maimed Fleete;

Our Masts the furious windes strooke ouer board :

Which piteous wants if *Dido* will supplie, no

We will account her author of our Hues.

Dido. *Æneas*, lie repaire thy Troian ships,

Conditionally that thou wilt stay with me,

And let *Achates* saile to *Italy*:

He giue thee tackling made of riued gold, 115

Wound on the barkes of odoriferous trees, [770]

Oares of massie luorie, full of holes,

Through which the water shall delight to play:

Thy Anchors shall be hewed from Christall Rockes,

Which, if thou lose, shall shine about the waues: 120

The Masts, whereon thy swelling sailes shall hang,

Hollow Pyramides of siluer plate :

The sailes of foulded Lawne, where shall be wrought

The warres of *Troy*, but not *Troyes* ouerthrow:

For ballace, emptie *Didos* treasure; 125

95 s.D. *Enter.* . .] *Gro.* (with note ' Æneas must enter last. See *Dido's* address to *Achates*, not seeing, or affecting not to see *Æneas*, as shown by her question.')' *cm. Q: Enter Æneas, Achates, Sergestus, Ilibneus, and Cloanthus. Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 115 gold, S.D. *To Achates Gro.* (referring to II. 127-8). 120 lose] loose *Cun.*

Take what ye will, but leaue *Æneas* here. [780]

Achates, thou shalt be so meanly clad,

As Seaborne Nymphes shall swarme about thy ships,

And wanton Mermaides court thee with sweete songs,

130 Flinging in fauours of more soueraigne worth

Then *Thetis* hangs about *Apolloes* necke,

So that *Æneas* may but stay with me. |

Æn. Wherefore would *Dido* haue *Æneas* stay? D i

Dido. To warre against my bordering enemies.

135 *Æneas*, thinke not *Dido* is in loue ;

For if that any man could conquer me,

[790]

I had been wedded ere *Æneas* came:

See where the pictures of my suiters hang;

And are not these as faire as faire may be ?

140 *Acha.* I saw this man at *Troy*, ere *Troy* was sackt.

Æn. I this in *Greece*, when *Paris* stole faire *Helen*.

Illio. This man and I were at *Olympus* games.

Serg. I know this face ; he is a Persian borne:

I traueled with him to *Ætolia*.

145 *Cloan.* And I in *Athens* with this gentleman,

Vnlesse I be deceiu'd, disputed once.

[800]

Dido. But speake, *Æneas*; know you none of these ?

Æn. No, Madame ; but it seemes that these are Kings.

Dido. All these, and others which I neuer sawe,

150 Haue been most vrgent suiters for my loue;

Some came in person, others sent their Legats,

Yet none obtaind me; I am free from all;

And yet, God knowes, intangled vnto one.

This was an Orator, and thought by words

155 To compasse me; but yet he was deceiu'd:

And this a Spartan Courtier, vaine and wilde;

[810]

But his fantastick humours please not me :

127 meanly] *Q*, *Hurst*, *Rob.*, *Gro.* : Meantime, *Achates*, thou shalt be so clad *Mif. conj.* (*in Dyce*¹): meetly *Dyce con.*¹: newly *Coll. con.*¹, *Cun.* : seemly *Dyce*, *Bui.* 141 '&».] *Serg.* *Dyce*² (*referring to l.* 147): A Lord *Gro.* ' We may suppose that *Dido* is there [*in l.* 147] calling *Æneas*' attention to another set of pictures on the opposite side of the stage.' *Bui.* 142 Olympiads *Dyce*, *Cun.*, *Bui.*

This was *Alcion*, a Musition;

But, playd he nere so sweet, I let him goe:

This was the wealthie King of *Thessaly* ;

'60

But I had gold enough, and cast him off:

This, *Meleagers* sonne, a warlike Prince;

But weapons gree not with my tender yeares:

The rest are such as all the world well knowes;

Yet now I sweare by heauen and him I loue,

165

I was as farre from loue as they from hate.

[820]

Æn. O, happie shall he be whom *Dido* loues.

Dido. Then neuer say that thou art miserable,

Because it may be thou shalt be my loue : |

D i^y Yet boast not of it, for I loue thee not;

170

And yet I hate thee not: O, if I speake

I shall betray my selfe : *Æneas*, speake :

We two will goe a hunting in the woods ;

But not so much for thee, thou art but one,

As for *Achates*, and his followers.

Exeunt. '75

[Scena 2.]

Enter hino to Ascanius aslepe.

[830]

Iuno. Here lyes my hate, *Æncas* cursed brat,

The boy wherein false destinie delights,

The heire of furie, the fauorite of the fates,

That vgly impe that shall outweare my wrath,

And wrong my deitie with high disgrace:

180

But I will take another order now,

And race th'eternall Register of time:

Troy shall no more call him her second hope,

163 greed *Gro.* 165 now] *Dyce, Bui, Gro.*: how *Q*: here *Hursf, Rob., Cun.* 172 speake] come or hark *Dyce* ' *conj.* (speak caught from preceding line): come *Dyce', Bui.* myself! *S.D. Aside. Dyce', Cun. Qy.* read my selfe: *Æneas—Æn.* Speake | *Dido.* We two . . . ? ' Scena 2.] *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce: om. Q.* ' Scene, a grove.' *Dyce, Bui. S.D. asleepe.] who lies asleep. Dyce, Bui.* 176 Line 815 *Gro.* 178 Heir of the Furies, *Deigh. conj. furie]* *Troy Cun. : furies Gro.: Fury, favourite Mitf. conj.* In a copy of *Rob. (B.M. "771. d. 4)* is a *MS. note that Q reads* The heir of Fame, fates] *Hurst etc. : face Q.* 182 race] raze *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* th'] the *Cun.*

Nor *Venus* triumph in his tender youth ;
 185 For here, in spight of heauen, He murder him, [840]
 And feede infection with his let out life:
 Say, *Paris*, now shall *Venus* haue the ball ?
 Say, vengeance, now shall her *Ascanius* dye ?
 O no, God wot, I cannot watch my time,
 190 Nor quit good turnes with double fee downe told :
 Tut, I am simple, without mind to hurt,
 And haue no gall at all to grieue my foes :
 But lustfull *loue* and his adulterous child
 Shall finde it written on confusions front,
 195 That onely *luno* rules in *Rhamnuse* towne. [850]

Enter Venus.

Venus. What should this meane? my Doues are back
 returnd,
 Who warne me of such danger prest at hand,
 To harme my sweete *Ascanius* louely life.
luno, my mortall foe, what make you here?
 200 Auauent, old witch, and trouble not my wits.
luno. Fie, *Venus*, that such causeles words of wrath
 Should ere defile so faire a mouth as thine : |
 Are not we both sprong of celestially rase, D 2
 And banquet, as two Sisters, with the Gods? [860]
 205 Why is it then displeasure should disioyne
 Whom kindred and acquaintance counites ?
Venus. Out, hatefull hag, thou wouldst haue slaine
 my sonne,
 Had not my Doues discou'rd thy entent:
 But I will teare thy eyes fro forth thy head,
 210 And feast the birds with their bloud-shotten balles,
 If thou but lay thy fingers on my boy.
luno. Is this then all the thanks that I shall haue,
 For sauing him from Snakes and Serpents stings,

186 let out] *Hurst etc.* \ left out *Q.* 191 simple without *Q.* mind]
Dyce etc. \ made *Q.*: might *Hurst, Rob.* *Qy.* read simple with ought made ?
 197 such] some *Cun, conj.* 209 from *Hurst, Rob., Cun.*: fr5 *Gro.*

That would haue kild him, sleeping, as he lay? [870]
 What though I was offended with thy sonne, 215
 And wrought him mickle woe on sea and land,
 When, for the hate of Troian *Gammed*,
 That was aduanced by my *Hebes* shame,
 And *Paris* Judgement of the heauenly ball,
 I mustred all the windes vnto his wracke, 220
 And vrg'd each Element to his annoy :
 Yet now I doe repent me of his ruth,
 And wish that I had neuer wrongd him so:
 Booties I sawe it was to warre with fate, [880]
 That hath so many vnresisted friends: 225
 Wherefore I chaunged my counsell with the time.
 And planted loue where enuie erst had sprong.

Venus. Sister of *Ioue*, if that thy loue be such
 As these thy protestations doe paint forth,
 We two, as friends, one fortune will deuide: 230
Cupid shall lay his arrowes in thy lap,
 And to a Scepter change his golden shafts;
 Fancie and modestie shall Hue as mates,
 And thy faire peacockes by my pigeons perch: [890]
 Loue my *Aeneas*, and desire is thine; 335
 The day, the night, my Swannes, my sweetes, are thine.

Iuno. More then melodious are these words to me,
 That ouercloy my soule with their content:

Venus, sweete *Venus*, how may I deserue |
 D 2^v Such amorous fauours at thy beautious hand? 340
 But, that thou maist more easilie perceiue
 How highly I doe prize this amitie,
 Harke to a motion of eternall league,
 Which I will make in quittance of thy loue : [900]
 Thy sonne, thou knowest, with *Dido* now remaines, 245
 And feedes his eyes with fauours of her Court;
 She, likewise, in admyring spends her time,
 And cannot talke nor thinke of ought but him:

220 wreck *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce¹ Gro.* 226 chaunged] *Dyce etc.*: chaunge *Q₁*
Hurst, Rob. 245 know'st *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.*

Why should not they then ioyne in marriage,
 350 And bring forth mightie Kings to Carthage towne,
 Whom casualtie of sea hath made such friends ?
 And, *Venus*, let there be a match confirmd
 Betwixt these two, whose loues are so alike;
 And both our Deities, conioynd in one, [910]
 355 Shall chaine felicitie vnto their throne.

Venus. Well could I like this reconcilements meanes,
 But much I feare my sonne will nere consent;
 Whose armed soule, alreadie on the sea,
 Darts forth her light to *Lauinias* shoare.
 260 *Iuno*, Faire Queene of loue, I will deuorce these doubtts,
 And finde the way to wearie such fond thoughts:
 This day they both a hunting forth will ride
 Into the woods adioyring to these walles;
 When, in the midst of all their gamesome sports, [920]

265 He make the Clowdes dissolue their watrie workes,
 And drench *Siluanus* dwellings with their showers;
 Then in one Caue the Queene and he shall meete,
 And interchangeably discourse their thoughts,
 Whose short conclusion will seale vp their hearts,
 270 Vnto the purpose which we now propound.

Venus. Sister, I see you sauour of my wiles:
 Be it as you will haue it for this once:
 Meane time, *Ascanius* shall be my charge;
 Whom I will beare to *Ida* in mine armes, [930]
 275 And couch him in *Adonis* purple downe. *Exeunt*.

[Scena 3.]

*Enter Dido, Aeneas, Aeneas, Iarbas, Achates,
 Cupid as Ascanius, and followers.*

D 3

Dido. *Aeneas*, thinke not but I honor thee,

259 lightning to or light unto *Dyce conj.*: light unto *Cum., Bui.*: Lavinian
Dyce² conj.: to the *Lauinian Gro.*: unto *Lauiniuiris Gro. conj.* 263 the] *Dyce,*
Cun., Bui., Gro.: these *Q, Hurst, Rob.* 266 shewers *Q.* 272 hane it for]
Hurst etc. ex. Dyce¹ (there conj.) • haue for *Q, Dyce¹.* Scena 3.] *Hurst etc.*
ex. Dyce: om. Q. ¹ Scene, a wood.' *Dyce:* ¹ a wood near Carthage.' *Bui. s.D.*
Cupid as Ascanius, Dyce, Bui., Gro.: om. Q and others. 376 Line 916 *Gro.*

That thus in person goe with thee to hunt:
 My princely robes, thou seest, are layd aside,
 Whose glittering pompe *Dianas* shrowdes supplies;
 All fellowes now, disposde alike to sporte; 280
 The woods are wide, and we haue store of game:
 Faire Troian, hold my golden bowe awhile, [940]
 Vntill I gird my quiuer to my side:

Lords, goe before, we two must talke alone.
far. Vngentle, can she wrong *larbas* so? 285
 He dye before a stranger haue that grace:
 We two will talke alone; what words be these?

Dido. What makes *larbas* here of all the rest?
 We could haue gone without your companie.

Æn. But loue and duetie led him on perhaps, 290
 To presse beyond acceptance to your sight.

lar. Why, man of *Troy*, doe I offend thine eyes? [950]
 Or art thou grieude thy betters presse so nye?

Dido. How now, *Getulian*, are ye growne so braue,
 To challenge vs with your comparisons? 295
 Pesant, goe seeke companions like thy selfe,
 And meddle not with any that I loue:

Æneas, be not moude at what he sayes,
 For otherwhile he will be out of ioynt.

lar. Women may wrong by priuiledge of loue: 300
 But should that man of men (*Dido* except)
 Haue taunted me in these opprobrious termes, [960]
 I would haue either drunke his dying bloud,
 Or els I would haue giuen my life in gage.

Dido. Huntsmen, why pitch you not your toyles apae, 30,
 And rowse the light foote Deere from forth th' laire?

Anna. Sister, see, see *Ascanius* in h'
 Bearing his huntspeare brauely in 'is P

D 3 *Dido.* Yea, little sonne — 'his **hand**'

Asca. I, mother: ' - , are you so forward now?
 And better - , I shall one day be a man, 3¹⁰

279 sir - able vnto other armes;
 these: .

loud Hurst etc. ex. Gro. 280 fellowes] follow us *Can.* 287
 s.d. *Asida.* *Dyce*, *Bul.* 294]ye you *Dyce*, *Bul.* (and in all like cases).

Meane time these wanton weapons serue my warre, [970]
Which I will breake betwixt a Lyons iawes.

Dido. What, darrest thou looke a Lyon in the face ?

315 *Asca.* I, and outface him to, doe what he can.

Anna. How like his father speaketh he in all!

Æn. And mought I Hue to see him sacke rich *Thebes*,
And loade his speare with Grecian Princes heads,
Then would I wish me with *Anchises* Tombe,
320 And dead to honour that hath brought me vp.

lar. And might I Hue to see thee shipt away,
And hoyst aloft on *Neptunes* hideous hilles, [980]
Then would I wish me in faire *Didos* armes,
And dead to scorne that hath pursued me so.

325 *Æn.* Stoute friend *Achates*, doest thou know this wood ?

Acha. As I remember, here you shot the Deere
That sau'd your famisht souldiers Hues from death,
When first you set your foote vpon the shoare;
And here we met faire *Venus*, virgine like,

330 Bearing her bowe and quiuer at her backe.

Æn. O, how these irksome labours now delight
And ouerjoy my thoughts with their escape: [990]
Who would not vndergoe all kind of toyle,
To be well stor'd with such a winters tale?

³³⁵ *Dido.* *Æneas*, leaue these dumpes, and lets away,
Some to the mountaines, some vnto the soyle,
You to the vallies ; thou [*to larbas*] vnto the house.

Exeunt all except larbas.

far. I, this it is which wounds me to the death,
To see a Phrygian, far fet o'er the sea,

340 Preferd before a man of maiestie:

O loue, O hate, O cruell womens hearts, [1000]
That imitate the Moone in euery change,

314 dar'st *Dyce, Bui.* 315 to] too *Hurst etc.* 324 S.D. *Aside.*
Dyce, Cun., Bui. 337 S.D. *to larbas*] *Gro.* 337 S.D. *Exeunt. . .]*
Hurst etc. ex. Gro. : Exeunt omnes • ma-nent Q: Exeunt omnes: manet
larbas Gro. 339 far fet] far set *Hurst, Rob.:* far set *Hurst, Rob.:* forfeit
MS. note in Rob. (B.M. 11771. d. 4). o'er] *Dyce, Cun., Bui., Gro. : to Q.*
Hurst Rob. Phrygian o' the farthest sea *Mitf. conj.*

And, like the Planets, euer loue to raunge:
 What shall I doe, thus wronged with disdain? |
 ¶ 4 Reuenge me on *Æneas*, or on her? 345
 On her? fond man, that were to warre gainst heauen,
 And with one shaft prouoke ten thousand darts :
 This Troians end will be thy enuies aime,
 Whose blood will reconcile thee to content,
 And make loue drunken with thy sweete desire : 35°
 But *Dido*, that now holdeth him so deare, [1010]
 Will dye with very tidings of his death :
 But time will discontinue her content,
 And mould her minde vnto newe fancies shapes:
 O God of heauen, turne the hand of fate 355
 Vnto that happie day of my delight ;
 And then ; what then ? *Iarbas* shall but loue :
 So doth he now, though not with equall game,
 That resteth in the riual of thy paine,
 Who nere will cease to soare till he be slaine. *Exit.* 360

[Scena 4.]

The storme. Enter Æneas and Dido in the [1020]
Caue at seuerall times.

Dido. Æneas!

,En. Dido!

Dido. Tell me, deare loue, how found you out this Caue ?

En. By chance, sweete Queene, as *Mars* and *Venus*
 met.

Dido. Why, that was in a net, where we are loose ; 365
 And yet I am not free ; oh, would I were !

En. Why, what is it that *Dido* may desire
 And not obtaine, be it in humane power?

Dido. The thing that I will dye before I aske, [1030]
 And yet desire to haue before I dye. 370

En. It is not ought *Æneas* may atchieue?

Dido. *Aeneas?* no; although his eyes doe pearce.

Æn. What, hath *larbas* angred her in ought ?

And will she be auenged on his life ?

375 *Dido.* Not angred me, except in angring thee.

Æn. Who then of all so cruell may he be,
That should detaine thy eye in his defects? |

Dido. The man that I doe eye where ere I am ; D 4^v

Whose amorous face, like *Pean*, sparkles fire, [1040]

380 When as he butts his beames on *Floras* bed.

Prometheus hath put on *Cupids* shape,
And I must perish in his burning armes:

Æneas O *Aeneas*, quench these flames.

Æn. What ailes my Queene? is she falne sicke of late?

385 *Dido.* Not sicke, my loue ; but sicke I must conceale

The torment, that it bootes me not reueale ;

And yet He speake ; and yet He hold my peace:

Doe shame her worst, I will disclose my grieffe ;

Aeneas, thou art he : what did I say ? [1050]

390 Something it was that now I haue forgot.

Æn. What meanes faire *Dido* by this doubtfull speech ?

Dido. Nay, nothing, but *Aeneas* loues me not

Æn. *Aeneas* thoughts dare not ascend so high

As *Didos* heart, which Monarkes might not scale.

395 *Dido.* It was because I sawe no King like thee,

Whose golden Crowne might ballance my content:

But now that I haue found what to effect,

I followe one that loueth fame for me,

And rather had seeme faire in *Sirens* eyes, [1060]

400 Then to the Carthage Queene that dyes for him.

Æn. If that your maiestie can looke so lowe

As my despised worths, that shun all praise,

With this my hand I giue to you my heart,

374 revenged *Cun.* 381 *Prometheus* now hath *Gro.* (with note '[now] in contemporary MS.'). 385 Not ... I] *Dyce*, *Bui.*: . . . love : but...

Cun. : Not sicke my loue, but sicke, I *Q.*: . . . loue , but sicke,—I *Gro.*

397 effect] affect *Hurst* etc. 398 for] *Q.*, *Hurst*, *Rob.* : 'fore.', *Bui.* : fore *Cun.*, *Gro.*: foreign *Coll.* conj. 399 in] *Dyce* etc. ex. *Cun.* \ om.

Q., *Hurst*, *Rot.* (the two latter reading seen for seeme) : to *Cun.*

And vow, by all the Gods of Hospitalitie,
 By heauen and earth, and my faire brothers bowe, 405
 By *Paphos*, *Capys*, and the purple Sea,
 From whence my radiant mother did descend,
 And by this Sword that saued me from the Greekes,
 Neuer to leaue these newe vpreared walles, [1070]
 Whiles *Dido* Hues and rules in *lunos* towne, 410
 Neuer to like or loue any but her.

Dido. What more then delian musicke doe I heare,
 That calles my soule from forth his lining seate,
 To moue vnto the measures of delight ? |

E i Kind cloudes, that sent forth such a curteous storme, 415
 As made disdain to flye to fancies lap!
 Stoute loue, in mine armes make thy *Italy*,
 Whose Crowne and kingdome rests at thy commande:
Sickens, not *Aeneas*, be thou calde ; [1080]
 The King of *Carthage*, not *Anchises* sonne: 420
 Hold, take these lewels at thy Louers hand,
 These golden bracelets, and this wedding ring,
 Wherewith my husband woo'd me yet a maide,
 And be thou king of *Libia* by my guift.

Exeunt to the Caue.

Actus 4. Scena i.

Enter Achates, Cupid as Ascanius, Iarbas, and Anna.

Acha. Did euer men see such a sudden storme ?
 Or day so cleare so suddenly orecast? [1090]

Iar. I thinke some fell Inchantresse dwelleth here,
 That can call them forth when as she please,
 And diue into blacke tempests treasure, 5
 When as she meanes to maske the world with cloudes.

Anna. In all my life I neuer knew the like;

407 descend] ascend *BuL* 421 hand, s.D. *Giving jew els, &c. Dyce, BuL*
 424 s.D. *Exeunt..*] ' They retire into the innermost part of the cave.' *Dyce*.
 S.D. *Cupid as*] *Hurst etc.: om. Q.* 'Scene, before the cave.' *Dyce, Bui*.
 i *Line* 1067 *Gro.* 4 One that can ... *Miff, conj., Gro., Deigh. conj.:*
 That can call forth the winds whenas . . . *Bui. conj.*

It haild, it snowde, it lightned, all at once.

Acha. I thinke it was the diuels reuelling night,

10 There was such hurly burly in the heauens:

Doubtles *Apollos* Axeltree is crackt,

Or aged *Atlas* shoulder out of ioynt, [1100]

The motion was so ouer violent.

lar. In all this coyle, where haue ye left the Queene ?

15 *Asca.* Nay, where is my warlike father, can you tell?

Anna. Behold where both of them come forth the Caue.

lar. Come forth the Caue ? can heauen endure this sight ?

larbas, curse that vnreuenging *lone,*

Whose flintie darts slept in *Tiphceus* den,

20 Whiles these adulterers surfetted with sinne :

Nature, why mad'st me not some poysonous beast,

That with the sharpnes of my edged sting | [1110]

I might haue stakte them both vnto the earth,

E r*

Whil'st they were sporting in this darksome Caue ?

[*Enter Æneas and Dido,*]

25 *Æin.* The ayre is cleere, and Southerne windes are
whist;

Come, *Dido,* let vs hasten to the towne,

Since gloomie *Æolus* doth cease to frowne.

Dido. *Achates* and *Ascanius,* well met.

Æn. Faire *Anna,* how escapt you from the shower?

30 *Anna.* As others did, by running to the wood.

Dido. But where were you, *larbas,* all this while?

lar. Not with *Æneas* in the vgly Caue. [nao]

Dido. I see *Æneas* sticketh in your minde;

But I will soone put by that stumbling blocke,

35 And quell those hopes that thus employ your cares.

Exeunt.

15 where's *Hurst* etc. 19 *Tiphæus*] *Hurst* etc. : *Tiphous* *Q.* 24
Caue? S.D. *Aside.* *Bui.* S.D. *Enter.* . .] *Hurst, Rob. Cun., Gro.: om. Q:*
Enter, from the cave, Æneas and Dido. *Dyct, Bui.* 35 cares] *Hurst* etc.;
cares *Q.*

[Scena 2.]

Enters Iarbas to Sacrifize.

Tar. Come, seruants, come; bring forth the Sacrifize,
 That I may pacific that gloomy *loue*,
 Whose emptie Altars haue enlarged our illes.
 Eternall *loue*, great master of the Clowdes,
 Father of gladnesse and all frolicke thoughts 40
 That with thy gloomie hand corrects the heauen, [1130]
 When ayrie creatures warre amongst themselues :
 Heare, heare, O, heare *Iarbas* plaining prayers,
 Whose hideous ecchoes make the welkin howle,
 And all the woods *Eliza* to resound : 45
 The woman that thou wild vs entertaine,
 Where, straying in our borders vp and downe,
 She crau'd a hide of ground to build a towne,
 With whom we did deuide both lawes and land,
 And all the frutes that plentie els sends forth, 50
 Scorning our loues and royall marriage rites, [140]
 Yeelds vp her beautie to a strangers bed ;
 Who, hauing wrought her shame, is straight way fled :
 Now, if thou beest a pitying God of power,
 On whom ruth and compassion euer waites, 55
 Redresse these wrongs, and warne him to his ships,
 That now afflicts me with his flattering eyes. |

E2

*Enter Anna.**Anna.* How now, *Iarbas*; at your prayers so hard?*Iar.* I, *Anna*; is there ought you would with me?

Anna. Nay, no such waightie busines of import, [1150] 60
 But may be slackt vntill another time :
 Yet, if you would partake with me the cause
 Of this deuotion that detaineth you,

Scena 2.] *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce: om. Q. S.D. Enter Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 'Scene, an apartment in the dwelling of Iarbas.' *Dyce: 'a room in Iarbas' house.' Bui.*
 36 Line 1103 *Gro.* 38 illes. *S.D. Seruants bring in the sacrifice, and then exeunt. Dyce, Bui.* 46-51 The woman—that. . . forth,—Scorning *Gro.*
 47 Where] When *Coll. conj.* 57 eyes] lips *Coll. conj.*

I would be thankfull for such curtesie.

65 *lar. Anna*, against this Troian doe I pray,
Who seekes to rob me of thy Sisters loue,
And diue into her heart by coloured lookes.

Anna. Alas, poore King, that labours so in vaine,
For her that so delighteth in thy paine:

70 Be rul'd by me, and seeke some other loue, [1160]
Whose yeelding heart may yeeld thee more reliefe.

lar. Mine eye is fixt where fancie cannot start;
O, leaue me, leaue me to my silent thoughts,
That register the numbers of my ruth,

75 And I will either moue the thoughtles flint,
Or drop out both mine eyes in drisling teares,
Before my sorrowes tide haue any stint.

Anna. I will not leaue *larhas*, whom I loue,
In this delight of dying pensiuenes:

80 Away with *Dido!* *Anna* be thy song; [1170]
Anna, that doth admire thee more then heauen.

lar. I may nor will list to such loathsome change,
That intercepts the course of my desire:

Seruants, come fetch these emptie vessels here;

85 For I will flye from these alluring eyes,
That doe pursue my peace where ere it goes. *Exit.*

Anna. larhas, stay, louing *Iarbas*, stay,

For I haue honey to present thee with :

Hard hearted, wilt not deigne to heare me speake?

90 lie follow thee with outcryes nere the lesse, [1180]
And strewe thy walkes with my discheueld haire. *Exit.*

[Scena 3.]

E 3v

Enter Æneas alone.

Æn. Carthage, my friendly host, adue,
Since destinie doth call me from thy shoare.

86 goes] flies *Coll. conj.* S.D. *Exit.*—*Servants re-enter and carry out the vessels, &c. Dycc, Bui.* Scena 3.] *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce: om. Q.* s.D. *alone] om. Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 'Scene, an apartment in Dido's palace.' *Dyce: 'a room in...'* *Bui.* 92 *Lint* 1160 *Gro.* 93 thy] *Hurst etc.: the Q.*

Hermes this night, descending in a dreame,
 Hath summond me to fruitfull *Italy*; 95
loue wils it so ; my mother wils it so:
 Let my *Phenissa* graunt, and then I goe :
 Graunt she or no, *Æneas* must away ;
 Whose golden fortunes, clogd with courtly ease, [1190]
 Cannot ascend to *Fames* immortall house, 100
 Or banquet in bright honors burnisht hall,
 Till he hath furrowed *Neptunes* glassie fieldes,
 And cut a passage through his toples hilles.
Achates', come forth; *Sergestus*, *IllioneuSi*
CloanthuSy haste away; *Æneas* calles. 105

Enter Achates, Cloanthus, Sergestus,
and Illioneus.

Acha. What willes our Lord, or wherefore did he call?
En. The dreames (braue mates) that did beset my bed,
 When sleepe but newly had imbrast the night, [1201]
 Commaunds me leaue these vnrenowmed reames,
 Whereas Nobilitie abhors to stay, 110
 And none but base *Æneas* will abide:
 Aboutd, aboutd, since Fates doe bid aboutd,
 And slice the Sea with sable coloured ships,
 On whom the nimble windes may all day waight,
 And follow them, as footemen, through the deepe: 115
 Yet *Dido* casts her eyes, like anchors, out,
 To stay my Fleete from loosing forth the Bay : [1210]
 Come backe, come backe, I heare her crye afarre,
 And let me linke thy bodie to my lips,
 That, tyed together by the striuing tongues, 120
 We may as one saile into *Italy*.

Acha. Banish that ticing dame from forth your mouth,
 And follow your foreseeing starres in all; |

E 3 This is no life for men at armes to Hue,

107 dream *Hurst etc. ex. BuL, Gro.* 109 reames] *Gro.:* reams *Dyce*¹:
 realms *Dyce., Cun., Bul.* beames *Q, Hurst, Rob.* 118 a farre *Q.*
 119 thy] *Dyce etc. :* my *Q:* my body to thy lips *Hurst, Rob.*

125 Where daliance doth consume a Souldiers strength,
 And wanton motions of alluring eyes
 Effeminate our mindes, inur'd to warre. [1220]

Illio. Why, let vs build a Citie of our owne,
 And not stand lingering here for amorous lookes :

130 Will *Dido* raise old *Priam* forth his graue,
 And build the towne againe the Greekes did burne ?
 No, no, she cares not how we sinke or swimme,
 So she may haue ,*Æneas* in her armes.

Cloan. To *Italy*, sweete friends, to *Italy*;

135 We will not stay a minute longer here.

En. Troians, abourd, and I will follow you :

Exeunt all except Æneas.]

I faine would goe, yet beautie calks me backe: [1230]

To leaue her so, and not once say farewell,
 Were to transgresse against all lawes of loue:

140 But, if I vse such ceremonious thankes
 As parting friends accustome on the shoare,
 Her siluer armes will coll me round about,
 And teares of pearle crye, stay, *Æneas*, stay:
 Each word she sayes will then containe a Crowne,

145 And euery speech be ended with a kisse :

I may not dure this female drudgerie ;

To sea, *Æneas*, finde out *Italy*. *Exit.* [1240]

[Scena 4.]

Enter Dido and Anna.

Dido. O *Anna*, runne vnto the water side ;

They say *Æneas* men are going abourd ;

150 It may be he will steale away with them :

Stay not to answeere me, runne, *Anna*, runne. [*Exit Anna.*]

O foolish Troians, that would steale from hence,

136 S.D. *Exeunt.* . .] *Dyce, Bui.*: om. *Q, Hurst, Rob., Cun.*: *Ex. the rest Gro.* 138 say, farewell *Hurst, Rob., Cun., Gro.* 142 coll] coil *Hurst, Rob., Coll. conj. Cun.* (doubted in notes). 147 S.D. *exeunt. Hurst, Rob. Cun.* Scena 4.] *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce:* om. *Q.* 'Another apartment in *Dido's* palace.' *Dyce* a room in ... *Bui.* 148 Line 1217 *Gro.* 151 S.D. *Exit.* ..] *Dyce, Bui.* om. *Q. and others.*

And not let *Dido* vnderstand their drift:
 I would haue giuen *Achates* store of gold,
 And *Illioneus* gum and Libian spice; 155
 The common souldiers rich imbrodered coates, [1250]
 And siluer whistles to controule the windes,
 Which *Circes* sent *Sicheus* when he liued: |
 E 3^v Vnworthie are they of a Queenes reward:
 See where they come; how might I doe to chide? 160

*Enter Anna, with Æneas, Achates, Illioneus,
 and Sergestus.*

Anna. Twas time to runne; *Æneas* had been gone;
 The sailes were hoysing vp, and he abourd.

Dido. Is this thy loue to me?

Æn. O princely *Dido*, giue me leaue to speake; [1260]
 I went to take my farewell of *Achates*. 165

Dido. How haps *Achates* bid me not farewell?

Acha. Because I feard your grace would keepe me here.

Dido. To rid thee of that doubt, abourd againe;
 I charge thee put to sea, and stay not here.
Acha. Then let *Æneas* goe abourd with vs. 170

Dido. Get you abourd; *Æneas* meanes to stay.

Æn. The sea is rough, the windes blow to the shoare.

Dido. O false *Æneas*, now the sea is rough,
 But when you were abourd, twas calme enough; [1270]
 Thou and *Achates* ment to saile away. 175

Æn. Hath not the Carthage Queene mine onely sonne?
 Thinkes *Dido* I will goe and leaue him here?

Dido. *Æneas*, pardon me, for I forgot
 That yong *Ascanius* lay with me this night:
 Loue made me ielalous; but, to make amends, 180
 Weare the emperiall Crowne of *Libia*,

Giving him her crowne and sceptre.]

158 *Circe Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 160 s.D. *Re-enter Dyce, Bui. Achates, Cloanthus, Illioneus Dyce', Cun., Bui. Sergestus and Attendants. Rob., Cun.: Scrgestus and Carthaginian Lords. Dyce, Bui.* 162 hoisting *Hurst', Rob., Cun.: hoysing Gro.* 172 wind blows *Hurst', Rob., Cun.* 181 S.D. *Giving . . .] Dyce, Bui.: om. Q, Hurst, Rob., Cun.: Places it on his head, and gives the sceptre. Gro.*

Sway thou the Punike Scepter in my steede,
And punish me, *Aeneas*, for this crime.

Aen. This kisse shall be faire *Didos* punishment. [u80]

185 *Dido.* O, how a Crowne becomes *Aeneas* head!

Stay here, *Aeneas*, and commaund as King.

Aen. How vaine am I to weare this Diadem,
And beare this golden Scepter in my hand!

A Burgonet of steele, and not a Crowne,
190 A Sword, and not a Scepter, fits *ALneas*.

Dido. O, keepe them still, and let me gaze my fill:

Now lookes *Aeeas* like immortall *loue*; |

O, where is *Ganimed*, to hold his cup, E 4

And *Mercury*, to flye for what he calles? [1290]

195 Ten thousand *Cupids* houer in the ayre,

And fanne it in *Aeneas* louely face:

O, that the Clowdes were here wherein thou fleest,

That thou and I vnseene might sport our selues :

Heauens, enuious of our ioyes, is waxen pale ;

200 And when we whisper, then the starres fall downe,

To be partakers of our honey talke.

Aen. O *Dido*, patronesse of all our Hues,

When I leaue thee, death be my punishment:

Swell, raging seas; frowne, wayward destinies; [1300]

205 Blow, windes ; threaten, ye Rockes and sandie shelfes ;

This is the harbour that *Aeneas* seekes ;

Lets see what tempests can anoy me now.

Dido. Not all the world can take thee from mine armes ;

Aeneas may commaund as many Moores,

210 As in the Sea are little water drops:

And now, to make experience of my loue,

Faire sister *Anna*, leade my louer forth,

And, seated on my Gennet, let him ride,

As *Didos* husband, through the punicke streetes; [1310]

215 And will my guard, with Mauritanian darts,

To waite vpon him as their soueraigne Lord.

190 *Aecas.* s.D. *Offers to return them. Gro.* 197 fled'st *Dycc, Bui.*
199 Heauen *Hurst etc.* 208 thee] that *Rob., Cun.*

Anna. What if the Citizens repine thereat?

Dido. Those that dislike what *Dido* giues in charge,
Commaund my guard to slay for their offence:
Shall vulgar pesants storme at what I doe? 220
The ground is mine that giues them sustenance,
The ayre wherein they breathe, the water, fire,
All that they haue, their lands, their goods, their Hues,
And I, the Goddesses of all these, commaund [1320]
Aeneas ride as Carthaginian King. 325

Acha. *Aeneas*, for his parentage, deserues
As large a kingdome as is *Libia*.

Æn. I, and vnlesse the destinies be false,
I shall be planted in as rich a land. |

E 4^v *Dido.* Speake of no other land, this land is thine, 230
Dido is thine, henceforth He call thee Lord:
Doe as I bid thee, sister; leade the way,
And from a turret He behold my loue.

Æn. Then here in me shall flourish *Priams* race, [1330]
And thou and I, *Achates*, for reuenge 235
For 7V0y, for *Priam*, for his fiftie sonnes,
Our kinsmens Hues, and thousand guiltles soules,
Will leade an hoste against the hatefull Greekes,
And fire proude *Lacedemon* ore their heads.

Exit, with Trojans.

Dido. Speakes not *Aeneas* like a Conqueror? 240
O blessed tempests that did driue him in,
O happie sand that made him runne aground;
Henceforth you shall be our Carthage Gods:
I, but it may be he will leaue my loue, [1340]
And seeke a forraine land .calde *Italy*: 245
O, that I had a charme to keepe the windes
Within the closure of a golden ball,
Or that the Tyrrhen sea were in mine armes,

337 Hues] *Dyce etc.* : loues *Q. Hurst, Rob.* 239 S.D. *Exit. . .] Exit. Q. Hurst: Exeunt all but Dido and Attendants. Rob., Cun. :... all except Dido and Carthaginian Lords. Dyce, Bui.: Exeunt Aeneas, Anna, and Trojans. Gro.* 243 be our] be 'mong our *Dyce conj.* : be of our *Bul. Gro.* 'Why not say that "our" is a dissyllable?' *Coll. (to Dycfs note).*

That he might suffer shipwracke on my breast,
250 As oft as he attempts to hoyst vp saile!

I must preuent him; wishing will not serue:
Goe, bid my Nurse take yong *Ascanius*,
And beare him in the countrey to her house;

Æneas will not goe without his sonne: [1350]

255 Yet, lest he should, for I am full of feare,
Bring me his oares, his tackling, and his sailes:

{*Exit a Lord.*}

What if I sinke his ships? O, heele frowne!
Better he frowne, then I should dye for grieffe:

I cannot see him frowne; it may not be:

260 Armies of foes resolu'd to winne this towne,
Or impious traitors vowde to haue my life,

Affright me not; onely *Æneas* frowne

Is that which terrifies poore *Didos* heart;

Not bloudie speares, appearing in the ayre, [1360]

265 Presage the downfall of my Emperie,

Nor blazing Commets threatens *Didos* death; |

It is *Æneas* frowne that ends my daies: F r

If he forsake me not, I neuer dye,

For in his lookes I see eternitie,

270 And heele make me immortall with a kisse.

Re-enter the Lord.

{*Lord*} Your Nurse is gone with yong *Ascanus*;

And heres *Æneas* tackling, oares, and sailes.

Dido. Are these the sailes that, in despite of me, [1370]

Packt with the windes to beare *Æneas* hence?

275 He hang ye in the chamber where I lye;

Driue, if you can, my house to *Italy*:

He set the casement open, that the windes

256 S.D. *Exit* . . .] *Gro.*: *om. Q. Hurst: One of the attendants goes out. Rob., Cun. : Exit First Lord. Dyce, Bui* 257 he will *Hurst etc.* 266 threaten *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 270 S.D. *Re-enter*...] *Enter a Lord. Q, Hurst, Rob. ; . . . with Attendants. Cun. : Re-enter First Lord with tacklĳng, &c. Dyct¹ . . . Lord, with Attendants carrying tacklĳng, &c. Dyce^r, Bui. : Re-enter a Lord with Attendants. Gro.* 271 *Lord.*~\ *Hurst, Rob., Cun., Gro. ; om. Q: First Lord. Dyce, Bui.* 276 *Italy: S.D. tears the sails Gro.*

May enter in, and once againe conspire
 Against the life of me, poore Carthage Queene:
 But, though he goe, he stayes in Carthage still; a80
 And let rich Carthage fleete vpon the seas,
 So I may haue *Aeneas* in mine armes.
 Is this the wood that grew in Carthage plaines, [1380]
 And would be toyling in the watrie billowes,
 To rob their mistresse of her Troian guest ? 285
 O cursed tree, hadst thou but wit or sense,
 To measure how I prize *Aeneas* loue,
 Thou wouldst haue leapt from out the Sailers hands,
 And told me that *Aeneas* ment to goe:
 And yet I blame thee not, thou art but wood. 290
 The water, which our Poets terme a Nimph,
 Why did it suffer thee to touch her breast,
 And shrunke not backe, knowing my loue was there? [1390]
 The water is an Element, no Nimph:
 Why should I blame *Aeneas* for his flight ? 295
 O *Dido*, blame not him, but breake his oares;
 These were the instruments that launcht him forth:
 Theres not so much as this base tackling too,
 But dares to heape vp sorrowe to my heart:
 Was it not you that hoysed vp these sailes ? 300
 Why burst you not, and they fell in the seas ? |
 F i' For this will *Dido* tye ye full of knots,
 And sheere ye all asunder with her hands: [oo]
 Now serue to chastize shipboyes for their faults,
 Ye shall no more offend the Carthage Queene. 305
 Now let him hang my fauours on his masts,
 And see if those will serue in steed of sailes :
 For tackling, let him take the chaines of gold
 Which I bestowd vpon his followers:
 In steed of oares, let him vse his hands, 310
 And swim to *Italy*: He keepe these sure ;
 Come, beare them in. *Exeunt.*

280 though ye go *Dyce, Cun., BuL* 284 watery *Dyce, Cun., Bui.*
 296 oares; S.D. *breaks them Gro.* 303 hands: S.D. *knots andcuts them Gro.*
 306 Now, let *Dyce, Bui.* 312 S.D. *Exit. Q, Gro.*

[Scene 5.]

Enter the Nurse with Cupid for Ascanius. [1410]

Nurse. My Lord *Ascanius*, ye must goe with me.

Ciupid. Whither must I goe? He stay with my mother.

315 *Nurse.* No, thou shalt goe with me vnto my house:

I haue an Orchard that hath store of plums,
Browne Almonds, Seruises, ripe Figs and Dates,
Dewberries, Apples, yellow Oreneges;

A garden where are Bee hiues full of honey,
320 Musk-roses, and a thousand sort of flowers;

And in the midst doth run a siluer streame,
Where thou shalt see the red gild fishes leape, [1420]

White Swannes, and many louely water fowles:

Now speake, *Ascanius*, will ye goe or no?

325 *C, tp, d.* Come, come, He goe; how farre hence is your house?

Nurse. But hereby, child; we shall get thither straight.

Cupid. Nurse, I am wearie; will you carrie me?

Nurse. I, so youle dwell with me, and call me mother.

Cupid. So youle loue me, I care not if I doe.

330 *Nurse.* That I might Hue to see this boy a man!

How pretilie he laughs: goe, ye wagge,

Youle be a twigger when you come to age. [1430]

Say *Dido* what she will, I am not old;

He be no more a widowe, I am young,

335 He haue a husband, or els a louer. |

Cupid. A husband and no teeth!

F 2

Nurse. O, what meane I to haue such foolish thoughts!

Foolish is loue, a toy: O sacred loue!

If there be any heauen in earth, tis loue:

340 Especially in women of your yeares.

312 Scene 5.] *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce* om. *Q.* 'Scene, the country. *Dyce*:
1 the open country near Carthage.' *Bui.* S.D. for] as *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 313
Line 1374 gro- 33¹ laughs; S.D. He toys with her *Gro.* goe] Go, go,
Mitf. conj.: Go to *Bui.* (from *Athenæum*, No. 2977). 333 trigger *Coll.*

conj. 338 Foolish is loue, a toy: O] ... toy, O *Q.*: ... toy. O *Hurst, Rob.,*
Dyce, *Cun.* ... toy.—O *Dyce*, *Bid.*, *Gro.*: Foolish I is love a toy? *Coll. conj.*

340-2 *Collier* suggests giving these lines to *Cupid*, the *Nurse* to resume at
!• 343. 340 your] our *Deigh. conj.*

Blush, blush for shame ; why shouldst thou thinke of loue ?

A graue, and not a louer, fits thy age: [1440]

A graue, why ? I may Hue a hundred yeares ;

Fourescore is but a girles age: loue is sweete:

My vaines are withered, and my sinewes drie; 345

Why doe I thinke of loue now I should dye?

Cupid. Come, Nurse.

Nurse. Well, if he come a wooing he shall speede;

O, how vnwise was I to say him nay! *Exeunt'*

Actus 5. [Scene i.]

*Enter Æneas with a paper in his hand, drawing the
platforme of the citie; with him Achates, [1450]
Sergestus, Cloanthus, and Illioneus.*

Æn. Triumph, my mates, our trauels are at end ;

Here will *Æneas* build a statelier *Troy*,

Then that which grim *Atrides* ouerthrew:

Carthage shall vaunt her pettie walles no more,

For I will grace them with a fairer frame, 5

And clad her in a Chrystall liuerie,

Wherein the day may euermore delight:

From golden *India Ganges* will I fetch,

Whose wealthie streames may waite vpon her towers,

And triple wise intrench her round about: [1461] ¹⁰

The Sunne from *Egypt* shall rich odors bring,

Wherewith his burning beames, like labouring Bees,

That loade their thighes with *Hyblas* honeys spoyles,

Shall here vnburden their exhaled sweetes,

And plant our pleasant suburbes with her fumes. 15

Acha. What length or bredth shal this braue towne
cotaine?

343 A graue i why, I Dyce, *Gun., Bui.* Scene i.] *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce:*
om. Q. S.D. Sergestus' Dyce, BuL, Gro.: om. Q, Hurst, Rob., Cun. Scene,
an apartment in Dido's palace.' Dyce\ ' . . . a room in . . . ' *Bul i Line*
1412 *Gro.* 13 honey-spoils *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 15 with their fumes
Dyce¹ conf.y Dyce² BuL And scent our pleasant suburbs with perfumes *Elze*
(Notes on *Eliz. Dram.*)

Æn. Not past foure thousand paces at the most. |

Illio. But what shall it be calde ? *Troy*, as before ? F².

Æ That haue **I not** determind with **my** selfe. [1470]

20 *Cloan.* Let it be term'd *Ænea*, by your name.

Serg. Rather *Ascania*, by your little sonne.

Æn. Nay, I will haue it calde *Anchisxon*,
Of my old fathers name.

Enter Hermes with Ascanins.

Hermes. *Æneas*, stay; *Tones* Herald bids thee stay.

25 *Æn.* Whom doe I see ? *Tones* winged messenger ?

Welcome to *Carthage* new erected towne.

Hermes. Why, cosin, stand you building Cities here,
And beautifying the Empire of this Queene, [1480]

While *Italy* is cleane out of thy minde ?

30 To too forgetfull of thine owne affayres,

Why wilt thou so betray thy sonnes good hap?

The king of Gods sent me from highest heauen,

To sound this angrie message in thine eares :

Vaine man, what Monarky expectst thou here?

35 Or with what thought sleepest thou in *Libia* shoare ?

If that all glorie hath forsaken thee,

And thou despise the praise of such attempts ;

Yet thinke vpon *Ascanius* prophesie, [J49°]

And yong *Iulus* more then thousand yeares,

40 Whom I haue brought from *Ida*, where he slept,

And bore yong *Cupid* vnto *Cypresse* He.

Æn. This was my mother that beguild the Queene,

And made me take my brother for my sonne :

No maruell, *Dido*, though thou be in loue,

45 That daylie danlest *Cupid* in thy armes :

Welcome, sweet child ; where hast thou been this long ?

Asca. Eating sweet Comfites with Queene *Didos* maide,

Who euer since hath luld me in her armes. [1500]

30 Too, too *Hurst, Rod., Dyce¹, Cun., Gro.* : Too-too *Dyce², BuL* 35
on *Lybia's Hurst, Rob., Cun.* 39 *Iulus*, more *Hurst, Rob., Gro.*: *Iulus'*
more *Dyce, Cun., BuL* 45 dandiest *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.*

Æn. *Æn Sergestus*, beare him hence vnto our ships,
Lest *Dido*, spying him, keepe him for a pledge. 50

[*Exit Sergestus with Ascanius.*]

Hermes. Spendst thou thy time about this little boy,
And giuest not eare vnto the charge I bring ? |
F 3 I tell thee, thou must straight to *Italy*,

Or els abide the wrath of frowning *lone*. [*Exit,*]

Æn. How should I put into the raging deepe, 55
Who haue no sailes nor tackling for my ships ?
What, would the Gods haue me, *Deucalion* like,
Flote vp and downe where ere the billowes driue? [1510]
Though she repairde my fleete and gaue me ships,
Yet hath she tane away my oares and masts, 60
And left me neither saile nor sterne abourd.

Enter to them Iarbas.

Iar. How now, *Æneas*, sad? what meanes these dumpes?

Æn. *Iarbas*, I am cleane besides my selfe ;
loue hath heapt on me such a desperate charge,
Which neither art nor reason may atchieue, 65
Nor I deuise by what meanes to contriue.

Iar. As how, I pray? may I entreate you tell? [1520]

Æ. With speede he bids me saile to *Italy*,
When as I want both rigging for my fleete,
And also furniture for these my men. 70

Iar. If that be all, then cheare thy drooping lookes,
For I will furnish thee with such supplies:
Let some of those thy followers goe with me,
And they shall haue what thing so ere thou needst.

Æn. Thankes, good *Iarbas*, for thy friendly ayde, 75
Achates and the rest shall waite on thee,
Whil'st I rest thankfull for this curtesie. [1530]

Exit Iarbas and Æneas traine.

Now will I haste vnto *Launian* shoare,

50 s.D. *Exit.* . .] *DycCy Bui.* : *om. Q.* 52 *giv'st Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 54 S.D. *Exit*] *Dyce, Bul, Gro.* : *om. Q.* 61 S.D. *Enter Iarbas. Dyce Bui.* 62
mean *Hurst etc. ex. Bul. Gro.* 77 s.D. *Exeunt all except Æneas. Dyce, Bui.*

And raise a new foundation to old *Troy*.
 80 Witnes the Gods, and witnes heauen and earth,
 How loth I am to leaue these *Libian* bounds,
 But that eternall *Iupiter* commands.

Enter Dido.

Dido. I feare I sawe ,*Eneas* little sonne,
 Led by *Achates* to the Troian fleete: |
 85 If it be so, his father meanes to flye: [1540] F 3^v
 But here he is; now, *Dido*, trie thy wit.
ALneas, wherefore goe thy men abourd?
 Why are thy ships new rigd? or to what end,
 Launcht from the hauen, lye they in the Rhode?

90 Pardon me, though I aske; loue makes me aske.

Æn. O, pardon me, if I resolute thee why:
Æneas will not faine with his deare loue ;
 I must from hence: this day, swift *Mercury*,
 When I was laying a platforme for these walles,
 95 Sent from his father *Ione*, appeared to me, [1550]
 And in his name rebukt me bitterly
 For lingering here, neglecting *Italy*.

Dido. But yet *Æneas* will not leaue his loue?

Æn. I am commaunded by immortall loue,
 100 To leaue this towne and passe to *Italy*,
 And therefore must of force.

Dido. These words proceed not from ,*Eneas* heart.

Æn. Not from my heart, for I can hardly goe ;
 And yet I may not stay: *Dido*, farewell.
 105 *Dido.* Farewell! is this the mends for *Didos* loue ?
 Doe Troians vse to quit their Louers thus? [1561]
 Fare well may *Dido*, so *Æneas* stay;
 I dye, if my ,*Æneas* say farewell.

Æn. Then let me goe and neuer say farewell:

82 commands. S.D. *Exit. Hurst, Rob., Cun.* After this line a new scene
 (Scene !') is begun in *Rob., Cun.* The other eds. do not divide this act at
 all. S.D. *Enter Dido.*'] *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.:* *Enter Dido and Æneas. Q :*

Enter Dido and Æneas severally. Gro. 86 wit. S.D. *Aside. Dyce, BuL*
 wit. S.D. *Enter Æneas. Hurst, Rob., Cun.* 89 road *Hurst ttc. ex. Gro.*

Let me goe ; farewell: I must from hence. no

Dido. These words are poyson to poore *Didos* soule:

O, speake like my *Æneas*, like my loue.

Why look'st thou toward the sea? the time hath been

When *Didos* beautie chaine thine eyes to her :

Am I lesse faire then when thou sawest me first? [1570] "5

O, then, *Æneas*, tis for grieffe of thee:

Say thou wilt stay in *Carthage* with thy Queene,

And *Didos* beautie will returne againe.

Æneas, say, how canst thou take thy leaue?

Wilt thou kisse *Didol* O, thy lips haue sworne 120

To stay with *Dido*: canst thou take her hand ? |

F 4 Thy hand and mine haue plighted mutuall faith,

Therefore, vnkind *Æneas*, must thou say,

Then let me goe, and neuer say farewell. [1579]

En. O Queene of *Carthage*, wert thou vgly blacke, 125

Æneas could not choose but hold thee deare;

Yet must he not gainsay the Gods behest.

Dido. The Gods? what Gods be those that seeke my
death ?

Wherein haue I offended *Iupiter*,

That he should take *Æneas* from mine armes ? 130

O no, the Gods wey not what Louers doe ;

It is *Æneas* calles *Æneas* hence,

And wofull *Dido*, by these blubbred cheekes,

By this right hand, and by our spousall rites,

Desires *Æneas* to remaine with her: [1590] 135

Si bene quitid de te merui, fait attt tibi quidquam

Dulce meum, miserere domus lab en tis; & is tarn,

Oro, si quis adhuc precibus locus, exue mentem.

En. *Desine meque tuis incendere teque querelis ;*

Italiam non sponte sequor. 140

no Let me go; farewell none: I *Dyce*: Let me go is farewell! I *Cun.*:
O let me goe,—farewell,—I *Gro.*: Let me go, farewell or none I *Gro. con.*: ;
Let me forgo farewell *Deigh. conj.* 114 chaine] *Rob. etc.*: chaungd *Q.*
115 saw'st *Hurst etc.* 117 thy] *Hurst etc.*, 'but "my" yields a good
sense.' *Gro.*: my *Q.* 119 leaue? *S.D.* *He kisses her Gro.* 124 farewell.]
farewell? *Dyce*², *Bui.* 138 *adhuc*] *Hurst etc.* : *ad huc Q.*

- Dido.* Hast thou forgot how many neighbour kings
 Were vp in armes, for making thee my loue?
 How *Carthage* did rebell, *larbas* storme,
 And all the world calles me a second *Helen*,
 145 For being intangled by a strangers lookes? [1600]
 So thou wouldst proue as true as *Paris* did,
 Would, as faire *Troy* was, *Carthage* might be sackt,
 And I be calde a second *Helena*
 Had I a sonne by thee, the grieffe were lesse,
 150 That I might see *Æneas* in his face
 Now if thou goest, what canst thou leaue behind,
 But rather will augment then ease my woe?
Æn. In vaine, my loue, thou spendst thy fainting breath;
 If words might moue me, I were ouercome. [1609]
 155 *Dido.* And wilt thou not be mou'd with *Didos* words?
 Thy mother was no Goddesses, periurd man,
 Nor *Dardanus* the author of thy stocke;
 But thou art sprung from *Scythian Caucasus*, \
 And Tygers of *Hircania* gaue thee sucke. F 4^v
 160 Ah, foolish *DidO*, to forbear this long!
 Wast thou not wrackt vpon this *Libian* shoare,
 And cam'st to *Dido* like a Fisher swaine?
 Repairde not I thy ships, made thee a King,
 And all thy needie followers Noblemen?
 165 O Serpent, that came creeping from the shoare, [1620]
 And I for pitie harbord in my bosome;
 Wilt thou now slay me with thy venomd sting,
 And hisse at *Dido* for preseruing thee?
 Goe, goe, and spare not; seeke out *Italy*:
 170 I hope that that which loue forbids me doe,
 The Rockes and Sea-gulfes will performe at large,
 And thou shalt perish in the billowes waies,
 To whom poore *Dido* doth bequeath reuenge:
 I, traytor; and the waues shall cast thee vp,
 175 Where thou and false *Achates* first set foote; [1630]

144 calles] call'd *Hurst etc. tx. BuL, Gro.*
 161 wreck'd *Hurst etc. ex. Dyce', Gro.*

160 this] thus *Hurst, Rob.*

Which, if it chaunce, He giue ye buriall,
 And weepe vpon your liueles carcases,
 Though thou nor he will pitie me a whit.
 Why star'st thou in my face ? if thou wilt stay,
 Leape in mine armes ; mine armes are open wide: 180
 If not, turne from me, and lie turne from thee:
 For, though thou hast the heart to say farewell,
 I haue not power to stay thee: [*Exit Æneas.*] is he
 gone?

I, but heele come againe, he cannot goe ;
 He loues me to too well to serue me so: [1640] 185
 Yet he, that in my sight would not relent,
 Will, being absent, be obdurate still.
 By this is he got to the water side;
 And, see, the Sailers take him by the hand,
 But he shrinkes backe; and now, remembring me, 190
 Returnes amaine: welcome, welcome, my loue !
 But wheres *Æneas*? ah, hees gone, hees gone !

Enter Anna]

Anna. What meanes my sister, thus to raue and crye?

Dido. O *Anna*, my *Æneas* is abourd,

And, leauing me, will saile to *Italy*. \ [1650] 195

G i Once didst thou goe, and he came backe againe ;

Now bring him backe, and thou shalt be a Queene,

And I will Hue a priuate life with him,

Anna. Wicked *Æneas*.

Dido. Call him not wicked, sister ; speake him faire, 200

And looke vpon him with a Mermaides eye;

Tell him, I neuer vow'd at *Aulis* gulfe

The desolation of his natiue *Troy*,

Nor sent a thousand ships vnto the walles,

177 lifeless *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 182 say, farewell *Hurst, Rob., Gro.*
 183 s.D. *Exit .Æneas.] Hurst etc. ex. Gro. om. Q: turns away Gro.*
 gone' s.D. *Exit .Æneas. Gro.* 185 too, too *Hurst, Rob., Dyce, Cun. :*
 too-too *Dyce, Bui.* 187 obdurate] *Hurst etc. : abdurate Q.* 192 S.D.
Enter Anna.] Hurst etc.: om. Q. 200 wicked, sister ; speake] *Hurst,*
Rob., Cun. : . . . sister: speak Dyce, Bui.: wicked, sister speake Q: wicked
 sister, speake *Gro.*

205 Nor euer violated faith to him: [1660]

Request him gently (*Anna*) to returne;
I craue but this, he stay a tide or two,
That I may learne to beare it patiently;
If he depart thus suddenly, I dye:

Run, *Anna*, run; stay not to answere me.

Anna. I goe, faire sister; heauens graunt good successe.

Exit Anna.

Enter the Nurse.

Nurse. O *Dido*, your little sonne *Ascanius*
Is gone! he lay with me last night, [1670]

And in the morning he was stolne from me:

215 I thinke some Fairies haue beguiled me.

Dido. O cursed hagge and false dissembling wretch!
That slayest me with thy harsh and hellish tale,
Thou for some pettie guift hast let him goe,
And I am thus deluded of my boy:

220 Away with her to prison presently,
Traytresse too keend and cursed Sorceresse.

Nurse. I know not what you meane by treason, I;
I am as true as any one of yours. *Exit the Nurse.*

Dido. Away with her; suffer her not to speake. [1681]

225 My sister comes; I like not her sad lookes,

Re-enter Anna.

Anna. Before I came, *Æneas* was abourd,
; And, spying me, hoyst vp the sailes amaine; |
But I cride out, *sÆneas*, false *Æneas*, stay. G r v

Then gan he wagge his hand, which, yet held vp,

230 Made me suppose he would haue heard me speake :

Then gan they driue into the Ocean ;

Which, when I viewd, I cride, *Æneas*, stay, [90]

an S.D. *exit. Hurst etc.* 217 slay'st *Hurst etc. ex. Gro.* 220 presently, S.D. *Enter Attendants. Dyce, Bui.* 221 too keend] too keen. *Hurst, Rob.* : to kind *Coll. conj., Deigh. conj.* : too kenn'd *Cun. Bui.* : too, keend *Gro.* 223 S.D. *Exit the Nurse*] *Gro.* : *Exeunt the Nurse. Q.* : *exit. Hurst Rob., Cun.* : *Exit Nurse with Attendants, (after l. 224) Dyce, Bui.* 225 S.D. *Re-enter Anna.*] *Hurst etc.* \ *Enter Anna. Q.* 228 Omit stay. *Miff. con.*'

Didoi faire Dido wils *Æneas* stay :

Yet he, whose heart's of adamant or flint,
My teares nor plaints could mollifie a whit: 335

Then carelesly I rent my haire for grieft;
Which seene to all, though he beheld me not,
They gan to moue him to redresse my ruth,
And stay a while to heare what I could say ;
But he, clapt vnder hatches, saild away. 240

Dido. O *Anna*, *Anna*, I will follow him.

Anna. How can ye goe, when he hath all your fleete?

Dido. He frame me wings of waxe, like *Icarus*, [1701]
And, ore his ships, will soare vnto the Sunne,
That they may melt, and I fall in his armes; ,5
Or els He make a prayer vnto the waues,
That I may swim to him, like *Tritons* neece :
O *Anna*, fetch *Orions* Harpe,
That I may tice a Dolphin to the shoare,
And ride vpon his backe vnto my loue. 250

Looke, sister, looke, louely *Æneas* ships;
See, see, the billowes heaue him vp to heauen, [1710]
And now downe falles the keeles into the deepe:
O sister, sister, take away the Rockes ;
Theile breake his ships. O *Proteus*, *Neptune*, *loue*, 255
Saue, saue *Æneas*, *Didos* leefest loue!
Now is he come on shoare, safe without hurt;
But see, *Achates* wils him put to sea,
And all the Sailers merrie make for ioy ;
But he, remembring me, shrinkes backe againe: 260
See where he comes; welcome, welcome, my loue.

Anna. Ah, sister, leaue these idle fantasies ; [1720]
Sweet sister, cease ; remember who you are.

Dido. *Dido* I am, vnlesse I be deceiu'd; |

G 2 And must I raue thus for a runnagate ? 265

234 heart's] *Hurst etc.*: heart *Q.* 244 ship *Hurst, Rob., Cun.* 248 O
Anna, Anna, fetch *Dyce conj., Cun., Bui., Gro.* Arions *Dyce etc.* 252
heave 'em *Dyce*² heave them *Cun.* 253 fall *Hurst etc. ex. Bul, Gro.*
257 shoare. . . hurt] *Dyce, Bul* shoare safe without hurt *Q:* shore safe,
"without hurt *Hurst, Rob., Cun., Gro.*

Must I, make ships for him to saile away?
 Nothing can beare me to him but a ship,
 And he hath all my fleete: what shall I doe,
 But dye in furie of this ouersight?

270 I, I must be the murderer of my selfe:

No, but I am not; yet I will be straight.

Anna, be glad; now haue I found a meane [1730]

To rid me from these thoughts of Lunacie :

Not farre from hence

275 There is a woman famoused for arts,

Daughter vnto the Nimphs *Hesperides*,

Who wild me sacrificize his ticing relliques :

Goe, *Anna*, bid my seruants bring me fire. *Exit Anna*.

Enter Iarbas.

Iar. How long will *Dido* mourne a strangers flight,

280 That hath dishonord her and *Carthage* both?

How long shall I with grieffe consume my daies,

And reape no guerdon for my truest loue? [1740]

Dido. Iarbas, talke not of *Aeneas*, let him goe;

Lay to thy hands and helpe me make a fire,

485 That shall consume all that this stranger left,

For I entend a priuate Sacrifize,

To cure my minde, that melts for vnkind loue.

Iar. But afterwards will *Dido* graunt me loue?

Dido. I, I, *Iarbas*, after this is done,

290 None in the world shall haue my loue but thou :

So, leaue me now; let none approach this place.

Exit Iarbas.

Now, *Dido*, with these reliques burne thy selfe, [1750]

And make *Aeneas* famous through the world,

268 my] *Hurst etc.* : thy *Q.* 270 Aye, I *Hurst, Rob., Cun.* : Ay, I
Dye', Bul 271 straight. S.D. *Aside. Dyce', Bui.* 274-5 Not farre
 . . . arts.] *As one line Q, Hurst, Rob.* : om. Not farre from hence *Mitf. conj.*
 there *Q.* 276 Daughter] *Guardian* to (or unto) *Bui. conj. (ref. to Æn. iv.*
 484) : *Drugster Deigh. conj.* 282 loue? S.D. *Enter Attendants with wood*
and torches. Dyce, Bui. 283 *Iarbas!* Oh! *Mitf. conj.* 285 left: s.D.
Iarbas helps Gro. 290 thou: S.D. *They make a Jin. Dyce, Cun., Bul*
 291 *Exit Iarbas and Attendants. Dyce, Bui.*

For periurie and slaughter of a Queene:

Here lye the Sword that in the darksome Caue 295

He drew, and swore by, to be true to me :

Thou shalt burne first, thy crime is worse then his:

Here lye the garment which I cloath'd him in,

When first he came on shoare ; perish thou to:

These letters, lines, and periurd papers all, | 300

G 2^v Shall burne to cinders in this pretious flame.

And now, ye Gods, that guide the starrie frame, [1760]

And order all things at your high dispose,

Graunt, though the traytors land in *Italy*,

They may be still tormented with vnrest, 305

And from mine ashes let a Conquerour rise,

That may reuenge this treason to a Queene,

By plowing vp his Countries with the Sword:

Betwixt this land and that be neuer league,

Lit tor a lit tor thus contraria, fluctibus vndas 310

Imprecor : arma armis : pugnent ipsiq̄ nepotes :

Liue, false *Æneas*; truest *Dido* dyes; [1770]

Sic, sic iuuat ire sub vmbras.

*Stabs herself and throws herself into tte flames, *

Enter Anna.

Anna. O, helpe, *larbas* ; *Dido* in these flames

Hath burnt her selfe; aye me, vnhappy me! 315

Enter larbas running.

lar. Cursed *larbas*, dye to expiate

The grieffe that tires vpon thine inward soule;

Dido, I come to thee; aye me, *Æneas*. [*Kills himself*

Anna. What can my teares or cryes preuaile me now ?

Dido is dead, *larbas* slaine; *larbas*, my deare loue, [1780] 320

295, 298 lye] lies *Hurst, Rob., Dyce.* 313 S.D. *Stabs herself . . .]*
Gro.: om. Q: She casts herself into the fire. Rob., Cun.: Throws herself into
the flames. Dyce, Bui. s.D. Re-enter Anna. Dyce, Bui., Gro. 315 S.D.
Re-enter . . . Dyce, Bui., Gro. 318 S.D. Kill's himself.] Hurst, Rob. Cun.,
Gro.: om. Q: Stabs himself, and dies. Dyce, Bui. 320 As two lines,
divided after dead, Dyce, Bul. Gro. Considered by Miff, to be the interpolation
of an actor.

O sweet *larbas*) *Annas* sole delight;
What fatall destinie enuies me thus,
To see my sweet *larbas* slay himselfe?
But *Anna* now shall honor thee in death,
325 And mixe her bloud with thine ; this shall I doe,
That Gods and men may pitie this my death,
And rue our ends, senceles of life or breath :
Now, sweet *larbas*, stay, I come to thee. \Kills herself."

FINIS.

328 S.D. *Kills her self.*\ *Hurst, Rob., Cun., Gro. : om. Q : Stabs herself, and dies. Dyce, Bui.*

OXFORD ! HORACE HART
PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

